



I HAVE A MANSION IN THE POST-APOCALYPTIC WORLD

BOOK 04

Morning Star LL

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

I Have a Mansion in the Post-apocalyptic World

(我在末世有套房)

by

Morning Star LL

(晨星LL)

Synopsis

Ruins stretched across the landscape in the apocalypse after the nuclear war.

If you accidentally survived on the wasteland, then you must be ready to face the endless hunger, ceaseless dangers, the mad zombies at night, and the peculiar mutant creatures that are the aftermaths of the constant radiation.

But for Jiang Chen, this place was heaven.

Mansions stood tall, luxurious cars parked on the street, high tech products and gold abandoned everywhere.

What? You were the president of a game development company before the war? You were responsible for the development of the 3D virtual reality online multiplayer game? Well, that's great, why don't you come work for me. The salary is two pieces of bread a day.

iPhone? Ultra thin design? Don't you see that the phone I invented are thinner than condoms?

Aircraft carrier? Fighter jets? Oh, I have those things as well, but they are designed for space combat.

Watch the story of Jiang Chen, who possessed the ability to travel through space and time, as he witness the creation of an empire stretched across space and time..

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Min @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301: Happy Times

"Boss, I beg you, please don't play like this in the future." After moving the busted power armor, Cheng Weiguo looked at the torn left arm and said with a bitter smile.

"I am okay right? Haha." Jiang Chen forced out a few laughs.

Although he knew he was being too reckless, he would never admit it to his subordinates.

A truck drove back and picked up the body of the Mother of Death Claw.

A few soldiers who worked in a hunger team before skillfully dug out the crystals in the back of the monster's head.

After scanning the almost black, green crystals with the special device, they concluded there were a total of 290 crystals. In terms of energy, the Mother of Death Claw was at the top of the food chain, among the dangerous mutants. If it was above 300 crystals, then it must be categorized in the extreme mutant creatures category.

To normal survivors, 290 crystals were a sizable amount of wealth. But to Jiang Chen, these crystals were not enough. The half-scraped power armor cost more than 10000 crystals.

As for the body of the Mother of Death Claw, it will be taken back to the Fishbone base, submerged in Formalin for an entire month before being plugged up, and injected with concrete. The body will become a statue and will forever bow its head in the square in front of the community center. With its head being stepped under the foot of Jiang Chen in his power armor, it will be used to worship the bravery of the Fishbone leader.

Even the most dangerous species, the Mother of Death Claw, was defeated by our leader. What other hardships would hinder our march forward?

Jiang Chen had always put an emphasis on the spiritual civilization of the base. While slavery chip could control the life and death of people, it could not control their thoughts...

Fine, he didn't have such lofty thoughts, he only wanted to show off.

The body of the shredded soldier could no longer be found. The strong acid in the Death Claw's stomach would dissolve the prey, including its bones, in less than an hour. A few soldiers gritted their teeth and dragged some clothes out of it, as well as a glided knight emblem; the only two things that remained.

The torn uniform and emblem will be placed in a wooden box and buried in the Fishbone cemetery, the final destination of all knights. As to his relatives, they will be recognized as martyrs, the Fishbone base will provide for them until his children become adults.

...

It was morning when he left and already past noon when he returned.

He returned to camp 27 with the force. Jiang Chen didn't bother with anything as he ran to the cafeteria to ask the chef to cook something simple.

Although he asked for something simple, the chef definitely didn't make it simple. He used the giant pot to cook three dishes and personally put it on Jiang Chen's table.

When he smelled the aroma of food, Jiang Chen stomach became hungrier. After three consecutive battles, it certainly tired him out as he immediately started to devour the food.

When he was halfway through his meal, Jiang Chen saw Cheng Weiguo walk over so he waved at him.

"Did you eat yet?"

"Not yet, I am seeing if there are any leftovers." Cheng Weiguo forced a smile.

He dropped his chopsticks while eating as he came to Jiang Chen's rescue on an empty stomach.

"Come, let's eat together." Jiang Chen smiled.

Cheng Weiguo was flattered and didn't reject as he carried a bowl and sat across from Jiang Chen.

The two chitchatted for a moment before they returned to more serious topics.

"Did you search near the Like Mall?" Jiang Chen asked.

"We did, but we only managed to find two small sized survivor groups... No nest of the Death Claw." As he said this, Cheng Weiguo was also puzzled.

Needless to say, it should still be in hibernation. Additionally, the Mother of Death Claw doesn't normally leave its nest. Although it was powerful, it didn't really hunt prey on its own. Due to its massive body, a few swings would cost it a lot of energy. The basic pattern of this species was to take the preys that were gifted by countless of "pursuers" in exchange for mating rights. Although genetic analysis showed that the Death Claw may be some kind of mutated lizard caused by the radiation, its ethnic structure was more similar to ants.

However, near the Like Mall, no Death Claw nest existed. The Mother of Death Claw seemed to have appeared out of thin air.

Needless to say, this was abnormal.

"What did the survivors say?"

"Most of them lived in the area for over ten years, they said they never saw the Death Claw before." Cheng Weiguo said.

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows as he didn't think it was as simple as it looked.

He speculated that the Mother of Death Claw must have been lured by someone. Though he might not have be the target since it was just a coincidence he appeared there. In that case, the Death Claw must be targeting Lin Chaoen or people from the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, but he just happened to kill them first and bumped into the Death Claw.

But there was not enough information. Nothing would come to fruition just by thinking. At least he had to wait to crack the password on the EP chip before he can gain some more clue.

The only thing he was certain about now was that the two parties were fighting over something.

The Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, Digitalized human, Defiancer, mutated human...and the Dusk, and possibly the Northern Alliance area.

Wanghai was a place of trouble, what was hiding here?

Jiang Chen shook his head. "Let's put this aside for now, is the result of that drug out?"

When he left in the morning, when Jiang Chen told Cheng Weiguo he was heading out, he also left the drug for it to be taken to the fallout shelter for analysis.

He was curious what the drug actually was.

When he heard Jiang Chen ask about the drug, Cheng Weiguo's face also turned stern.

"The analysis results are out, it is a hallucinating agent, a banned substance before the war ."

"Banned substance?" Jiang Chen frowned.

"Mhmm, it is said that it posed a huge threat to society. This is the report." Cheng Weiguo took out a folded piece of paper from his pocket and handed it to Jiang Chen. "Something pretty weird."

Jiang Chen began to scan the paper.

"Happy Times. Just like the name of the drug, the person taking the drug will receive a day's length of Happy Times. The symptom was to develop hallucinations, completing taking on a role at a certain time and enjoying a happy life that didn't belong to them.

The drug gained popularity in 2151 among the low to medium income population, following the economic recession. Because the drug was not addictive in nature, it didn't draw the attention of the government agency. Until one incident, where a depressed middle-aged man was standing in the middle of the street collecting garbage cans and blocking off traffic, did it finally draw the attention of the government. Mentally addictive substances were first added into controlled substance rule..."

No wonder Meng Qian was waiting for the bus, he really was "rushing to work".

After he read to the end, Jiang Chen threw the report on the table.

"I have seen it before." Cheng Weiguo shook his head.

"Arrest them if you see people selling it. Let them know... Whatever, I will do it myself. Come back with me to the Fishbone base tomorrow." After eating, Jiang Chen cleaned up the bowls.

"Boss..."

"What?"

"Are you just going to let Fallout Shelter 027 sit around?" Seeing there was no one around them, Cheng Weiguo hesitated for a moment before he made up his mind and asked the question.

"Oh? Do you have better ideas?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"The energy rod is already transported to the camp, but I haven't handed them over yet... We can definitely use the opportunity during the handover, replace the staff with soldiers, destroy the motor in the door and capture the fallout shelter." Cheng Weiguo lowered his voice as he whispered to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen began laughing when he heard his words.

Cheng Weiguo looked at Jiang Chen feeling lost as he didn't know what was the flaw in his plan.

Jiang Chen stopped right away as he looked at Cheng Weiguo.

"What's the probability of success?"

"50%." After hesitating for a moment, Cheng Weiguo gave a conservative estimate.

Jiang Chen shook his head as he patted him on the shoulder.

"Give them the energy rod, and we will leave this place. In less than a month, this fallout shelter will be mine."

Cheng Weiguo was stunned, he didn't know where his boss found the confidence.

But from his expression, he didn't look like he was joking...

Chapter 302: Duty

Jiang Chen provided the fallout shelter with ten crystal energy rods.

This type of energy rod followed a similar design to the 100mm nuclear fusion core, except that the contents are not 1 gram of tritium used for nuclear fusion reactions, but rather 1000 crystal shards. This was also the enhanced version of the energy rod used in the power armor. The output was similar to the nuclear fusion core, but the energy input was only one-tenth of it.

These ten crystal energy rod could maintain a month of energy consumption for the fallout shelter, Jiang Chen personally sent it to the ground.

"I won't give you the hope to store energy to pass the winter. Also, if your research speed slows down, I will decrease the energy supplies."

While handing over the ten crystal energy rods, Jiang Chen also gave them his research expectations.

Design a light armor, high mobility, and strong firepower of the self-propelled artillery, as an improved version of the Tiger. With the truck pulling the cannon, it was rather outdated. Since they have the opportunity now to upgrade to a better armor, Jiang Chen naturally would not let this opportunity go.

"Without rules restraining us, this is the most logical choice." To Jiang Chen's threat, Han Junhua only nodded indifferently.

"Are you not going to fight for more benefits?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"There is no need." Han Junhua shook her head. "Threats can make people remain alert."

Especially since she knew that even if she demanded more, Jiang Chen would not give ground on this point.

"Haha, smart choice. But seriously, this is my first time meeting such an interesting opponent." Jiang Chen laughed before turning around and going to the elevator.

Han Junhua didn't oppose the word opponent. She looked at Jiang Chen and calmly blinked her eyes.

"Am I really interesting?"

"Of course, not everyone can escape the shackles known as human nature and use rationality to think. I have to say, you have a talent. Are PAC's colonels all at this level?" Jiang Chen let out a sigh.

If that was the case, then PAC was too scary.

"Does it have to do with ranking?" Han Junhua retorted.

Jiang Chen paused for a moment before he smiled. "Of course not. In other places, I have seen colonel ranked officers, and their brains are not at all this smart. Some drawn to technicals, some arrogant... I am only curious."

"Where?" Han Junhua asked a different question.

"In my backyard." Jiang Chen laughed as he said a truth that was easily misinterpreted.

Then your backyard definitely would not need to worry about survival," Han Junhua said as she automatically interpreted the backyard as the Fishbone base, and the colonel is only a rank that he freely gave out.

"You are not wrong. Although there are concerns, they are not serious." Jiang Chen nodded, but he was referring to the events in the other world.

He didn't experience the irreconcilable economic crisis caused by the energy crisis in 2150, nor was he a social scientist that had to imagine when the two countries would become under high tension and what the situation would evolve into.

"It certainly makes people envious," Han Junhua said emotionlessly.

"Can I ask you another question?"

...

"Go ahead," Han Junhua said concisely.

"What is motivating you to go against me? The honor of a soldier? Or loyalty? But without human nature, would you need these boring things? Especially now that PAC no longer exists?" Jiang Chen smiled.

Han Junhua didn't answer directly.

"Do you understand the word responsibility?"

"I see, makes sense."

Jiang Chen smiled as he didn't say goodbye. He then went up the elevator.

Han Junhua watched the elevator ascend as she discretely frowned.

After returning to the surface, Jiang Chen left the defense of the base to Cheng Weiguo's support, Wang Zhaowu. He urged him to constantly maintain an eye on the fallout shelter, including communicating with the representative every other day to ensure Xu Lu and other staffs were safe.

Wang Zhaowu was first puzzled by Jiang Chen's order, because as of now, the troops stationed here lived rather harmlessly with the blue skins. But Jiang Chen didn't explain the situation as he repeatedly cautioned him.

"If the elevator malfunctions or anything unusual happens that prevents the surface from contacting the underground, contact me directly..."

"Yes, general!" While still puzzled, Wang Zhaowu didn't ask any questions.

Jiang Chen nodded as he was pleased with his attitude.

"Keep an eye personally, don't let other people know."

After those last words, Jiang Chen left the command center of the troops stationed at the camp and walked to the empty ground.

One-fourth of the wall's construction had been finished and an estimate of one week before the main structure could be completed. The Fishbone base soldiers had searched the entire Songjiang terrain in the past few days and didn't find any strong raider groups.

Although there were three unknown military forces with sizes similar to the Huizhong Mercenaries they wiped out, the current force of the Fishbone base no longer needed to worry about those small fishes. Based on the consideration of decreasing possible things from going wrong, before the wall is completed, Jiang Chen had already notified Wang Zhaowu not to bother with them.

After he ordered the soldiers already lined up in the middle of the camp, Jiang Chen and Cheng Weiguo walked to the gate.

"Old Cheng, let's make a bet?"

After Jiang Chen got in the car, he abruptly said as he looked at the camp 27's gate.

"Haha, boss, you are funny. Other than the few packs of cigarettes, I have nothing to bet with you." Cheng Weiguo laughed.

Food, everyone knew Jiang Chen didn't lack food.

When he heard his subordinate's words, Jiang Chen paused before he started to laugh along.

"Ahem, speaking of this, I have been considering a problem recently.

Cheng Weiguo immediately put on a serious face when he heard his leader discuss serious matters.

"You don't need to be so serious, I am only asking you for your

opinion." Jiang Chen shook his head as he took out two cigarettes from his pocket and passed one to Cheng Weiguo while he lit one for himself. "What do you think about the living conditions of the survivors in the Fishbone base?"

He had been considering, now that the Fishbone base has been growing in size, if he should open a market? For example, providing salary and use the salary to purchase food from the base.

But Cheng Weiguo didn't think that far. He just thought the boss was so considerate of the subordinates and replied gratefully.

"Everyone is warm and full, they are living a great life."

Jiang Chen smiled as he realized the question from his perspective would yield the same answer from anyone, so he didn't ask anymore.

"Boss, what is the bet that you wanted to make?" Cheng Weiguo asked.

Jiang Chen laughed, stuck the cigarette out the window, and dusted the ash off in the direction of camp 27's gate.

"Within one month, without firing a single bullet, this fallout shelter will belong to me."

.....

After finally sending away the "Plague god", she returned to the fallout shelter. Han Junhua felt relieved.

She didn't know if it was her illusion, but she felt that the way he looked at her was different.

Weird, it didn't feel like hostility.

But rather, mockery?

Han Junhua shook her head as she passed through the arch door and walked to her office.

Without surprise, a discontent middle-aged man stood at the

door.

"Since we already acquired the power, why don't we immediately restore the supply levels back to normal?"

"The supply levels will be restored to normal gradually, but it will favor the researchers," Han Junhua said emotionlessly.

"Why?" Wu Yaguo questioned.

"Because we are working for other people." Han Junhua didn't stop as she walked around Wu Yaguo and opened the office door.

When the fallout shelter was closed, everyone's work was relaxed. A lot of people didn't even need to work. The production system was highly automated, as long as there was energy, there would be food and water. In an enclosed society there was no competition. The sluggish work habit has become rooted in everyone in the past twenty years. Although a lot of people were highly intelligent, it would be hard for the knowledgeable but lazy people to meet the research speed required by the base.

Since the energy stored in and the amount consumed by the fallout shelter was clear, the Fishbone base's energy source was not without a price. With their previous egalitarian ways, it would allow everyone to "die" in their lazy ways.

"Who made all this!" Han Junhua's indifferent attitude triggered Wu Yaguo. He angrily reached out his hand to grab her shoulder.

But before his hand could touch her shoulder, a sharp pain came from his leg as his vision blurred. He was slammed to the ground.

A gun was pointed at his head as Han Junhua casually let go of the hand holding onto his arm.

"From now on, the fallout shelter assembly is dissolved. I use the power of the leader to retract any of the permissions given to the residents by the former leader.

"Okay, Miss Han Junhua."

A robotic voice came from the speaker above. The control terminal of fallout shelter 027 granted her decision.

"You, you can't do that." Wu Yaguo's face turned pale.

"But I can." After putting away her pistol, Han Junhua walked into the office and closed the door.

The energy crisis was solved, and the residents' mood returned to normal. It was time to clean up the mess.

Han Junhua saw Academician Qin standing in front of her desk.

"Is there something you need?" She said concisely as she sat back in her chair.

"Mhmm, I heard... You sent leader Zhang's daughter as the ambassador to be stationed at the Fishbone base," Academician Qin hesitated for a moment and said slowly.

Zhang Yuzhu, that seemed to be her name. The baby that the former fallout shelter leader made an exception for.

"Mhmm, she is righteous, and her personality is bright. Since she was born in the fallout shelter, she has no impractical thoughts, and is fitted for this job." It was enough to make a mistake just once, she already made the mistake of sending Shi Yongtian to the surface as the communicator.

The people that experienced the prosperity from before the war, when they see the survivors suffering among the ruins, it was hard to ensure they won't sprout the mentality of feeling superior. But for the people that were born in the fallout shelter, they truly longed for everything on the surface, they won't mind if it was all in ruins or not.

If they could gain the friendship of the Fishbone base and peacefully integrate fallout shelter 027 while maintaining a certain status, it would be the best scenario Han Junhua could think of.

Seeing that Academician Qin didn't leave, Han Junhua stopped

working and raised her head.

"What else?"

"Mhmm, here is a letter... My old friend asked me to give it to you." Academician Qin gave her the slightly crumpled letter.

Han Junhua glanced at the name as she took it.

"Why do you give it to me now?" As she opened it, she said nonchalantly.

"Because I think it is more appropriate now..."

<First, let me repent for my actions.

But I won't regret.

I can't lead the residents of the fallout shelter till the end. Under my leadership, they will only walk to destruction.

Perhaps after ordering the execution of the intruder, I should have executed that infant.

But I couldn't.

I am a coward.

I chose death, I should have died a long time ago.

Human nature is also the burden of survival.

I remember you told me this before.

If my death could wake up a more decisive leader, then perhaps it wouldn't be too late.

- Zhang Qiming, to my colleague.>

The hands holding the letter trembled. Han Junhua took a deep breath as she hid the grief behind a mask.

The grief to duty.

Chapter 303: It's only an illusion

In a place three thousand meters below Wanghai city, an odd-shaped fallout shelter was buried.

The reason why it was odd was that there was no living area, nor ventilation equipment. Only the mechanical parts that sparkled occasionally and the light that came on and off.

And because of this, in the surrounding five hundred square meters, it was filled with ozone.

Along the outskirts of the room was a ring of hibernation chamber devices. However, a closer examination would indicate that it was not a traditional hibernation chamber because there was no sign of ice shards on the glass surface. Inside the chamber was not ultra-low temperature, but inert gas. It was obviously not preserving humans, but robots.

A central computer stood in the middle of the room. Under the black screen was a cylindrically shaped culture tank and a human brain was floating inside of it. The bottom of the central computer was connected to various wires of different sizes, which led to each facility inside the fallout chamber.

The brain was like a spider in the middle of the spider web, controlling everything attached to it.

The fallout shelter was not the property of the PAC because it was not included in the serial code. Precisely speaking, it didn't belong to any government organization, it was a completely privately funded personal fallout shelter.

Lin fallout shelter was its name.

Before the war, the rich building a fallout shelter for themselves was nothing surprising. Although this fallout shelter was strange.

Suddenly, the light below a hibernation device lit up and laminated the dormant enclosure.

"No. 04 lost... activate backup parts."

"Pshhhh-"

The sound of gas leaking diffused from the edges of the hibernation chamber, and the door slowly opened.

A man slowly opened his eyes, waking up from hibernation.

The dim light reflected on his face.

That man was Lin Chaoen, the one that got his head pulled off.

At the same time, the screen of the central computer also lit up.

A white-haired, kind but authoritative face appeared in the middle of the screen. He looked at Lin Chaoen as the elder man in the screen slowly said, "Do you know what to do now?"

"Of course," Lin Chaoen's one knee was on the ground as he said respectfully, "Father."

The elder man nodded.

"Then go."

Lin Chaoen got up. "Father, a group known as the Dusk entered Jia city. With their disturbance, the coalition of rebels we built suffered heavy losses, should we do anything about this?"

"No need to bother about the escapist, they are just grasshoppers," the elderly man said.

No matter how high they jump, they are still only grasshoppers. Although they have some foresight compared to ordinary survivors, that's all.

Even if those fools hindered his plan, to a cold machine, it had no concept of "revenge". The iron law of the machine was to choose the method with the highest efficiency.

Lin Chaoen nodded.

"What about that Jiang Chen?"

When he heard the name, the old man had a rare silence.

"Keep an eye on him."

"Yes." Lin Chaoen nodded before he left.

...

The tightened supply policy finally ended as all the residents of fallout shelter 027 felt relieved.

It was an insufferable time that no one should ever experience. They couldn't take a shower, couldn't eat till they were full and were only able to receive one hour of light a day. There was good news, but also certainly bad news.

First, a research team was formed.

All the talents specializing in military technology and mechanics were gathered together. They said they were going to select a group of researchers to design a tank called Tiger II.

No one was willing to do it. Research cost a lot of energy. Their work schedule before was only an hour a day, but once they participate in the research, they would have to work more than eight hours. It was torture! Only fools would do it.

But soon after, they were all fighting for a spot.

Because the newly enacted supply policy started to favor researchers. Only the people on the research team could enjoy organic food. Not only that, the soilless farm in the fallout shelter would start producing coffee, tea, and other luxuries, but these luxuries will only be available to researchers.

There was a finite amount of supplies.

Therefore, the supplies given to people with no work were starting to become limited.

At the same time, current positions in the fallout shelter will start to execute a cruel performance elimination system.

The researchers were immediately motivated to work. There were a lot of talents in the fallout shelter, no one wanted to lose such a nice job.

But on the contrary, negative public opinion became apparent.

Since there were limited work positions, before the fallout shelter can earn more research projects, only a few people can enjoy the benefits. The majority of the people at the shelter can only conduct labor-intensive work or no work at all.

No one wanted to drink plain nutrient supplies every meal, such food made their stomachs upset after having too many. Of course, such lavish thoughts would only exist in fallout shelters.

The residents were extremely discontent, but immediately Han Junhua did another horrifying thing.

She removed the resident representative and dissolved the resident assembly!

It was no different than announcing a dictatorship.

"That bit*h had no rights to that! Performance elimination? God, the person that should be eliminated, is her! Look what she did after she took over!" A rather muscular resident wiped off the sweat from his forehead, opened up, and complained to the resident who was also wiping the floor.

He selectively ignored the fact that as the leader, she could only distribute the existing supplies, not create supplies out of thin air.

"Shh. Don't let the security team hear this." The resident eyed him as he lowered his voice.

It would be impossible to say they don't miss the old leader. At least the old leader didn't make them wipe the floor four times a day. What's the purpose of this? She was not a clean freak before.

"Who cares? That bit*h always has a bit*hy face. Do you think she would care how the skunks like us at the bottom view her?"

The person cursed.

At this time, a girl in a white dress walked over.

"Are you thirsty?"

Xu Lu smiled at the two as she leaned down shaking the bottle in her hand.

The two men were lost for a moment before an awkward expression appeared on their faces.

They were supposed to display their noble gesture in front of this lady, but they were cursing "bit*h" constantly.

Xu Lu saw through the awkwardness, smiled, and magically took out two cups and poured some water for them.

"Here, drink some water."

"Ah, th...thank you." The two thanked her with embarrassed faces as they took the cups quickly.

After chugging all the water in the cup, the muscular man was stunned as he had a shocked expression on his face. The other person drinking coughed as he almost choked.

"This, this is... honey water?"

"That's right, does it taste good?" Xu Lu grinned.

"Ye...yes." The thinner man wiped his mouth with his sleeve and graciously looked at Xu Lu.

"There is more. Drink slowly, there's no need to rush... You are labor workers and spend a lot of energy working, it is good for the body to drink something sweet," she said softly as she poured more honey water.

Just like an angel.

The way the two looked at her was filled with admiration.

"Thank you, this is troubling you too much." The muscular man couldn't stop thanking her.

"Speaking of this, I have seen you at the embassy office." The thinner resident straightened his back and looked at Xu Lu, puzzled, "I remember that supplies on the surface were not ample..."

"Yang Lin, what do you mean?" The muscular resident stared at the thin man.

"Brother Hao, I don't mean anything, I am just curious." Yang Lin forced a smile as he comforted Zhao Hao's attitude.

This guy was drawn to her at first sight.

Compared to the more straightforward friend, while Yang Lin was grateful, he was a bit more rational.

"These are all misconceptions," Xu Lu lowered her head as she said with pity. "This is the purpose of me being here. I hope through my work, it can resolve the misconception between us."

It seemed to be the case since no one actually went to the surface before and were all listening to the elaborate stories told by Han Junhua.

Who knows if she is just using the outside being dangerous as an excuse to create class conflicts in order to solidify her dictatorship?

As Yang Lin thought about this, he began to question himself.

He previously maintained a neutral attitude towards Han Junhua. However, now he began to lean towards the opposite side.

Did the Fishbone people really come with the purpose of war? Did the energy in the base fall to the point where they had to limit supplies? ... The leader never explained any to the people.

As to the details of the negotiation, they only knew the result.

Different from the perplexed mind of Yang Lin, Zhao Hao was simply cursing the dictator in his mind.

Compared to this angel, she was bad to the bone...

"Sorry to take so much time for you, my free time is now over." Xu Lu put away the bottle, smiled, and waved at them.

"No, no bother at all," Zhao Hao rushed to say.

But before his voice died down, the door at the corner opened.

"People inside, what are you doing!"

The security force walked in, in quick steps. They stood in front of Xu Lu as they scanned the three of them.

"What did she ask you?" The security force looked at Yang Lin.

Before Yang Lin opened his mouth, Zhao Hao began to ridicule coldly.

"She asked if our work is difficult or not. She did the job of what your boss is supposed to do."

The security force stared at him, didn't say a word, and then looked at Xu Lu.

"Please make your surveying along with us, please cooperate with our work."

"Of course."

Xu Lu smiled. Then she let the soldier follow behind her as she walked to the other end of the hall.

"Are you crazy? If you get on the wrong terms with the security force, are you not afraid you may lose your job?" Yang Lin dragged his friend closer as he lectured in a low voice.

But Zhao Hao didn't say a word as he blankly watched Xu Lu leave.

"Yang Lin, do you believe in angels?"

"What?"

"She is my angel."

"Is your brain not working?" Yang Lin ridiculed him.

Although he said that, Yang Lin couldn't deny the beauty of the ambassador.

Her beauty came from not only the surface but also the soul.

Especially in contrast with a particular person, her beauty was blinding.

But what the two didn't know was.

It was only a façade...

Chapter 304: The Snow of Dusk

When the fleet returned to the base, it was already dusk.

Jiang Chen didn't go with Cheng Weiguo to eat in the community center cafeteria. Instead, he returned straight to the mansion.

Right after he put his winter suit on the clothing rack, Sun Jiao walked up to him with complaint written on her face.

"Why do you have a straight face, don't you miss me?" Jiang Chen with a smirk on his face put his arms around Sun Jiao's waist and his lips near her ear.

Sun Jiao's face turned red, but then she quickly raised her eyebrows as she gently bit Jiang Chen's ear in revenge.

"What did you do outside?"

"Ahem, I promise to god I didn't do anything bad in the past three days," Jiang Chen said exasperatedly.

He was becoming more and more courteous.

When she heard Jiang Chen's words, Sun Jiao rolled her eyes at him.

"I am not talking about that," as she said this, worry returned to her face, "Can't you be more careful... You are the leader of a force. This is not the stone age, no general led the charge."

She was talking about that.

Jiang Chen face looked rather embarrassed as he looked away scratching his nose.

"Uh, I will be careful."

The battle with the Mother of Death Claw was in a dire situation. If he knew it was a hornet's nest, he would not find trouble himself.

"You said that last time to me. A fight with the Mother of Death Claw, are you crazy? If you die..." Sun Jiao bit her bottom lip as tears began to swell up.

Jiang Chen sensed her deep care as he felt warm on the inside. He hugged Sun Jiao apologetically as he comforted her.

"Don't say something so ominous, I am fine aren't I?"

Sun Jiao let Jiang Chen hug her as she pouted her mouth and put her chin on his shoulder. Then she spoke into his ear.

"Then absolutely be careful next time."

"Mhmm." Jiang Chen said sincerely as he hugged the warm figure.

"Also..." As she spoke, her face suddenly turned a burning red as she displayed a rare coyness.

"Also?"

"It is nothing, but you always do such dangerous things..." Sun Jiao buried her head.

"How about..." The red lips trembled because of her shyness. Her faint voice played a seductive mumble, "How about, next time when we do that, let's not use the contraceptive needle..."

Sun Jiao clearly didn't know the impact those words would have on a man as Jiang Chen's stomach immediately felt heated.

"Honey, I..."

"Don't say anything."

...

With a finger on his lips, Sun Jiao opened her mouth and drew out the silent but seductive words, "Kiss me."

Jiang Chen couldn't hold back any longer. One hand held onto the long and athletic leg, while the other hand wrapped around her waist as he pinned her against the sofa in the living room.

But then, Jiang Chen was stunned as an awkward expression crept onto his face.

On the second floor, Sun Xiaorou, sitting in her wheelchair, grinned at the loving couple.

"Haha, don't mind me." The devil-like smile was too similar to Sun Jiao's.

How would he not mind?

With her sister seeing the embarrassing scene, Sun Jiao couldn't stand it any longer as she instantly jumped out and escaped from Jiang Chen's hug.

"Sorry for making you replace my sister in accompanying me." Sun Xiaorou sitting in the wheelchair, turned her head, and naughtily blinked her eyes.

The dusk light stretched out their shadows.

Jiang Chen pushed Sun Xiaorou along the small road in the back garden of the mansion.

After Sun Jiao ran away, he was about to run away too because he didn't know how to face her. The her now was obviously different from the her before, and he did take her first time away from her... It may be confusing to explain it this way, but the emotions in his mind perhaps were more confusing than this.

But Sun Xiaorou stopped him as she asked him to help her down the stairs.

Because he could not say no to the cute and impossible to refuse eyes, the soft-hearted Jiang Chen came back and brought her downstairs.

Then we got to this point where Jiang Chen has replaced Sun Jiao, who ran away, and was taking her for a walk in the backyard.

Although Sun Xiaorou herself could walk with this voice-controlled wheelchair, in a complex environment, it was more

convenient to have someone beside her. Especially since it was not easy to explain the direction she wanted to go in the first place.

Jiang Chen gently breathed out a cloud of mist. After hesitating for a moment, he said, "It's okay... I have always wanted to apologize to you."

"Why do you need to apologize to me?" Sun Xiaorou blinked her eyes. "I almost killed you and the person you love. Then because of your anger, you took revenge as I didn't want to confess. Or rather... I should thank you for not killing me."

Jiang Chen paused for a second and after a while, he smiled.

"Thank you."

Whether or not she really meant it, when he heard she didn't hate him, it made Jiang Chen feel better.

Sun Xiaorou gently blinked her eyes as she didn't continue on with the conversation, but quietly stared at the snow along the tiny path.

"Are you better now?" Jiang Chen stared at the peacefulness shown on the side of her face as he gently asked.

Sun Xiaorou's mouth curved up. "What area? If it is the body, I can't move below the shoulder."

Based on what Lin Lin has said, with her current condition, the brain damage was more problematic than nerve damage. The nerve on her back did not suffer any damage nor was there any abnormalities in her body condition; she just couldn't move her body parts below the shoulder. It felt as if she has "forgotten" how to use her arms and legs.

It was a problematic condition. Whether it was in the Fishbone base or the Sixth Street, there was no medical equipment could conduct brain repair surgery. But Jiang Chen already used the Fake Legs Bar to put up a reward. Whoever obtains a complete set of surgical equipment would receive 5000 crystals.

With such a high reward, eventually, this problem will be solved.

"Uh, spiritually."

It was a weird way to ask this question. As to why he asked the question, Jiang Chen was also not quite sure.

Her black hair fell to her side as Sun Xiaorou tilted her head, "Why would you ask that?"

"Because your memory returned right? ... Ah, it is too intrusive to ask this in such a way, just pretend I didn't ask the question." Jiang Chen forced a smile.

Hearing this, Sun Xiaorou only smiled.

"How do you think I should be?"

Jiang Chen was about to say 'Remove the brainwashed part and become the sister of Sun Jiao', but that sentence was stuck in his throat.

Sun Xiaorou watched the sunset in the distance as she continued.

"There have been two figures fighting in my mind to take control of my body. One being the religious me, the other being the sister me. It's weird to say it this way right?" Sun Xiaorou turned around to look at Jiang Chen as she timidly smiled.

"No... Not weird." Jiang Chen shook his head and stared into her eyes while waiting for her to continue.

"To be honest... I have been thinking a lot in the past few days. Regardless which me it is, they are all me."

"But that you was brainwashed-" Jiang Chen couldn't help but state.

"What exactly is being brainwashed?"

Jiang Chen couldn't interpret the meaning behind those words. He didn't answer as he just looked at her, puzzled.

"For humans to live in this world, they are constantly receiving

an external signal. A ray of sunshine, a breeze of wind, the occasional snowstorm, words of advice... How do you determine what is brainwashed?"

"Then you are..."

"Perhaps the two personalities meshed together. Maybe that is easier to understand."

Sun Xiaorou blinked as she said playfully.

It was hard to imagine, as the victim, she could have such a bright smile.

"Do you hate those people? Since they were the ones that used the chip to lock your memory," Jiang Chen asked.

Sun Xiaorou shook her head and once again looked at the sunset in the distance.

The deep red was no longer blinding, it looked like a torch about to extinguish.

"What's after dusk?"

Jiang Chen followed the direction Sun Xiaorou was looking as he gazed at the orange color. He thought for a moment as he gently said.

"It's night."

Sun Xiaorou nodded and said while gazing at the setting sun.

"That's right... They are just a bunch of petty people."

The religious firmly believed in the doomsday of the earth's civilization. The promise to stay away from the fallen sun, the effort of spending their entire life creating the ark that will carry the new civilization away from the wasteland, into the endless night.

Even if the mission they had given their all to was successful, would the future waiting for them be the dawn?

Pitiful people. Why hate the pitiful people.

Chapter 305: Are you not going to feed me?

After pushing Sun Xiaorou back into the mansion, the sun had already gone down.

The adorable Yao Yao finished cooking the dishes, and she and Lin Lin brought the delicious dishes to the table. Sun Jiao, on the other hand, carried the heavy burden of searching for people.

But she was not as successful as she had thought. Sun Jiao searched through the mansion without finding the missing Sun Xiaorou and Jiang Chen. She even went into the basement. Perhaps because the withered leaves blocked her vision, but, through the window, she didn't see the two people in the backyard taking a walk.

Seeing the two people harmoniously show up in the living room, suspicion flashed across Sun Jiao's face as her eyes moved between the two.

"What... happened between you two?"

"Ahem, can you not ask this so weirdly?" Jiang Chen facepalmed.

"Uhh, I just feel the air between you two is a bit odd," with a hand on her chin, Sun Jiao said.

"Then it must be your illusion," Jiang Chen ridiculed.

"We only took a walk in the backyard, chatted for a while, and there is nothing more to the story," Sun Xiaorou blinked and told her sister.

Although still suspicious, to her own sister, Sun Jiao had complete trust.

Since she chose to believe her sister, Sun Jiao nodded and spoke to Jiang Chen.

"Okay... Let's not talk about this, for now. Go eat. I'll send Sun Xiaorou upstairs and feed her the nutrient supply, and then I'll

come down."

Sun Jiao walked to Sun Xiaorou as she was about to take over.

"Sister, are we going to sleep together tonight?" Sun Jiao blinked her eyes as she asked her sister with a pure face.

Sun Jiao thought about Jiang Chen and how she was going to have "unprotected sex". She was about to say no when she realized the joking smile on her sister's face.

Sun Jiao's face immediately turned red as she gave her a dirty look.

"You are making fun of your sister. I am not going to feed you."

"Wooo, sister, I'm sorry. Spare me," Sun Xiaorou batted her eyes as she jokingly acted coy.

"Beg your brother-in-law."

Sun Jiao made a fierce face before she returned to the kitchen.

Watching Sun Jiao leave, Jiang Chen had a joyful smile.

From that night on, she was a lot more cheerful.

"Ahhh... I accidentally made sister mad, so I'll have you trouble you in bringing me to the second floor." Looking at Jiang Chen, Sun Xiaorou naughtily stuck out her tongue.

"No problem." Jiang Chen shook his head with a smile. He held onto the wheels as he easily lifted the wheelchair and Sun Xiaorou on top.

"Speaking of which, you sisters have a really good relationship," Jiang Chen said after putting the wheelchair down on the second floor.

A red hue appeared on Sun Xiaorou's face as she lightly closed her eye.

"Mhmm! That's because... we are the only family left. Therefore..."

Then, she opened her eyes as she naughtily looked at Jiang Chen. "Therefore, please make my sister happy."

"Of course."

As Jiang Chen laughed, he rolled her back to her room.

Sun Jiao was the first person he met in this world and the first woman of his life. Regardless, he will make her happy.

After going into Sun Xiaorou's room, under her direction, Jiang Chen took out a box from the top drawer.

Compared to the E-level nutrient supply that most survivors drink, the A-level nutrient supply made with fruit, vegetable and animal proteins didn't taste too terrible. But to use fresh food to create nutrient supply, only Jiang Chen could be this lavish.

"Are you really not going to eat with us? Yao Yao's cooking is great," Jiang Chen said.

Although she couldn't use her hand, if someone fed her, she could still eat.

Sun Xiaorou smiled, "If I eat, it is going to be really troublesome. I would need a urine straw when I need to go to the washroom if I want to do number two... it would be really inconvenient."

Towards the end of her sentence, Sun Xiaorou's face was burning.

Jiang Chen also looked embarrassed as he looked away.

He seemed to have asked an inappropriate question...

After taking out the tubular nutrient supply, Jiang Chen opened the cap, but then, his hand froze in midair.

Sun Xiaorou gently closed her eyes with her slightly opened red lips raised. The red vibrancy could be faintly seen through her lips.

"Are you not going to feed me, brother-in-law?" Seeing that Jiang Chen hasn't moved, Sun Xiaorou opened one eye and playfully

giggled.

Jiang Chen gulped as he put the test tube beside Sun Xiaorou's mouth.

Maybe because Jiang Chen had no experience in taking care of people, or he ignored the thickness of the nutrient supply.

The speed he poured the nutrient supply was faster than the speed Sun Xiaorou could drink. Her eyebrows were slightly raised as her frail throat made a feeble gulping sound.

"Cough, cough-"

"Are you okay? "

Jiang Chen immediately stopped.

But then he noticed the thick liquid dripping from Sun Xiaorou's mouth, her throat gulping, and the pure expression...

This is too evil! Jiang Chen felt embarrassed for his sick minded thoughts.

"It's okay. Brother-in-law's action was bit aggressive..." Finally gulping down the thickness in her mouth, Sun Xiaorou smiled.

"Uh, I'll go get your sister to feed you." To hide himself from being hard, Jiang Chen closed his legs discreetly as he awkwardly smiled.

"No." The pouted mouth immediately turned up. Sun Xiaorou used her coy eyes to look at Jiang Chen. "Brother-in-law, I am hungry."

This devil...

Jiang Chen suppressed himself as he fed the remaining nutrient supply to her. With a conflicted but turned on mood, Jiang Chen was about to leave.

Looking at Jiang Chen's back, Sun Xiaorou gently said, "Can I tell you a secret?"

"Mhmm? Of course..." Jiang Chen stopped and turned his head.

Sun Xiaorou motioned for him to come closer. [Was it necessary? There is no one here.]

Even if he thought that, Jiang Chen still followed her wish and put his ear beside her mouth.

Feeling the gentle breath beside his ear, he felt a tingling sensation.

Sun Xiaorou's face was burning, she took a deep breath as a smirk appeared on her face, "If sister becomes pregnant, I can help you. Although I can't move my body..."

When she was in the living room, she heard the conversation between Jiang Chen and her sister. Whatever was going on in her mind, she said these words naughtily.

Like she had expected, Jiang Chen's expression immediately froze as he was in dismay.

"Girl, what are you thinking." Jiang Chen didn't know what to say as he pinched her nose before escaping in panic.

Watching the door close, the corner of Sun Xiaorou's mouth curved up as she softly closed her eyes.

She savored the sweetness in her mouth as her face flushed red.

"Such a gentle person..."

Although she knew it was not right to tease the person her sister liked.

But such a good character made people...

The urine straw below the wheelchair had one centimeter of transparent liquid come out.

From its color, it was definitely not urine.

Chapter 306: Almost The Wrong One

When Jiang Chen came downstairs to the dining room, Sun Jiao and the rest had already started to eat.

Just from the dishes on the table, he did not feel the atmosphere of the apocalypse at all. Especially the dark red pig trotters, just from the looks of it made Jiang Chen eager to eat as he walked to the table.

Perhaps she had been used to Yao Yao's delicious cooking, Sun Jiao's etiquette was more delicate compared to when she first met Jiang Chen. Looking at her eating calmly in small portions, Jiang Chen could not see the old bold girl that would not even leave behind the soup in the can.

But Lin Lin, on the other hand, was devouring through the dishes without any signs of decency. She completely ignored the late Jiang Chen. The way she ate was as if she wanted to make up for all the food she missed over the last twenty years.

When she saw Jiang Chen walk over, the nice Yao Yao filled Jiang Chen's bowl full of rice and poured him a bowl of steamy lotus roots and pork ribs soup.

Jiang Chen rubbed Yao Yao's hair as he smiled. "I can do it myself."

With Jiang Chen's big hand rubbing her head, a soft smile appeared on Yao Yao's adorable face.

"The lotus roots soup is great. Also, if you drink it in the winter, your stomach will feel warm."

"Mhmm! Yao Yao's cooking is great," Jiang Chen praised her.

The small loli timidly smiled as she buried her blushed face down.

"Loli lover," Lin Lin and Sun Jiao focusing on their food both

murmured in a quiet voice.

These two ridicules obviously didn't escape the suspect's ear.

Jiang Chen helplessly looked at Sun Jiao and Lin Lin as he defended innocently in his mind.

[Am I that much of an animal...]

After dinner, Jiang Chen went to Yao Yao's room as he gave the task of cracking the EP memory chip to the little girl.

When she heard she could help big brother out again, Yao Yao energetically took over the memory chip in Jiang Chen's hand, raised her not so full chest, and promised Jiang Chen she would complete the task.

Jiang Chen was pleased when she saw the enthusiasm from Yao Yao.

Compared to the Lin Lin, who constantly demand pudding, the willing Yao Yao was almost like an angel.

...

The night was dark. Sun Jiao sneaked out of bed.

Sun Jiao looked at her sister's peaceful face as a proud smile appeared on her face.

She wore thin as veil pajamas. Sun Jiao quietly walked to the door, sneaked out of the bedroom. and gently closed the door.

But not long after, the door opened again.

A figure clearly not Sun Jiao sneaked inside.

With the creek of the door waking Sun Xiaorou up, she opened her eyes and watched the man walk beside the bed.

"Where is your sister?" With excitement, Jiang Chen lowered his voice and asked.

"She is sleeping in her own room," with lips unnoticeably curved up, Sun Xiaorou mimicked Sun Jiao's voice.

It has to be mentioned that the sisters' looked really similar. The slight difference was faded by the blurry night. What was more troubling was that they were not only similar in appearance, but also in voice.

As long as she lowered her voice and added a hint of maturity to the light and soft tone, they didn't sound very different.

When Jiang Chen heard Sun Xiaorou was not there to disturb them, Jiang Chen was naturally ecstatic.

With a smirk, he approached her ear and gently breathed in while using an intimate tone.

"Tonight, I will c*m in you until you are pregnant."

With face burning, Sun Xiaorou's lips trembled as she couldn't say a word.

The sheet was lifted as she felt something sneak inside. At the same time, she felt something press her chest tightly.

She lightly moaned as she felt the warmth on her chest. However, Sun Xiaorou slightly frowned.

When he usually did it with her sister, was he always so direct?

For some reason, she impulsively wanted to play with fire.

If she didn't remind Jiang Chen and continued to pretend like this, when would he figure out that she was not her sister?

The thing that happened in the basement, followed by the fusion of her memories made it fade out of her mind. She just faintly remembers that with rough force, he took away her first time.

The intimate thought circled her mind as it lured her. Since my first time was taken away by him, a second time would be okay...

But just as she closed her eyes, preparing to let the story develop further, the warmth surrounding her chest retracted.

"You... are not Sun Jiao?" He pulled his hands away as he asked

awkwardly.

Although it was impossible to tell with the lights off.

But the chest was clearly not right!

Sun Jiao was at least a 36D, but those seemed to be only a bit bigger than a B.

Seeing she could no longer pretend, Sun Xiaorou giggled. "That's right, brother-in-law."

...

Someone knocked on the door.

With bear pajamas, Yao Yao rubbed her blurred eyes and walked to the door in her rabbit slippers.

"Woo? It's late, is there something wrong?"

Sun Jiao suspiciously scanned Yao Yao's neat clothes a few times.

"Is Jiang Chen not here?"

"I wish he was here." Yao Yao pouted her mouth as she threw a small tantrum.

To Sun Jiao "occupying" big brother, the small loli was never too happy about it. They had discussed before that they must "feed" the big bad guy to make sure he stays on this side. But now, the delicious "ribs" were all "eaten" by sister Sun Jiao. As the small animal, she couldn't even drink the soup.

Sun Jiao didn't realize Yao Yao's tantrum as she tilted her head in confusion.

"Where did he go? Could it be... Lin Lin? Eh? Where are you going?" Looking at the small loli suddenly going downstairs, Sun Jiao was puzzled.

Yao Yao turned around and nodded seriously. "Just in case, let's go check Lin Lin's room."

Sun Jiao didn't know why Yao Yao all the sudden was more keen

on this than herself as they went downstairs.

Not long after, the furious roar of Lin Lin being woken up came from downstairs.

...

Sun Jiao pushed open the door, yawned, and returned to her bedroom.

In the end, the three people that searched the entire mansion concluded that Jiang Chen may have returned to sleep in the modern world. Therefore, concluding the unrest caused by Sun Jiao sneaking out of her bed.

As she quietly climbed into bed, Sun Jiao confirmed the peacefulness on her sister's face as a gentle smile appeared on her face. She lightly combed the hair strands in front of her forehead and kissed her on the forehead.

"Sister, you are still not asleep?" Sun Xiaorou opened her eyes as she blinked her bright eyes at her sister.

"Eh? Are you awake?" Seeing her sister suddenly wake up, Sun Jiao slid back, embarrassed.

"Mhmm, just woke up."

"Uhh, sorry, did I wake you up?"

When she heard her sister's words, Sun Xiaorou shook her head and giggled. "No, I just had a dream."

Sun Jiao caringly held on to her sister's hand, "Dream? Did you have a bad dream?"

But Sun Xiaorou shook her head again, "No, it was a sweet dream."

Then, a red hue appeared on her cheeks.

"He is a really gentle person."

Chapter 307: Conflict

Ten days have passed by since Jiang Chen withdrew most of the soldiers.

The atmosphere at Camp 27 was like any other day, but inside Fallout Shelter 027, the atmosphere was peculiar.

There was not a single person inside the four resident areas. The hallways connecting each area was also empty, no one was wiping the almost shining walls and floors anymore.

Where did everyone go?

Contrary to the deserted residential areas, the industrial area was jam-packed with people. Standing on the stairs looking down, there was a sea of people. With a rough estimate, excluding the one hundred residents that moved up to the surface already, the remaining sixteen hundred residents in the fallout shelter were all here.

Because of the high density of the people, the environment was terrible here.

There were children crying and enraged conversations. There were people sitting in the corner with their luggage, and someone people even made a bed on the ground with the intention of staying long term.

The twenty people security force stood on the high ground as they were on high alert with their weapons ready.

They never faced a situation like this. Nor did they know how to deal with it. The saving grace was, the residents' emotions remain restrained as they didn't show any aggressive gestures.

At that time, the door opened.

With two soldiers beside him, Tian Feng walked in.

Because of his work in obtaining the nuclear fusion core, he was

appointed by Han Junhua as the chief commander of the security force and replaced the previous commander assigned by the old leader. He was responsible for the security and defense tasks in the fallout shelter. When he heard the gathering happening in the industrial area, he immediately rushed over.

Seeing their commander walk in, the twenty soldiers stood up straight and gave him a standard PAC salute.

Tian Feng returned one as he passed the row of soldiers and walked beside the barrier on the stairs. He began to frown looking down at the enraged crowd.

"What do they want to do?" Tian Feng asked the soldiers beside him.

"They are protesting," the young soldier heard the commander's question as he replied truthfully.

"Protest?" Tian Feng frowned. As he was just about to ask what they were protesting about, he heard a roar from the crowd.

"We demand an explanation!"

"Yes! Get Han Junhua to come out."

"..."

Tian Feng looked at the angry faces. Although he was puzzled, he immediately realized the situation was odd.

"What are they protesting about?" With voice lowered, he asked the young soldier.

The young man had a glimpse of hesitation, but he gritted his teeth and spoke.

"Someone said... The leader established a program in her EP and connect the lock permission of the fallout shelter door with her life signal."

"Is that it?" Tian Feng was confused.

"Also..." Since he already started, the young man was not afraid the commander may be angry as he spilled out everything he knew. Including Han Junhua used the leader's permission to take all the residents' life as a hostage, the resident assembly being dissolved, and the residents demanding an explanation for all her actions.

When he heard the entire story, Tian Feng gasped for air.

One, because he was shocked by the amount of information revealed behind the rumors, and two, because there was a conspiracy hidden behind the spread of these rumors.

Seeing the silent commander, the young man hesitated for a moment and said, "Commander."

"What is it?"

"What they are saying... Is It true?"

From his eyes, Tian Feng saw a hint of confusion.

That confusion made him feel an inexplicable fear.

"Don't trust the rumors. Control the situation here. I'll report to the leader."

He hastily assigned the task to the soldiers as he was about to turn around to go to Han Junhua's office.

But then, Wu Yaguo came out of the crowd and stood in front of him.

Tian Feng noticed there was a bruise on his face.

"The residents demand an explanation," Wu Yaguo fearlessly stared into Tian Feng's eyes as he said loudly.

"The leader of the fallout shelter had no need to justify her actions, but I trust that leader Han will give you a satisfactory response." Because he was still lost about the situation, Tian Feng gave a procedural response.

But obviously, no one was pleased with his response.

"Yeah? I hope so," Wu Yaguo sneered.

"Could you guys go back first?" Tian Feng knew that Wu Yaguo was reputable among the residents, so he lowered his voice as he tried to persuade him.

Wu Yaguo locked his eyes on Tian Feng. "After knowing the truth behind this event, do you think that's a possibility?"

Tian Feng couldn't say a word. His throat moved before he turned around walking away.

As he watched Tian Feng leave, the rage in Wu Yaguo's eyes was tinted with a hint of hatred.

...

Someone leaked the news and revealed all the details of the negotiation.

The entire fallout shelter was a mess. No one dared to sleep in their bedrooms anymore. No one was willing to be the sacrifice, the betting chip for someone else's survival. Therefore, everyone gathered in the industrial area and slept together on the ground.

But Han Junhua quickly controlled the situation as she ordered the security forces to forcefully remove the protestors and have everyone return to their duty within an hour.

But during the process, someone shouted.

"She is a dictator! She is trying to use everyone's life to maintain her evil reign!"

Immediately, everyone responded to that voice.

"That's right! The future of Fallout Shelter 027, should be determined by all the residents!"

"He is right!"

"The people from the Fishbone base is not as despicable as she

described! She is a liar!"

Shouting and screaming echoed between the cold steel walls as it unleashed the anger and suspicion in everyone's hearts.

When a situation has evolved to this point, a simple explanation will certainly not resolve it.

The situation could no longer be controlled.

Han Junhua was decisive with her plan. She ordered soldiers to use smoke bombs to forcefully evict the residents in the industrial area. To the people defying her order, Han Junhua used the leader's permission to release sleeping mask to the industrial area and thrown all the unconscious people into detention for ten days.

At the same time, she ordered to temporarily limit the freedom of Xu Lu as well as the five staffs as she tried to hide the internal turmoil inside the fallout shelter deep in the ground. Then, she sent out the security force to investigate the people who spread rumors, at the same time establishing a curfew. Any residents outside of the residential area after the lights were out will be thrown into detention for no less than five days.

But not long after, the prison was full...

Five hours later after the incident.

The information from Camp 27 was sitting on Jiang Chen's desk.

Cheng Weiguo was standing there as he looked at Jiang Chen in admiration.

"Boss, you are too... How did that proverb go? Yes! Think like a god!"

To the subordinate's praise, Jiang Chen laughed without being humble at all.

"What thinking like a god? I made people spread the news."

Before she left, he orders Xu Lu to maintain a good relationship with the residents inside the fallout shelter. She must establish an

image opposite of what Han Junhua was portraying. Therefore, the residents inside the fallout shelter will become suspicious of Han Junhua.

Immediately, he used the mouth of a soldier at camp 27 to "unintentionally" leak the information of the negotiation.

Once a third person knew about the secret, it was no longer a secret.

Very quickly, the news spread from the surface to under the earth and spread like a virus inside the fallout shelter. At the same time, with rumors being exchanged, many different versions took form.

The most widespread one –

The leader of the fallout shelter, Han Juahua, used the permission granted by the fallout shelter terminal to take all the residents' life as the hostage to force the peace-loving Jiang Chen to stay away from the fallout shelter. Or, she will execute the residents by batches until only herself is left in order to force the 'kind Jiang Chen' to give up ground.

Han Junhua, of course, clarified this and used the announcement system to notify all residents in the fallout shelter.

But once trust has collapsed, it would be hard to establish. To Han Junhua's clarification, with Wu Yaguo leading as the ex-residents representative, he demanded Han Junhua display the terminal use history but was rejected. Because she did something similar to the rumors, it would be impossible to clarify her actions.

Therefore, Fallout Shelter 027 was a complete mess.

But what Jiang Chen didn't expect was for this moment to come so rapidly.

It only took ten days before the relationship between Han Junhua and the residents got to the freezing point.

How deep was this grudge...

"Boss, do we need to send troops now to support the resident assembly, help them uprising against Han Junhua, and then use this opportunity-" Cheng Weiguo passionately suggested.

Jiang Chen smiled as he signaled not to rush things.

"No need to rush. It is because we have left that they dare to be in the process of transitioning. If we return, they would no longer be a mess."

"But those residents without any weapons, would they have the ability to overthrow Han Junhua's regime?" Cheng Weiguo was puzzled.

The fallout shelter leader possessed all permission to the fallout shelter, including the ability to release sleeping gas, control sentry guns, control any of the doors, and most importantly the rights to control the security force. Cheng Weiguo who had stayed in a fallout shelter before knew this point clearly.

In this case, without external help, the residents stood no chance at all.

"Old Cheng, how many years did Fallout Shelter 027 exist for?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"Twenty years," Cheng Weiguo answered without hesitation.

"Yes, twenty years. So the people that were twenty at the time would be forty now right?"

Cheng Weiguo looked at Jiang Chen, unsure of what he was alluding to.

Jiang Chen continued in a lighthearted voice.

"The security force inside the fallout shelter, it is no longer the security force formed by PAC soldiers. At least, the new recruit would make up more than half right?"

"What's the problem with that?"

"Would the new recruits point their guns at their parents for Han Junhua?" Jiang Chen grinned.

Chapter 308: Decoding the Password

When Jiang Chen came out of the community center, the sun had already set.

The past few days, he has spent the day in the community center and with the help from Wang Qin, became familiarized with the specifics of the base. Following the expansion of the base, the weaknesses in the existing foundation of the base were starting to show.

In the beginning, the major infrastructures of the Fishbone base were two warehouses. Thus, a warehouse manager was more than enough to control the supplies of the base. The cafeteria was looked over by Zhou Jiexi, and a big pot of porridge along with some leaves was enough to feed everyone. The base's thirty survivors' primary duties were building things. Lu Huasheng was responsible for the construction of the base and also took on the responsibility of managing the survivors.

The simple management system was effective in the small-scale base, but once the population increased, flaws were exposed.

Although Jiang Chen certainly made some changes, such as the pyramid-shaped citizen structure and the establishment of a standalone logistics department to manage the supplies of the base, following the two population explosions, (Shenxiang town colony and Qingpu survivors), the existing organizational structure was chaotic and unsustainable.

The base had encountered a lot of things either "no one knew who should be responsible for it" or "there were not enough people to take care of it". During these times, Jiang Chen also happened not to be around, and so Sun Jiao made most of the decisions. As the "Duchess of the leader" and "formal well-known lone traveler", her ability and reputation could certainly handle the small problems. But once the base grew bigger, the casual decision-

making process would obviously not work.

Therefore, two imperative tasks were placed in front of Jiang Chen.

Establish law or change the structure.

Law is the basis of rules. The reason why the Fishbone base had no security problems as of now was mostly because of Jiang Chen's personal influence as well as the honorary chip's absolute constraint on the "knight class". These constraints would weaken with time and as the population continues to grow, therefore creating laws was imperative.

It was also simple to understand a change in structure. It comprised of creating a concise and effective organizational structure that managed all survivors in the Fishbone base as well as its jurisdictions.

The sooner these tasks were completed, the better it was for the Fishbone. Therefore he had been working until sunset every day before returning to the mansion.

...

Just like before, when he returned to the mansion, Yao Yao had already put the steamy dishes on the table. Sun Jiao and Lin Lin also sat around the dinner table, waiting for Jiang Chen before they started to eat.

After dinner, Yao Yao excitedly dragged Jiang Chen to her bedroom.

The ten days of hard work finally paid off. The small loli finally cracked the password and copied all the information from the EP memory chip to a graphene chip.

"Thank you." Jiang Chen took over the chip as he rubbed Yao Yao's head lovingly.

"Eh, hehe." She timidly smiled as she buried her head. While

enjoying Jiang Chen's compliment, her hands played with her dress.

Jiang Chen took the cards. Due to his eagerness of wanting to read the information inside, he was about to leave. However, as he turned around, he felt a weak force tug at his shirt.

"Hmm? Is there something wrong?" Jiang Chen looked at Yao Yao who was holding onto him and was quite puzzled.

"Hmm... Can... Can I demand an unreasonable request?" Her cheery like mouth opened, and her adorable face blushed as if blood was about to drip out.

While looking at Yao Yao shy expression, Jiang Chen already knew what was on her mind.

With a smirk on his face, Jiang Chen held the cute face in his hands as he kissed her lips.

"Wooo! Wo..."

Just like a startled rabbit, Yao Yao's body tensed up. She feebly moved a bit before her entire body was paralyzed in a warm hug and she obediently closed her eyes.

As if all her strength followed the sweet liquid and was extracted by her loving big brother...

Jiang Chen who possessed all control sniffed the fragrance wafting from her hair as he freely conquered her softness and drawn in the savory juice.

Lips parted.

"..."

Jiang Chen drew a transparent silk from the petite tongue.

Yao Yao who escaped from Jiang Chen's hug feebly gathered her breath. From the lighting of the room, there was a hint of silvery liquid on the tip of her soft lips. Her face revealed her embarrassment.

"Are you satisfied?"

Yao Yao's face became redder.

"Mhmm?" Jiang Chen put his ear beside Yao Yao's mouth.

"I just... wanted a hug."

...

After returning to his bedroom, Jiang Chen inserted the graphene memory chip into the full sensory computer and waited to read the encrypted files.

The folder was surprisingly empty. It didn't contain a large number of secret files as he had first imagined.

An EP ability report, an electronic map, a mission brief, as well as a note.

Jiang Chen only scanned the ability report with a medium to high ability rating. After he confirmed that the bearded man was called He Wenhui, he closed the document.

Then, Jiang Chen pressed on the full sensory screen and selected the electronic map.

Just from the appearance, this map didn't look too different compared to a normal survivor's map. However, after some close examination, he found some odd signs on the map. On the outskirts of the city center, near Songjiang area, there was a red question mark.

"Question mark?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

Normally, survivors would not run to a city center. It was just a nuclear crater there. Not only were the zombies and mutants dangerous, but the radiation level was also shockingly high.

If people really ventured there, then there was only one possibility. Something must be there!

Because of the limited intel, Jiang Chen couldn't think of a

logical explanation, so he turned his attention to the mission brief and note.

<Cooperate with Lin Chaoen and assist him in entering Fallout Shelter 027. Then take back the "happy times" drug ingredient list. That thing is critical to our business. A lot of fools will want to experience the happy times before the war.

Additionally, think twice when you do things. Try to figure out what that guy is up to. You know it is better for the drug's ingredient list to be in the hands of one person.>

From this point alone, the people from Dark Red Chamber of Commerce and Lin Chaoen seem to have their own agendas. But regardless of their plot, Jiang Chen will not give away fallout shelter 027.

Jiang Chen closed the mission brief and opened the note.

The note seemed to only be jot notes of information. However, within them, he found some useful information.

<01. Whenever he drank nutrient supplies he would always hide from us. Is this something that needs to be kept a secret?>

<02. He still won't say what is actually inside Fallout Shelter 027.>

<03. This is terrifying. I saw with my own eyes that he used the surgery table to dissect a living human into bones, and then replace it with machine parts. Is that a digitalized human? I feel there is a difference compared to the descriptions from before the war.>

<04. Sometimes he is extremely abnormal. Of course, instincts are telling me what he is trying to do has no conflict with our business... But just in case, I still tracked the coordinates of his signal.>

<05. He seems to look down on me? Not only me... regardless, it is hard to feel positive towards him with the contempt in his eyes.>

<06. I have a feeling... I am being serious, he gives me a weird feeling. Sometime I would constantly think about the problem, this guy... is he really human?>

Chapter 309: The Doomsday of the Defenders

When he saw the last line, Jiang Chen's face looked rather odd.

The bearded man had certainly guessed right, Lin Chaoen was not a human at all, but a machine.

Different from the digitalized human, Lin Lin, he had no traces of cells in his body. Jiang Chen confirmed multiple times. Even the "meat" on the mechanical skeleton was made by silica gels replicating the feeling of skin.

Jiang Chen opened that map again to confirm the red question mark located on the outskirts of the city center.

"Is there something here?"

After deliberating for a moment, Jiang Chen also marked the location on his EP.

After putting away the full sensory computer, he immediately left the mansion.

Returning to his office in the community center, Jiang Chen called Cheng Weiguo who just finished eating.

Not long after, Cheng Weiguo appeared in front of Jiang Chen's office desk.

"Is there something wrong?"

Jiang Chen turned on his EP map and showed Cheng Weiguo the marked area.

"I want to send people to explore this area, do you have any good recommendations?"

"The city center?" Cheng Weiguo stared at the location as he rubbed his chin with his eyebrows raised. "That place is not Qingpu, the mutants and zombies are more dangerous there. Oh, is

it okay if we just get an aerial view?"

Jiang Chen was dumbfounded before he came to a sudden realization.

Right, the Fishbone base has a helicopter. Although it had been modified to a helicopter gunship, it was still capable of performing a reconnaissance mission.

"How's pilot training?"

Chu Nan was acting as his representative at the Sixth Street, the mission of operating the helicopter would naturally fall to other people.

"We have two fully trained people who were personally taught by Chu Nan. They just flew the helicopter from the Sixth Street a few days ago. Based on his description, while the two pilots are still a bit lacking in experience, their knowledge base is there." Cheng Weiguo smiled.

"Ok, keep an eye on this. Report to me immediately if there are any results."

"Yes." Cheng Weiguo saluted.

But then, the phone on the table began to ring.

Cheng Weiguo stopped.

Jiang Chen, as if he had been expecting something, had a glimpse of joy on his face. He grabbed the phone and put it by his ear.

"Hello?"

"General! The elevator, the elevator stopped!" Wang Zhaowu's alerted voice came from the other side.

In Jia city, thirty kilometers away.

The Dusk along with the mutated humans at the Seventh Area conducted a coordinated attack on the Defenders in Jia city.

The mutated humans like ogres walked out of a sci-fi movie

walked through the shambles. They were equipped with steel armors, heavy machineguns, as well as the magazines around their waste, displaying a daunting light as they moved steadily towards the Defenders area of control.

Behind the troops, a mutated human, as well as a human, stood side by side on a hill piled up by broken concrete pieces as they gazed at the fires not so far away.

The mutated human, Troy, was the leader of Seventh Area. The man, Bo Yu, was the leader of Dusk.

"I have never imagined that a mutated human and a human could walk together in unity." Troy cracked a smile on his hideous face towards the human in a fur coat.

With his hands behind his back, the Blood Lion's mane swayed in the winter breeze as the corner of Bo Yu's mouth also carved into a smile.

"Based on common sense, it is hard to understand. But as long as a small perspective is changed, we can all live together."

Just like the smart dog and human.

Coincidentally, both sides shared the same thought.

The mutated human needed the supplies and firearms provided by Dusk, and Dusk required the fearless warriors of the mutated humans.

The victor in the distant battle had already been decided. Although the remaining human survivors used the bunker to fire back at the mutated humans, the defiant's fire was quickly extinguished by the hoard of mutated humans.

"Speaking of which, what is that on your finger?" While looking at the bloody red gem on Bo Yu's finger, Troy asked casually.

"Guess." Bo Yu smiled.

"It is definitely not diamond. It is similar to a crystal, but I have

never seen a red crystal before," Troy said.

"It is a nuke." Bo Yu used a joking voice to state the not so funny reality.

Troy cracked a smile as he obviously didn't think what he had said was real.

At the same time, an unexpected blast from ten meters away sent concrete debris into the air.

"Go die! Traitor!"

Followed by a thunderous roar, a survivor with blood all over his face leaped out of the shambles. His expression was grim and the wound that stopped bleeding burst again due to his angry outburst.

But in his hands was just an outdated assault rifle!

Troy just glanced at the person expressionlessly as he put out his hand to guard Bo Yu behind him. But the hand was surprisingly pushed away by Bo Yu.

Troy did not have time to be shocked before bullets began to be fired at Bo Yu.

The reality soon proved that he had time to be shocked.

The dark green veil formed a net beside him. The orange bullets, like mosquitos, were trapped within the spider web.

The expression on the person's face froze.

Unable to react, he saw a crystal fly across his vision.

The green light suddenly contracted before expanding as it blew into a field of green particles.

"This is an odd ability." Troy looked at the mist of blood that has splashed everywhere and smiled grimly at Bo Yu.

"We just walked further along on this path," Bo Yu said nonchalantly as he put his hands back into his pocket.

The Klein particle was connected to the warp drive.

As a firm escapist, Dusk was further on the path of warp drives.

"On another note, I remember you initially didn't plan to attack Wanghai city to find Fallout Shelter 005 at Qingpu? Why did you suddenly change your mind and decided to help us solve our trouble in Jia city." Troy asked.

"Because a problematic force is blocking Qingpu," Bo Yu said.

He was naturally referring to Fishbone base. Troy also knew this.

Troy remembered the heavy casualties he suffered in front of Zhufeng Highway as he also was angered.

They didn't lose on force, but rather on underestimating the enemy.

But he still didn't recognize the essence of the problem. They didn't lose just on underestimating the enemy, but rather on intelligence. If they built the camp more scattered, they would not be in the situation where one bomb would send half of the camp up into the sky.

"When would we push back?" A grim smile appeared on Troy's face.

That smile was filled with the desire for revenge.

"Once you use the survivors of Jia city to create a two thousand mutated human force. The supplies from the north would also arrive around that time," Bo Yu said emotionlessly.

Just like Troy, the name also annoyed him, but he was used to not displaying his emotion on his face.

Not only did two hundred thousand crystals go down the drain, now he had to invest in more supplies to help the mutated humans in Jia city to replenish their "population".

But what pained him the most was Sun Xiaorou.

Ten something years ago, the organization used all of its efforts to obtain a "sample" from Fallout Shelter 071, and they just lost

one.

The last few fires died down on the battlefield, just like the life of the Defenders.

When the battle ended, Bo Yu looked in the direction of Wanghai.

"Jiang Chen?" Murmuring to himself, he narrowed his eyes.

Inside the dark pupils, a dangerous light shone.

Chapter 310: The Darkness buried deep

The riot occurred at night.

Although the fallout shelter without sunshine had no concept of night.

It was only five hours after the security force forcefully removed the residents from the industrial area before the detention room inside the fallout shelter was stuffed full of protestors.

No one could bear that while they slept, a sharp sword could fall down anytime and hang above their heads. The ventilation that no one had paid attention to for twenty-something years has now become a gun pointed at them.

A gun sprouted in people's hearts.

Reality had proven that when everyone could not stand the same question, people become more courageous than they imagined.

The security force was comprised of less than one hundred people and was limited in power. Additionally, most of the soldiers were born in the fallout shelter. They didn't feel the obligation of the PAC. Compared to the emotionless and distant Han Junhua, they missed the kind and warm old leader. To the residents that protested, they not only felt compassion, but they were also supportive of their cause.

Compassion in breaching the rules would never occur in a PAC force, but they were not a force to begin with.

The resident assembly was re-establish again. Although they didn't receive permission from the fallout shelter terminal, they received support from all the residents. Under the leadership of ex-representative Wu Yaguo, in the name of justice, a mission detail was spread among the residents.

An hour to overthrow the dictatorship! An hour to renegotiate!

When the rumor of the mission started to spread, a few people already started to plot. But to the events occurring among the residents, Han Junhua was not clueless.

The external threat was already there.

This would be one move to eliminate the internal threat.

First, it was to shatter the sword.

The power system was temporarily out, which triggered the emergency protocol to use the backup battery. Although the power outage during this transition only lasted for a short ten minutes, the short ten minutes was enough for a lot of things to happen.

The entire fallout shelter was in sudden darkness.

The elevator was stuck underground which prevented any interaction between the underground and the surface. The mechanical engine of the fallout shelter door was also destroyed by maintenance workers which eliminated the possibility of Han Junhua closing the door. Due to part of the security force joining the rebellion, all the residents joined forces in the grand hall of the fallout shelter. Therefore, even if the power had returned after ten minutes, Han Junhua releasing the sleep gas to the entire fallout shelter would be futile.

The sword that hung above everyone's head was completely eliminated.

Then, there will be discipline!

80% of the security force chose to join the temporary assembly. 20% of the previous PAC security force swore to protect. Both parties engaged in intense gunfire along the major hallways as they pushed towards the fallout shelter leader's office.

The residents first occupied the armory and opened the detention room. Just like the conquering Bastille, the united residents released the imprisoned warriors. The warriors cheered as they armed themselves with the weapons.

Two hundred residents in gas masks and automatic rifles joined in the battle as the scale tipped towards the fallout residents' side.

Tian Feng led the last remaining ten soldiers in the valiant fight. They were the first group of soldiers that entered the fallout base. Twenty years ago they were just young men who recently joined the army, now they were at the age where they should have retired. They had planned for the worst, such as encountering NATO soldiers that would break into the fallout shelter.

But what they didn't expect was, during their last call, they had to face the residents they protected.

It was a suffocating feeling.

Tian Feng fiercely fired back as he tried not to remember the names that belonged to the faces in front of him.

But he couldn't.

Within the crosshairs, he saw the child from his neighbor. He still remembered the teen had said he wanted to be a botanist when the day the fallout shelter opened. He wanted to look at the grass grow. Wanted to see how resilient the radiation-contaminated grass was.

But he had already died, he had fallen in the pool of blood yet to be cool.

And him, and him, and even her...

"Ahhh!"

Finally, someone couldn't resist the mental torture. A soldier ran out of cover and frantically fired with his rifle.

"Dammit! Come back!" But Tian Feng didn't manage to stop him as he watched a few blood holes appear on his own comrade's body with his own eyes.

He died, but there was no agony on his face.

Tian Feng smashed into the wall and ducked into cover. His chest

pumped violently up and down while he tried to regather his breath.

"Dammit! Cough, cough!" Spit mixed with blood splashed on the wall.

He didn't know who to curse, or who should be cursed.

The noise of bullets was all that could be heard.

At that moment, everyone was mute.

...

Within the leader's office, through the bulletproof glass, Han Junhua silently watched the battle inches away from her.

Too weak.

Not even considered a small regional conflict.

Pre-war, she had commanded a battalion of mechanical paratroopers to suppress a riot planned by NATO on the PAC border. The gore she had seen, a hell far bloodier than this, she had seen them too many times.

But for some reason, she felt her heart ache.

Academician stood beside her as he silently gazed out the window.

The shaking figure along with the young figure created a vivid contrast.

Just like father and daughter.

Long after, Han Junhua spoke, "Are you not going to stand on the side of the residents?"

Academician Qin shook his head. "I stand by the truth."

"is that so?" Han Junhua looked surprisingly at the elderly man in his final remaining years.

"Because the truth is always the most difficult to accept, the

people searching for the truth is always the most lonely."

"That's really disappointing." Han Junhua looked out the window emotionlessly.

The sparks from the bullets jumped between the cold steel walls, reflected among the angry pupils. The soldiers still loyal to her constantly suffered defeat, they had no more backup.

"Human nature is the burden of survival, but without this burden, civilization would not be born."

"Do you want to say, I am wrong?" Han Junhua was straightforward.

"You are not wrong, but not correct."

Not wrong, but not correct? Han Juahua repeatedly chewed on those words in her mind, even though she knew there wasn't any purpose in thinking about it.

After moments of silence, Han Junhua asked, "You know in the beginning that this would be the result right?"

He was always more silent compared to anyone else, but he always knew the situation better.

She began to be suspicious.

Academician Qin didn't deny it, but his smile was bitter.

"Mhmm, I don't deny it."

"Why?" Han Junhua didn't look at him as she still used an emotionless voice to ask.

"I thought you had realized a long time ago." Academician Qin sighed.

Han Junhua was waiting for the elderly man to continue, but he didn't speak anymore.

"Even in the last moment, you can't tell me the reason?" Han Juahua asked.

Academician Qin only used silence to answer her.

"I have been thinking about a question for a long time. The candidate for the leaders of the fallout shelter, is it based on careful consideration?"

"You can think of it that way," Academician Qin said in a quiet voice.

"I used the supercomputer at the fallout shelter before to recreate the mathematical model of the population growth curve and the energy consumption speed, but the result I received surprised me... From the start, the energy of the fallout shelter was not enough. Right?"

Academician Qin did not answer.

But in a situation like this, silence was admitting by default.

Looking at the expression on Han Junhua, he knew that she had already guessed it.

Academician Qin let out a sigh as he gently said.

"Could you not serve your duty until the final moment?"

The voice carried a hint of pleading.

"Okay," Han Juahua said emotionlessly.

Academician Qin asked in surprise.

"Are you not afraid?"

Han Junhua shook her head.

"It's only death."

Outside the window, Tian Feng had already fallen.

With one hand against the wall, blood dripped from his arms.

He struggled as he raised the pistol to aim with his blood covered left eye.

Perhaps the clip was empty, no bullets came from the dark

muzzle.

In that instant, a rioter dashed in front of him, he swung the fire axe and chopped off his head. Blood dripped along the axe as the "hero" enjoyed the crowd's cheers and hugs.

He swung the axe dripping with blood up with his strong arm. It was like the torch of the statue of liberty.

Throwing the bulletproof vest away, Han Junhua silently watched the last scene.

She noticed the person with the axe smiling insolently at her.

As if it was the smile of the statue of liberty.

Human nature is the burden of survival, but if it were not for this burden, civilization would not exist. But once civilization is born, it must be accompanied by the gruesome brutality.

She seemed to have understood something, but in the attempt to prolong a civilization, an individual's realization would not change anything.

"At the end of the mission, can I ask you a final question?" Han Junhua gazed at him as she said expressionlessly.

Academician Qin was silent.

"I will just assume you have agreed by default," Han Junhua continued.

She walked to the window as she put her hand gently on the bulletproof window. The axe smashed onto the window where she had placed her finger in an aggressive act.

She felt the light tremble from the tip of her finger as she slowly said.

"Is the window specification of this room built to the lab's standard?"

"Yes."

Although it was only a single word, it made Han Junhua's cold heart feel a trace of comfort.

The rioters outside the window saw that they could not open the office door, so they brought the welding gun. From the crowd, she saw Wu Yaguo's face and the bruise on his face.

"If you release the explosive gas, you have a chance at killing the people outside the door," Academician Qin abruptly said.

"Is this part of the experiment?" Han Junhua asked.

He didn't speak anymore as he gave the final choice to her.

Like a pale experimental report was placed in front of her.

Hypothesis: The rationale dictator in the final moment before she is overthrown. Would she choose the lunatic choice to die with everyone?

Han Junhua closed her eyes as she carefully considered for a moment.

"I will not do that."

Experimental result: False.

"Mhmm." Academician Qin nodded as a smile with a trace of comfort appeared on his face.

At the end of the smile.

The door collapsed.

Chapter 311: Naive

The rioters broke into the room.

The gun barrel smashed onto Han Junhua's face as the single blow was enough to knock her unconscious. Then someone kicked her in the stomach and made her drop to the ground.

Han Junhua didn't feel surprised, she didn't even feel frightened because she knew, the pain she was about to receive would far surmount these.

Then, the "hero" ran up.

He raised the ax, with a grim smile, and was about to cut off her limbs.

But then, Wu Yaguo walked up and stopped the reckless "hero."

"Wait, everyone. Calm down and listen to me!"

When they heard Wu Yaguo's shout, everyone stopped what they were doing.

Han Junhua was on the ground with her face covered in bruises and blood, just in one minute, she was almost beaten to death by the angry rioters.

She silently looked at Wu Yaguo as she knew he was not there to defend her. If that was the case, he should have come in first.

"We are victorious, we are finally victorious!"

Wu Yaguo raised his arms as he used a passionate voice to shout.

The celebration began to echo in the fallout shelter, people watched him as if he was the reason why they were victorious.

"We used our hands to overthrow the despicable dictator's reign. We will use our hands to create a brighter future. Yes, we will!"

He desperately searched for the best phrases in his head as he tried to paint a bright future for the people. People watched him as

if they were worshiping God. The "hero" also dropped his ax as he looked at him religiously.

"...But before we can paint the picture, we need to put this criminal on trial."

Wu Yaguo looked at her.

Everyone looked at her.

"Kill her."

"With fire."

"No, her body should be hung."

Wu Yaguo silently listened to the voices by his ears as he looked at Han Junhua. He wanted to read fear from her eyes.

But he was disappointed, he only saw calmness.

The glimpse of anger quickly hid the mask of mercy.

"Quiet everyone. Everyone calm down for a moment."

He raised his hand as he signaled the crowd to quiet down.

He pointed his finger at Han Junhua on the ground as he said in a loud voice.

"I hate her. I want to kill with the cruelest way possible to express the anger in my heart..."

The bruise on his face made the words that much more convincing.

The "hero" on the side ripped off a piece of his broken shirt as he tied it on his bloody left arm, he then weighed the ax in his hand and smiled grimly at Han Junhua.

He was only waiting for an order. An order to chop her head off.

But Han Junhua didn't look at him from the beginning, she was just waiting quietly for something.

"But I choose to forgive her."

People looked at him in confusion.

"We are the just, we are using the name of justice to uprising. We will punish her for her crime, but everything must be done through law, and not our emotions. I forgive her, but the law will punish her for her crime..."

Listening to Wu Yaguo's charismatic speech, Han Junhua smiled. Although her smile was undetectable under all the blood.

The ability she couldn't master – manipulating people.

Without the need for technology, all can be done with a mouth.

The bruise became a symbol of his, demonstrating his kindness and forgiveness. People trust that under his leadership, fallout shelter 027 would become a brighter tomorrow and put him on the "throne."

As to Han Junhua, her permission was taken away.

A few rioters with weapons walked off and forcefully dragged her up. Using her EP, they deactivated the order she had set and "granted" the permission of leader to Wu Yaguo. And Wu Yaguo put the handcuff on her and pushed the wounded her out the door.

People stared at her in anger, people spat at her, and people attempted to throw garbage on her face.

But the merciful new leader stopped all of this.

"She will be punished but before that, we must make her live to the day when she will be punished."

On the side, Academician Qin silently watched everything. No one troubled the respected elder as they courteously asked him to go back to his home. But before that, they demanded he sends his congratulatory words to the new regime. He did and the people supervising him left.

Just like the wheels of history, inside the dark underground shelter, a familiar scene repeated itself.

...

Within the integration room.

Han Junhua sat on the cold bench and stared at the ceiling blankly.

Half a day has passed since the coup.

No one interrogated her, no one treated her wounds, and no one fed her.

But that was fine. Humans can survive for a few days without eating. As long as she still has a breath left, they were already being kind to her. Not to mention they were letting her spend the last remaining hours of her life in peace.

But then the door opened.

Han Junhua lifted her weary eyelids and she murmured in her mind: Finally here?

But she was disappointed, it was someone she was familiar with.

Feng Hui, the chief engineer of fallout shelter technology, responsible for the power infrastructure of the fallout shelter.

Feng Hui was afraid to look Han Junhua in the eyes, and so he lowered his head.

"It was me... I removed the energy rod by one centimeter."

Half of the success of this coup was attributable to him.

"Mhmm."

"Sorry..."

"Why do you need to apologize to me?" Han Junhua asked calmly.

"I just feel, how should I say it, we should have a different leader... Maybe everyone's life will be good?" Feng Hui scratched his head as he tried to coordinate the scattered words in his head.

Just a feeling?

Han Junhua ignored him as she continued to blank out.

Feng Hui took out a nutrient supply from his pocket and started to gulp it down before he hesitantly looked behind him. He then walked in front of Han Junhua, frightened "Can you drink this."

"Is the trial over?" Han Junhua asked.

"No..."

"This is not worth it." Han Junhua didn't take his nutrient supply and closed her eyes.

At the moment of victory to feel sympathetic to the dictator on trial. If it was not for the speech that Wu Yaguo had prepared beforehand, the anger of the residents may be passed onto him.

But Feng Hui had a pleading expression.

"I beg you, please drink this... At least, this will make me feel better."

He may be sympathetic towards people's uprising, but when he saw how miserable Han Junhua was being beaten by the crowd that had lost its rationality, his heart felt the torture of guilt.

"I can't."

Just as Feng Hui wanted to try again to convince her, footsteps suddenly came from outside of the door.

As he hurriedly put away the nutrient supply in his hand, two people walked into the dark detention room.

It was the new leader Wu Yaguo, and the ambassador Xu Lu.

"Feng Hui? What are you doing here?" Wu Yaguo looked at Feng Hui beside Han Junhua as he slightly frowned.

Xu Lu looked at Han Junhua with a smile on her face, she said, pleased.

"Not bad, she is still alive."

"Of course, we follow the law, and are not as reckless as this woman," Wu Yaguo said proudly.

"Is that so? That's perfect then." Xu Lu smiled.

Wu Yaguo was happy, and Feng Hui also felt relieved.

It was indeed a friendly signal, at least the Fishbone base maintained a supportive attitude to the new regime they had been established. This would make the negotiation more favorable for them. At least it yielded a positive result. This slightly comforted Feng Hui.

Only Han Junhua was indifferent.

The instant she saw the woman, she knew everything was over.

Xu Lu walked in front of Han Junhua. Then using two fingers to hold up her chin, she gently turned her head to face her.

Han Junhua didn't resist, but her eyes were peaceful.

"Jiang Chen wants to see you."

When he heard Xu Lu's words, Wu Yaguo had to warn her.

"But, she is waiting to be put on trial..."

"This is the pretense to maintain our friendship." Xu Lu straightened her body and looked at Wu Yaguo. "She threatened my leader before and used his mercy as the excuse for her dictatorship. She should be punished."

When Wu Yaguo heard it was the pretense of their friendship, he was immediately conflicted.

After half a minute of silence.

"Will you punish her?"

"Of course." Xu Lu smiled.

Wu Yaguo glanced at Feng Hui, "...Leave."

Feng Hui felt relieved. Although he still felt guilty, he was happy

he managed to dodge the bullet. He immediately escaped the place in quick steps.

Wu Yaguo's action was no different than when Feng Hui came in. He turned around to scan the door of the detention room. After ensuring that no one was listening, he lowered his voice to speak to Xu Lu.

"It will be hard to explain to the residents..."

"You will earn an additional 30 energy rods for your residents in the upcoming negotiation, I believe that these energy rods will be enough for you to live prosperously for the next year. You know, our leader hates her. If he has the opportunity to personally punish her, we don't care about this small price." Xu Lu smiled at Wu Yaguo as she painted a bright future for him.

When he heard her words, Wu Yaguo's eyes shone with an obvious ecstasy but he quickly calmed down.

"Ahem. If it was 40, I believe the residents will understand Mr. Jiang Chen's anger and they will make the necessary exception to the law. Since... it is shameful to deceive-"

"35 rods. This is the furthest we will go." Xu Lu had a trace of frustration in her eyes.

Of course, it was necessary to haggle. If they were too casual, it might cause him to be suspicious.

35 energy rods per month. It was more than three times what Han Junhua has earned and it was more than enough to demonstrate his "wisdom".

After hesitating for a moment, Wu Yaguo nodded in "pain".

Just like selling pork with a price on the shelf, what will be the final fate of the "wise" queen?

Han Junhua quietly watched the two discuss. She was still expressionless.

Before he left, Wu Yaguo looked at her for the final time with mockery.

The eyes seemed to say. Unfortunately, I can't enjoy the pain on your face.

But Han Junhua's expression was indifferent.

"You don't seem to be scared?" Xu Lu smiled.

"When will we head out?" Han Junhua asked calmly.

Xu Lu paused for a moment before the saint smile returned to her face.

"Now would be good."

Then, she turned around and headed for the door.

Chapter 312: This place has always been mine

It was only an hour drive between the Fishbone base and camp 27. However, because it was already the end of February, the snow on the ground was beginning to melt. Because of this, the zombies and mutants on the street began to feel unsettled.

They encountered two Roshans on the streets which slowed the fleet down momentarily. Jiang Chen spent double the time to arrive at the camp.

Standing on the outskirts of the concrete wall and looking up, Jiang Chen was impressed. Within less than fifteen days of construction, the camp had been developed to this point.

When they saw it was Fishbone base's fleet, the soldiers on the wall immediately opened the door and allowed the vehicles to pass.

When they were inside the camp, Jiang Chen jumped out of the car as Xu Lu had been waiting for him.

"We had some delays along the way. You didn't wait for too long did you?" Jiang Chen stood in front of her as he smiled.

"Not at all, it is my pleasure to wait for you." Xu Lu shook her head as she naughtily nodded.

"Haha, don't be so uptight, briefly explain to me the situation... Let's walk as we talk."

"Okay, boss."

The two of them walked to the center of the camp. Along the way, Xu Lu began to tell him the sudden changes underground.

From the initial protest to controlling the embassy to the uprising...

"How did boss know that the residents of the fallout shelter

would become a mess on their own?" As she walked beside Jiang Chen, Xu Lu smiled joyfully at him, her eyes were filled with traces of worship.

It was an enjoyable thing to be worshipped by such a beauty. Especially since Jiang Chen knew that with how clever Xu Lu was, she already knew the answer.

"Instinct."

When she heard Jiang Chen's brief response, Xu Lu paused for a moment before her mouth carved up. "You are very comical."

...

In the middle of the camp, there was only a two-meter high concrete building. It was the command post for the Fishbone base at Camp 27.

When they saw Jiang Chen walk inside, the two soldiers on patrol immediately saluted and opened the door for him.

Just as the door opened, a wave of heat brushed across his face.

"It is quite warm inside, there is no need to wear so many layers." Xu Lu smiled as she took off her winter suit.

Jiang Chen hung his winter suit on the wall as he scanned the window while speaking in shock.

"This is?"

The distributed but gentle temperature didn't feel like it was a furnace, but rather the controllable heated walled in the mansion.

But what was off was that along the supplies transported from the base, it didn't include heating devices. Even in the Fishbone base, only Jiang Chen's mansion was installed with this luxury device, the normal survivors only used an electric furnace.

"An electromagnetic nitrogen heating device. The residents of the fallout shelter gave it to us to express their gratitude for providing them with safety." Xu Lu walked beside a round metal

ball as she began to explain to Jiang Chen

The nitrogen composition of the base was approximate 78%. The device can use the special electromagnetic interaction to heat the nitrogen in order to achieve the uniformed heating results.

Jiang Chen looked at the round heating device as he walked up to touch it.

It was hard to believe that the device used to heat the entire building was only warm.

"What about electricity consumption?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Only two third of the traditional electric furnace."

"Looks like there are a lot of good things inside the fallout shelter." Jiang Chen nodded pleasingly.

Although winter was about to end, it would be nice to equip the Fishbone base with a set.

"It would immediately belong to you, right?" Xu Lu naughtily blinked her eyes.

"It always belonged to me." The corner of Jiang Chen's mouth carved up.

Looking at the confident, frivolous smile on Jiang Chen's face, Xu Lu grinned covering her mouth.

Jiang Chen shifted his frivolous expression as his face became serious. He cleared his throat and said.

"Let's talk about the matter at hand. Wu Yaguo has already proposed to renegotiate with us right?"

"Yes. Following your instructions, I painted a bright future for them." Xu Lu nodded.

"Did the embassy staff retreat?"

"Under the disguise of transporting Han Junhua, they all returned to the surface."

Hearing that Han Junhua had already returned to the surface, Jiang Chen had a dubious smile on his face.

"Good, they lost all the stakes on the table. Make them surrender."

"Roger."

With a charming smile on her face, Xu Lu bowed and departed with her mission.

...

Happiness and joy filled every corner of the fallout shelter. People celebrated their victory, intoxicated in formulated alcohol, feasting on molecular delicacies as if they were in the middle of a festival.

The bloodstains on the walls had been removed by cleaners; the bullets mark was filled in by dissolvers.

On the table of the leader's office, the conference table was filled with all kinds of molecular food. It became the celebratory table of the resident assembly.

"To celebrate our victory, cheers!" Wu Yaguo stood up as he proposed a toast to all the assembly members. Then he began to drink the alcohol in his hand.

The technology in the fallout shelter was highly advanced. With such an ample amount of supplies, they could almost live in the happy times no different from before the war. Just make the ugly and disgusting scavengers on the surface pick up their garbage for them. Then, at the right opportunity, spare the scavengers some of the technology they dreamed off, and enjoy the worship expression on their faces. Finally, they will enjoy the energy rods in their hands.

35 energy rods a month, it was more than enough for them to live in festivity every day.

"Haha! Cheers!"

"For freedom! For victory!?"

Between glasses, the feeling of intoxication began to spread on everyone's faces, as if it was a dream that they would never be wakened up from.

"..."

"Speaking of this, where did that b*tch go? In this happy moment, how can we miss her?" A drunk representative said.

Dissolving the resident assembly, they made the politician who usually doesn't work go mop the floors as no one sitting there had a positive opinion about her.

"Gulp-, before we punish her, why don't we do something fun with her?" Someone suggested in drunkenness.

"That's right, for example... Make that old virgin strip dance for us, haha!"

"I am really curious to see the ashamed expression on that bit*h's face that had been ruling us for three years."

"..."

Wu Yaguo listened to the derogatory words of the representative out of drunkenness as his expression was rather embarrassed.

It was not because he was embarrassed by those people's thoughts, he didn't mind torturing that woman to make this more entertaining, but Han Junhua had already been brought to the surface by Xu Lu...

"Ahem, friends, that bit*h have already been brought to the surface, as a gift for peace." Wu Yaguo coughed as he decided it was better to explain this sooner rather than later.

The voice began to die down as pairs of intoxicated pupils looked over.

A cold sweat rolled across his forehead as Wu Yaguo instantly sobered up. His head spun at rapid speed to formulate a not so disappointing excuse.

"You know, because she threatened our partner, that man called Jiang Chen wanted to personally punish her. Think about it, the once ruthless queen perhaps is under a bunch of angry hobos... I think, for that bit*h, that is the best punishment!"

The representatives thought about it as they all agreed.

"That makes sense. There is no more humiliating punishment than that, those lucky scavengers." Shi Yongtian sitting in the corner burped while he snapped his finger.

"That's right, burp-, why don't we guess how that bit*h is being tortured."

"Hahaha!"

"..."

"What's going on? Why so rushed."

"Sur...Surface." The man couldn't form a sentence while stuttering.

"Surface?" Wu Yaguo raised his eyebrows as he confirmed.

The man gritted his teeth and scanned all the representatives around the table. Then, he got closer to Wu Yaguo's ear and whispered.

The wine glass in his hand splattered onto the ground.

Just like the morning bell that has awakened the dream, the vibrant red alcohol flowed on the floor.

Wu Yaguo widened his eyes as his pupils shook in fear.

"How, how is that possible..."

Chapter 313: You have two choices

When Wang Zhaowu, who was responsible for the camp, knew Jiang Chen would be staying for a few days, he personally cleaned out a comfortable office and bedroom for him. He also told Jiang Chen to let him know if he had any concerns.

But Jiang Chen didn't bother the camp staff nor did he interrupt the normal operation of the camp. When he was bored, he sat in front of the table and began writing.

"Your message has been sent to the underground." Xu Lu walked into the command office as she smiled looking at Jiang Chen writing at the table.

Jiang Chen dropped the pen in his hand as he stretched and stood up from his chair.

"Wu Yaguo's response?"

"They rejected it and expressed their shock to our decision."

Jiang Chen didn't look surprised at all. "That's expected, what's their answer?"

It was expected. Whether it was their rejection, or shock.

"They locked the elevator and closed the door of the fallout shelter. They want you to examine the friendship between the two parties calmly." Xu Lu smiled.

Hearing that, Jiang Chen burst out laughing and shook his head.

Too naïve.

"Boss, what if they follow Han Junhua's strategy?" Xu Lu asked in a quiet voice.

"Lock the door? Haha, that's impossible."

Looking at the confident expression on Jiang Chen's face, Xu Lu was slightly puzzled. With her intelligence, she could think

through the strategy to make the residents of the fallout shelter start a coup, but she was unsure why Jiang Chen was so confident with them not locking the door.

A hint of confusion naturally didn't escape Jiang Chen's eyes, but he only smiled and didn't explain.

"Speaking of this, what's the maximum capacity of the elevator?"

"Based on its design, 20 tons," Xu Lu was more confused as she answered. She did not understand why Jiang Chen asked such a question.

"20 tons? Okay. From today on, every noon, send people to dump two tons of sand down to the ground.

Xu Lu thought for a moment before a sudden realization smile appeared on her face.

"As you wish, boss. Any other things you need?"

Jiang Chen scanned the regulation still yet to be completed on the table as he felt slightly wary. He then thought for a moment before responding.

"Mhmm... Where is Han Junhua?"

"In the basement of the camp."

A dubious smile spread on the surface his face.

"I am tired now, take me to see her."

...

Han Junhua's current condition would disappoint the representatives and Wu Yaguo.

After Xu Lu had taken her to the surface, the torture and humiliation she imagined didn't come. In fact, she didn't receive any inhumane treatment.

Or rather, the Fishbone base was treating her too nicely.

She was surprised, but when she asked Xu Lu, she only received a

mysterious smile.

The medical professional treated the wounds and bruises on her face and connected her broken ribs. With their current medical condition, it was easy to treat these types of injuries. However, what surprised her was that the survivors on the wasteland possessed such technology.

Immediately, she was taken to the basement.

The bed was soft, and there were a table and chair. Although thick chains hung on the wall, no one cuffed her.

Once it was time for food, a young female soldier would bring in steamy dishes for her. If she wanted to go to the bathroom, the same female soldier would put her in handcuffs, point at her with a taser, and send her to the washroom.

This confused her. Did he only want to lock her up?

Just like this, two days passed.

The metal door to the basement opened, a male and a female walked in.

When she saw Jiang Chen's' half-smiling face, Han Junhua was surprisingly calm.

Just like the day she stood in front of the type 50 electromagnetic pulse cannon and faced Jiang Chen with a pistol to her head while she counted with her emotionless voice.

Jiang Chen pulled up a chair in front of the former fallout shelter leader. Xu Lu stood beside him and smilingly looked Han Junhua in the eyes without saying a word.

"What are your thoughts?" Jiang Chen looked at the calm Han Junhua as he said with a grin.

Her luscious black hair dropped to her shoulder, under the two delicate eyebrows were a pair of peaceful eyes. The bruises could still be seen, but after treatment will disappear in no time. Her

uniform was changed into regular fallout shelter clothes. The tight-fitting clothes drew out her lithe figure.

He heard that she was beaten in the fallout shelter, but she looked alright now.

"Are you here to mock me?"

"Of course not. But you don't seem to be afraid? You have nothing to threaten me with now." Jiang Chen laughed.

Han Junhua didn't say a word as she just quietly looked at him, just like during their initial meeting.

Seeing that she didn't speak, Jiang Chen continued, "How does it feel to be betrayed by the citizens you protected? Despair? Hatred? Disbelief?"

"Unfortunately, none." Han Junhua shook her head, "What is your plan for me?"

None?

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows. "What do you think my plan is with you?"

"Vein injection."

"What is that?"

"A humane way of dying. Of course, if you find it troublesome, a bullet is enough too."

"No, I think you are mistaken. It would be a waste of god sent if I execute you." Jiang Chen laughed.

Although she had flaws in her personality which made her unfit for a management role, after some tweaking, she would be great for a role in the military.

Till the current stage, the Fishbone base didn't lack talent in any other areas except for commander talent.

When they fought, it was just raindrop-like bombs, then an

infantry charge. This type of battle strategy would be enough for small-scale battles but followed by the growth of the Fishbone base, he couldn't expect his enemies to continue to be weak.

From their initial countering, Jiang Chen had plans to recruit her. The colonel of PAC, although he didn't know why she became the leader of the fallout shelter, to be able to control a divisional level of battle was nothing to scorn about.

"My loyalty only belongs to the PAC," this girl was clearly not cooperative as she said emotionlessly.

"But that doesn't exist anymore."

"Do you really think so?" Han Junhua asked.

Jiang Chen paused for a moment as he thought she has yet to learn the reality of the surface.

Therefore, he contemplated before speaking.

"PAC? Go find them lightyears away. You have two choices in front of you, join me, or-"

Jiang Chen took out a pistol from his pack, with a "clang" sound he loaded the gun. Before smashing the pistol on the table in front of Han Junhua, he provocatively looked her in the eyes.

Xu Lu worriedly looked at the pistol on the table, and then at the expressionless Han Junhua. She gently dragged Jiang Chen's arm, "Boss..."

She was worried that Han Junhua would do something that endangers Jiang Chen.

"Don't worry, go for now." Jiang Chen waved his hand as he signaled to her not to worry.

Although she was worried, Jiang Chen's order for every "knight" was absolute. Xu Lu gave a look of warning to Han Junhua before she closed the door behind her.

Han Junhua glanced at the gun on the table and looked at Jiang

Chen questioningly.

But Jiang Chen only responded with three concise words.

"Live, or die."

Han Junhua was silent, and then she picked up the gun.

Jiang Chen calmly looked at her.

Then, she pointed the pistol at her temple, just like when they first met that morning.

"You... Why bother?" Jiang Chen used a helpless voice.

"My mission has already been completed. To die as a soldier is my glory."

Is every PAC official so stubborn?

"It's hard to understand." Jiang Chen looked at her as if she was a monster.

"You didn't belong to that era, you wouldn't understand."

As she said this, she pressed the trigger.

Jiang Chen shook his head and closed his eyes.

The sound of the striker being hammered diffused into his ear-

Chapter 314: The End of the Mission

Ding—

The sound of the striker echoed through the room, but the sound of the exploding didn't.

There were no bullets in the clip.

Han Junhua's eyebrows jumped.

A moment later, she slowly opened her eyes as she put the pistol on the table.

"Are you teasing me?"

"Not at all." Jiang Chen let out a sigh and put away the pistol on the table.

He had many hypotheses.

She could grab the pistol and attempt to threaten him by forcing him to go inside the fallout shelter and save the people that abandoned her. If she really did that, it would mean that she still pedantically cared about those people's lives. Therefore, it would be easy to force her to conform as Jiang Chen would just use their lives to threaten her.

If she couldn't pull the trigger, that meant that she didn't want to die in such a meaningless fashion. Therefore, a slavery chip was enough to control her.

But Jiang Chen didn't think that she would make, what Jiang Chen saw as the worst decision.

To the people unafraid of death and without attachment, he couldn't think of a way to control her.

Slavery chip? It was just a more elegant and more straightforward way of threatening people compared to gun against the head. Although it could monitor heart rate levels and hormone activity, it could not control people's thoughts.

"I sincerely hope you can join me in my cause." Jiang Chen used his last ditch effort.

"Cause? You call this a cause?" Han Junhua's mouth carved up into what looked like a contemptuous curvature, it was the first expression she gave Jiang Chen on her expressionless face. "I am a PAC soldier, I hope I can still be one when I die."

A trace of enragement flashed across Jiang Chen's face, Jiang Chen deeply inhaled as he tried to calm his mood.

"Looks like negotiation has failed." He dubiously smiled and stood up.

Han Junhua used an "obviously" look to respond to him.

"Great."

Jiang Chen only left that one word before leaving.

Gone?

Han Junhua watched Jiang Chen leave as she felt relieved.

But to her surprise, the door opened again.

It was Xu Lu who walked in. The woman with a smile so pure that it made her extremely comfortable.

"I don't understand, why do you have to reject our leader." Xu Lu looked at her with a smile.

"Are you willing to die for him?" Han Junhua asked emotionlessly.

"Of course." An unhealthy red flush appeared on Xu Lu's face before it faded away. Then her face returned to the same smiling expression.

"Then you should understand me. The ideology of PAC is my life."

When ideology becomes spiritual, it is not fundamentally different from a religion. The only difference is, religion is god

while ideology is philosophy.

Xu Lu neglected her description as she responded, "You are a lucky woman."

"Is that so?"

"Of course, because leader said, he will personally train you, until you conform."

"..." Han Junhua thought she heard wrong.

Is that considered lucky?

She could only say that there are all kinds of people in this world... Han Junhua muttered to herself in her mind.

Xu Lu's smile began to turn cold as she overlooked Han Junhua in her white dress and used a cold voice.

"Until you wake up and realize your place, your three meals a day will become two meals of nutrient supply."

"That's fine." Han Junhua's response was only two short words.

Xu Lu looked dubiously at her, the eyes seemed to say: I will see how long you can last.

A few female soldiers walked inside and took away the bed and all the other furniture.

"Enjoy your time in the darkroom."

After leaving those words, Xu Lu left the room.

...

It was lucrative to hope that everything would go according to plan. Han Junhua lasted until the end without conforming. But the more she acted this way, the more Jiang Chen became interested.

One sentence to describe the situation, she needed more lessons!

Coincidentally, he had plenty of time to give lessons.

Jiang Chen temporarily left Han Junhua's task aside as the

development of Fallout Shelter 027 was rather smooth.

Based on Jiang Chen's order, every noon at 12, the Fishbone base would drive an excavation truck and slowly pour around two tons of sand down to the horizontal elevator tunnel.

The sand was poured slowly, but falling from a thousand meter height, the sound of sand smashing against the elevator was still deafening.

The half an hour of deafening sound was like a curse that twirled around every resident of the fallout shelter as it tortured their mental defense.

Right now, the fallout shelter no longer held a celebratory atmosphere.

Fear, suspicion, and confusion hung on every resident's face.

The ground piled with garbage, the empty space in the industrial area was filled with the smell of vomit-inducing alcohol. People gathered there while they waited for Wu Yaguo's explanation.

"What's going on? Wu Yaguo, you said you have negotiated with them already!" A resident who stood in the front angrily pointed at his nose.

Three days ago, he had just put him on the throne.

"You, you can't blame me for this, it's those primal people that don't have any credibility," In the midst of the crowd's skepticism, Wu Yaguo explained with cold sweat rolling down his face.

He saw from those people's eyes, the color he had seen before.

This made him fearful. He didn't want to become the second Han Junhua.

"Stay calm, friends. If we are listless, that will make their plan come true," Wu Yaguo gulped as he desperately tried to calm the mood of the crowd.

"Calm? How are we supposed to remain calm? Let them bury us

alive?" Someone screamed.

"They wouldn't do that, they still need our technology. Including the unfinished Tiger II blueprint, they still need us, they are only pretending," a representative tried to suggest.

"The elevator's maximum capacity is only twenty tons, after this limit, we can never go back up."

"They are pouring sand, if we move the sand, the elevator would still be usable..."

"What's the purpose? Go up and surrender?"

"Dammit, these primal people without credibility!"

Wu Yaguo gulped as sweat continuously rolled down his forehead. He wanted to say something.

But at this time, Feng Hui walked up on the stairs as he started talking without permission.

"Everyone... I don't know if I should be the one saying this, but... with the current consumption speed, the fallout shelter's energy can only last for five more days."

Five days!

Compared to the sand, they had more critical things to worry about.

Once the energy is consumed, this would become a city of death in ten minutes.

Wu Yaguo furiously stared at Feng Hui, the latter shrunk his neck, but had no regret at all.

Feng Hui thought if he brought this question up now, if they could do something, the fallout shelter could still be saved... Although his feelings have never been right before.

The energy shortage was like a spell that lingered in every resident's mind.

The celebration in the past few days had spent the already short energy to almost nothing.

"If it was Han Junhua..."

Someone started the sentence but then realized his words as he immediately closed his mouth before finishing.

When everyone hated on one person, it was dangerous to defend that person.

But he obviously didn't know because his perspective surprisingly did not get rebuked.

"Yes, if it was her..."

"Maybe, pay attention to my dictation, I'm just saying maybe, we went over the line?"

It is funny to say, but the collective is always forgetful.

Until now, they finally remembered everything that person did for them. When they carefully thought about it, all of her actions were for them. As a dictator, she didn't use her power for personal gains.

The criticism began to shift to compassion for Han Junhua.

As Wu Yaguo heard the chatter, he knew he couldn't wait any longer.

If he continued to hesitate, he would become the criminal of the entire fallout shelter!

How would the crowd generate confidence? How would he freely escape his responsibility?

He did an expected, but foolish action.

"Everyone! Listen to me, listen to me! Now, we are facing the most critical challenge that Fallout Shelter 027 has ever faced since its inception!"

With his shouting, people stopped discussing again, they looked

at him while waiting for the next step.

"I admit, my vision is short-sighted, my knowledge is limited, and I express my deepest apology to my lack of ability." Wu Yaguo lowered his head as he gave the most profound bow to the residents.

Chatting began to sprout, but Wu Yaguo didn't bother with it. He raised his head, lifted up his arms and shouted.

"But I believe, the crowd's intelligence is glorious, the vision is with foresight!"

As he faced the pairs of skeptical eyes, Wu Yaguo opened his EP and entered a few lines of code.

Everyone's EP shook, people shockingly looked at the message on the EP.

"Now! I grant the power of the fallout shelter leader to all the residents! Everyone, technology allowed for absolute democracy to exist. Anyone could start a proposal, anyone could cast their sacred vote to any proposals, the absolute, just terminal will recognize everything. History will remember this moment, we just created history. Thank you for the continuous support, thank you..."

After he finished, Wu Yaguo fled from the stairs.

The decision making power was distributed to everyone's hands. The fallout shelter no longer needed a leader, everyone was a leader.

The instant he had escaped down the stairs, he used the corner of his eyes to see that the skepticism among the pupils was replaced with the excitement of power.

Shortly after, the first proposal was introduced regarding if a power cut was necessary...

Academician Qin stood in the corner of the empty ground and let out a sigh.

The same sigh was heard a few days ago.

But unfortunately, no one listened.

At the same time, the last wave of Klein particles was sent lightyears away as it carried an experiment report stained with blood.

As of now, the purpose of Fallout Shelter 027 was fulfilled.

Chapter 315: Taking Over the Fallout Shelter

Jiang Chen didn't know what kinds of interesting proposals the fallout shelter residents, immersed in their fantasies, had proposed. However, he knew what the last proposal was.

On the fifth day, the fallout shelter door opened.

They chose to surrender with all votes supporting the notion.

After the proposal had passed, everyone felt relieved. Because a lot of people among them had not eaten for the last twenty-four hours.

The elevator locked underground began operating again as it moved the sand and a trembling fallout shelter resident onto the surface. Under the guidance of the Fishbone base soldier, he saw Jiang Chen and expressed anxiously the will to surrender.

Jiang Chen gladly accepted their surrender, and the man felt relieved.

The man was Wu Yaguo.

Under the supervision of one hundred Fishbone base soldier, the one thousand five hundred residents underground initiated a new proposal to pass the leader permission to Jiang Chen. At gunpoint, just like the day they forced Han Junhua to surrender her leader permission, everyone voted in agree under humiliation.

Unanimously passed, Jiang Chen was the new leader of the fallout shelter.

Therefore, the door of the fallout shelter was non-existent to the Fishbone base. The permission to open the door or not was now controlled by Jiang Chen.

Immediately, the one thousand five hundred residents were forcefully moved to the surface as they were packed into the crowded temporary shelter, waiting for Jiang Chen's order. The

residents were like shaken hamsters. Even when they faced Han Junhua, they stood up valiantly. But in the face of the "ruthless" Jiang Chen with military power, they had no courage to resist at all.

Human nature was a delicate phenomenon.

However, Jiang Chen gave them disheartening news as he quickly planned their future.

The entire fallout shelter 027, including the residents that moved to the surface in the beginning, nine hundred out of the one thousand and seven hundred people were elites from different industries. Of the remaining eight hundred people, four hundred were twelve or below, and the rest were all useless garbage.

The four hundred useless individuals were dragged to Shenxiang Town colony where they will be planting the Carm tree and processing the mutated fruits necessary to produce nutrient supplies.

Of the remaining thirteen hundred people, they were divided by family. Part of the group will be living on the surface of camp 27, while the remainder will return to fallout shelter 027 to enjoy their happy life.

Needless to say, even with so many shortcomings, the fallout shelter was still the happiest place on the wasteland. There were only two hundred individuals granted a return to the fallout shelter, and the number of people will change based on Fishbone's project. The two hundred research individuals will be divided into five projects as they continue to enjoy their life. They were permitted to bring a spouse along with children less than 18 years old to enjoy the same life.

Of course, there were plenty of talents in the fallout shelter. If their efficiency is too low, they would be kicked out. People would gladly take their spot and bring their family to enjoy the heaven-like life.

As to the families forced to stay on the surface, Jiang Chen didn't give them any trouble. Instead, he treated them as a talent reserve. For the people influential in virtual reality development, Jiang Chen moved their family to the Fishbone base and gave them to Du Yongkang to develop the virtual reality MMORPG.

Speaking of Du Yongkang, he certainly felt left out. After he had developed Future 1.0, Jiang Chen had almost forgotten about him.

A lot of people that had joined the Fishbone base around the same time were all tasked with important duties, while he was stuck with a bunch of machines, writing codes. If he had nothing to do he would just try to waste the day away. But now that he had people, he finally had an opportunity to display his skill.

However, he was still confused about why he was developing Future 1.0. He didn't understand the purpose of developing an outdated virtual reality that required a helmet. It was the kind of feeling where people already had consoles, but they still wanted to play the original Gameboy.

But he didn't voice his thoughts.

...

Standing at the gate of the camp, Jiang Chen looked at the row of trucks leaving the camp.

Five hours ago, the eight trucks hauled a total of 120 tons of concrete. This C-grade concrete produced from the concrete plant in Shenxiang would be used to build the new homes for the fallout shelter residents.

Now, the trucks transported away 421 fallout shelter residents. During the ability assessment, they were determined to not possess any research ability. They were incorporated into the Fishbone base with a citizen level of "slave". While working in the plantation to feed themselves, they will also be working towards becoming a "lower citizen" one day.

Jiang Chen didn't know since when Xu Lu stood beside him, but he suddenly heard her exclaim in a light voice.

"It is hard to believe that the hard to chew on fallout shelter defeated themselves like this."

"This is normal." Jiang Chen gazed at the shadows disappearing at the end of the highway as he grinned.

"You are always so wise." Xu Lu watched Jiang Chen's back with a smile.

Jiang Chen paused for a moment as he didn't imagine people would describe him as wise as he began laughing out loud.

"It is not wise, not at all... Only some experience with society."

Xu Lu didn't continue on this topic.

"How are the resident assembly representatives going to be treated?"

"I have already arranged for them to go on the truck."

Including Wu Yaguo and Shi Yongtian. The Fishbone needed all forms of talents, but it didn't need politicians who only knew how to speak and point fingers. It would require months if not years of labor for them to interrogate into the new life on the wasteland.

Hearing that Jiang Chen had already made the arrangement, Xu Lu smiled and nodded before she started to discuss her next step.

"Now that this side of things is over, do you need me to return to the logistics department immediately?"

"No need, we need management talent here. Wang Zhaowu is not bad at commanding an army, but it would be disastrous if the same techniques used to manage an army were used politically. You are exceptional in this field, you'll be in charge of the affairs at Camp 27."

"Okay, boss." Xu Lu bowed.

"Wang Qin will organize the research projects before transitioning them over to you. Your primary responsibility will be ensuring that the research needed is being done. Other than that, the rest will be up to you. You can do it!"

As he said this, Jiang Chen patted her shoulder, trying to motivate her before leaving.

"Also, one more thing." Xu Lu seemed to have remembered something as she stopped Jiang Chen.

"Mhmm?"

"An elder man wants to see you. He said he is an academician from the Pan-Asian Corporation Academy of Social Sciences, his name is Qin Xuehai..."

Chapter 316: Light Years Away

Tents of various sizes were built around the outskirts of the camp. Although they were simple and crude, they were enough to weather the harsh external conditions. These tents were all hauled from the Fishbone base and will be used before Camp 27 apartments are built. Therefore, the residents forcefully moved to the surface must settle for them.

The tents formed a distinct contrast with the one hundred homes in the center of the camp as if it was the ghetto versus the rich.

The situation was rather comical. They had previously mocked the two groups of residents that first moved up to the surface stating that they would rather live in the harsh conditions of the surface than the comfort in the fallout shelter. But now the situation seemed to be reversed as the people they mocked now became someone they envied.

After passing through a few tents, Jiang Chen walked to a tent at the corner of the camp. He saw an elder with white hair who seemed to be waiting for him.

"You are Academician Qin?"

The elder kindly smiled at Jiang Chen who stood in front of him as he got up.

"Yes, and you must be Jiang Chen?"

Jiang Chen nodded.

"Your body condition doesn't seem to be too well."

The elder waved his hand as he said something that surprised Jiang Chen.

"Don't worry, I am a digitalized human."

Digitalized human? Digitalized humans can also age?

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes but quickly returned back to

normal.

"I heard you have something important to tell me, is it just this?"

"Of course not." Academician Qin shook his head. "There is one thing I want to give you."

As he said, he picked a baseball-sized black sphere out of his pocket.

Jiang Chen looked at the sphere as he frowned. It felt like he had seen this somewhere before.

Suddenly, his pupils contracted.

"The Golden Apple?" Jiang Chen whispered.

Academician Qin paused a moment before shaking his head. "Is that how you refer to this thing? But you'll be disappointed. It is only a communication device based on Dr. Klein's research on Klein particles, it is referred to as galactic cellphone. Of course, the energy for this has been completely consumed, it can only provide you with a coordinate."

Jiang Chen took over the black sphere as he carefully examined it in his hands. The appearance was no different than the one he obtained in U-235, but this was clearly lighter.

Also, this must be the real "Golden Apple", not the counterfeit "Golden Apple" the Third Reich mimicked. This thing was not meant to broadcast to other time dimensions, but rather to conduct communication across time.

"Can this thing... Speak to the past?"

Academician Qin smiled when he heard Jiang Chen's question, "In theory, yes. However, just like the Shronginder's cat, even if you spoke to the past, you can't verify if someone heard it, and you can't verify if they understood or not."

"Is that so? I heard that this thing is made with brain extract-" Jiang Chen mustered to himself as he was deep in thought.

"That is false." Academician Qin smiled. "That's right, the brain extract can detect Klein particle activities, but how is it possible to use the brain to create this?"

In a parallel world, someone certainly did that... Jiang Chen said in his mind.

After a momentary pause, Academician Qin put on a stern face as he continued, "To be honest, this thing had lost its purpose already. The reason why I am telling you this is only because I'm trying to explain a fact to you."

"What fact?" Jiang Chen observed the metallic ball in his hand.

"This is an experiment."

Jiang Chen's action stopped as he looked at Academician Qin.

"Experiment?"

"That's right, the experiment is to research under the circumstance of extremely limited resources, how would the human society evolve," Academician Qin calmly told a shocking truth.

Jiang Chen was in shock, or in disbelief.

But he quickly realized something was odd.

It was too much of a coincidence. The PAC government was that useless? The fallout shelter was a civil defense structure and built based on the international political situation deteriorating. Would it really be problematic to store more nuclear fusion cores? It was set for 50 years, but it had to open in 20 years. And that Han Junhua, she was clearly not meant to be a politician.

But he didn't manage to think that the entire fallout shelter was just an experiment, every single person inside was a white rat.

"From the beginning, there was not enough energy. Even the choice of leaders, the kind Zhang Qiming as the first leader and the cold Han Junhua as the second leader, they were both not ideal

choices for leadership, but can be researched as classic personalities."

"The experiment's result is sent to the Zhenghe Space Colonization Ship lightyears away using this device."

The elimination of sources of error, and investigate into key subjects were typical of an experiment.

It was just that, the experiment to be conducted on a group of people was too cruel.

"Although it is just a small fallout shelter, don't you think this is the reflection of society?"

"Why are you telling me this?" Jiang Chen stuffed the metallic ball into his pocket as he retorted.

He was not part of the PAC, nor did he have anything to do with the dissolved World Alliance Organization. He was not bored enough to think of the people lightyears away.

"I am only providing you with a thought process. If you happen to encounter such a choice, I believe you will learn something from it."

[Thought process? That choice?]

"Thought process?" Jiang Chen didn't understand.

"That's right, as a researcher who lived in the fallout shelter for 20 years, other than being responsible for the experiment, I have been thinking about another question."

"What question?"

"You should have heard of reproductive separation."

It was not a complicated subject, even in the biology textbook from the 21st century it was mentioned. Jiang Chen only recalled briefly before he nodded.

"Because of geographical isolation and other factors, different

groups of the same species reproduce in different habitats. Due to the inability to carry out gene exchange, to withstand the natural selection of different environments, it would eventually lead to the formation of two completely different species. "

Academician Qin nodded in praise as he looked at Jiang Chen.

"Although there are still some flaws with the theory, that's mostly the case. With geographical separation, after thousands of years' of evolvement, the same species would evolve into two completely different species. Geographical separation is the pretense for reproductive separation. But have you considered another possibility? If for some reason humans were forced to create geographic separation, what kind of possibility would that create?"

"Reproductive separation?" Jiang Chen paused for a moment.

"No, it's ideological separation." Academician Qin shook his head as he threw out a concept that Jiang Chen never heard of before.

"How you noticed, in only 20 years, the people living underground and the people on the surface have been separated into two kinds of people. What would happen if 50 years passed? Or even longer time."

Jiang Chen began to ponder on the idea as he waited for him to explain.

"Under different environment, the civilization making an adjustment to the environment is known as evolvement from a social science point of view. Just like how although reproductive separation didn't exist between the ancient and modern people, there exists a huge gap between them ideology wise."

"If we look at the deep space light years away, is there a gap created between the space colonization ship and us?"

"The instant when the space colonization ships accelerated to escape the solar system, they were no longer humans from earth.

Or rather, the ship who have gathered the elites of the human civilization had already evolved into something higher."

"So what? Whatever they evolve into, they are no longer on earth," Jiang Chen said nonchalantly.

When he heard Jiang Chen's words, Academician Qin only laughed.

"In the 16th century, what did the Europeans bring to America?"

"Slaughter?"

"No, civilization."

Was there a difference? Jiang Chen just wanted to ask, but he all of the sudden stopped.

That's right because there was no difference...

"The rebirth of the civilization must be accompanied by bloody brutality," Academician Qin said gently.

"You mean... They will be back?"

"Regardless if they will be back or not, they will do something. And to us as the "natives" the process must be accompanied by pain. Blood? Sacrifice? But what is truly terrifying is that these actions will be justified through their perspective."

Chapter 317: Supreme, Harmony, Purity

Supreme, Harmony, and Purity.

Supreme, the fusion between human and technology. It was simple to understand. The digitalized human would be considered part of the supreme philosophy.

Harmony, the combination of human and nature. It was using genetic engineering to modify humans to adapt to harsh conditions. The example would be the mutated humans who could feast on the mutants meat. They were definitely the group who enjoyed the wasteland the most... Although no one would classify them as human.

As to purity.

"Purity is nothing will change."

"Nothing will change? Is that considered evolution?" Jiang Chen was puzzled.

...

"It is considered evolution." Academician Qin nodded. "The activity of civilization expanded from earth to space, it is a great chance to make no change to the form of existence. They don't abandon any parts of being human and use foreign objects to strengthen themselves, protecting the body itself. This requires no fewer sacrifices than the first two. The only thing we can guess now is that the new human who chooses this path is the most likely to be friendly to us, and at least better than those who chose supreme or harmony. "

After listening to Academician Qin's explanation, Jiang Chen remained silent.

He let out a sigh after a long while.

"Regardless, these are all too distant."

"It is indeed too distant. The formation of a new civilization would take tens, hundreds, and even thousands of years. But regardless the length of time, civilization would have to make the decision on how it chooses to continue its existence. As an elder man who is about to step into the coffin, the only thing I can do is tell you what I know. If you can learn something from it, and make the right choices, it will be the pleasure of civilization."

"..."

"The pleasure of civilization? That is a daunting recognition. But unfortunately, Jiang Chen didn't have any interest in becoming the next savior, nor did he have the capability to become one. But if he thought about carefully, if he had to cast a vote in terms of the direction of the entire civilization, he would lean more towards the route of purity.

As to why? Naturally, besides from purity, would the humans coming from the two other routes still be considered human?

Under a bold assumption, the end to harmony would be humans fusing with mutants, and the end of supreme would most likely be advanced artificial intelligence and internal hard discs. Regardless of which one, the pleasure of being human would be abandoned.

After leaving Academician Qin's tent, Jiang Chen threw the "authentic golden apple" into the storage dimension and walked to the gate of the camp.

An armored vehicle was parked in front of the gate, and from the cigarette butts on the ground, the vehicle had been waiting for a long time.

When he saw Jiang Chen walk over, the driver who was killing time smoking a cigarette immediately threw it away and saluted to him with a straight back.

Jiang Chen nodded to the driver as he sat in the passenger seat.

"Let's go back to the base."

"Yes!"

It only took a moment of zoning out before the vehicle arrived at the mansion in the base.

When Jiang Chen walked inside, he hung his winter suit on the wall and bumped into Sun Jiao who was coming down the stairs.

"...Are you okay?" Sun Jiao asked caringly when she saw Jiang Chen's face.

"Mhmm?" Jiang Chen looked at Sun Jiao, dumbfounded. He scratched his face. "Is there something on my face?"

Looking at Jiang Chen's action, Sun Jiao covered her mouth as she began to giggle.

"Yes, there are two bugs on your forehead almost twisting together."

Bugs?

Jiang Chen touched his forehead, but he felt his eyebrows.

When he saw the mocking expression on Sun Jiao's face, he immediately realized that the girl was teasing him.

"You dare to tease your husband?" Jiang Chen pretended to be angry as he leaped toward her, but Sun Jiao dodged with a smirk.

Regarding body conditions, Jiang Chen would never be able to catch up to Sun Jiao without special abilities. But Sun Jiao obviously didn't try too hard as they fooled for a minute before she was tackled onto the sofa by Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen, breathing heavily, looked at Sun Jiao who he finally managed to catch and grinned.

With a slightly flushed face, her full breasts bounced up and down. Her crystal eyes covered by a layer of mist, staring straight into Jiang Chen's eyes.

Jiang Chen who was about to "bully" her stopped.

"What's going on? Honey."

Jiang Chen used his finger to gently lift up the ruffled hair on her forehead and said gently.

He could feel her hesitation. She had her own thoughts.

The audacious face rarely displayed a trace of fragility. Sun Jiao hesitantly looked at Jiang Chen as she whispered.

"How about this. Why don't you go take a break on the other side?"

When he heard Sun Jiao's words, Jiang Chen was surprised. Sun Jiao always wanted to keep him on this side, but this time she brought this up on her own.

Sun Jiao read the surprise on Jiang Chen's face. Then with a blushing face, she continued.

"Didn't you say... Compared to the other side, this side is more depressing? I'm scared..."

She bit her lips before quickly letting go.

"All in all, I can't allow you to dislike this side."

Although the voice sounded capricious, Jiang Chen could still clearly feel the love.

"Mhmm, I promise." Jiang Chen looked into Sun Jiao's eyes as he sincerely promised.

After gazing with Jiang Chen for a while, Sun Jiao suddenly burst out laughing.

"What are you laughing at." Jiang Chen pretended to be angry as he slapped her butt.

Sun Jiao cried out in slight pain as she rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen.

"Nothing, I can't think my husband is adorable?"

"I think you should think your husband is strong." Jiang Chen

with a smirk as his hands began to move around.

Sun Jiao felt the coldness that moved around her waist as her face began to burn. She rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen and joked.

"In the living room again. We've never successfully done it in the living room..."

It was Jiang Chen who blushed this time.

He remembered the first time when Sun Jiao was like an untamed cat that jumped onto him. However, before they could do anything, Yao Yao who came downstairs saw him completely exposed.

"Ahem, why don't we continue in the bedroom?" Jiang Chen subconsciously glanced at the empty stairs as he awkwardly retreated his hands.

Sun Jiao seductively rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen as she swiftly escaped from Jiang Chen's hug and sat on the sofa.

With two fingers, she demandingly lifted Jiang Chen's chin.

"Come to my room tonight."

The red lips naughtily breathed a breath of warm fragrance.

Chapter 318: Transferring the Military Factory

The next morning, Jiang Chen with black circles under his eyes, walked out of Sun Jiao's bedroom yawning.

As he reminisced the intimacy that happened last time, he couldn't help but smile. Perhaps because they haven't done it for so long, last night Sun Jiao was particularly demanding as she only let him sleep after midnight while she drifted to sleep as well like a well-fed cat.

As Jiang Chen thought about this, he stretched his back with a delightful smile-

"Ka."

The pleasant smile froze on his face as a drop of cold sweat rolled down his forehead.

[Fu*k, my back! Ouch, ouch, ouch]

At the same time, the still sleepy Yao Yao walked into the hallway.

She looked at Jiang Chen who froze in place as she tilted her head in confusion.

"Hmm?"

"Ahem, Yao, Yao Yao, come help me..." Jiang Chen with his thick skin finally squeezed out these words.

He felt humiliated...

The nice Yao Yao immediately walked up to help him.

Jiang Chen looked at the innocent eyes as he didn't know how to explain what caused his stiff back.

...

It was already early March; snow was barely visible in Wanghai now. Followed by the stabilization of the situation on the wasteland, it was time to return to the modern world as events have also been progressing along there.

Of course, before he returned, Jiang Chen still had to take care of some urgent matters.

After eating lunch at the community center, Jiang Chen rode the helicopter to the Sixth Street as he headed immediately to the Zhao Corporation Headquarter within the Inner Circle.

After months of repair, the traces of the civil war were no longer visible in the Inner Circle. Including Zhao Corporation's building almost penetrated by the electromagnetic cannon, from the outside, it was impossible to tell that a bloody civil war erupted here.

Just as he stared into the Zhao Corporation building, Jiang Chen felt countless eyes focus on him before fleeing away.

He smiled as he didn't bother with their looks and he headed straight to the elevator.

The new security guard in the front saw Jiang Chen's back and was prepared to stop him because he didn't notify the reception desk.

The old security guard with sharp eyes immediately dragged the new colleague back by the collar.

The new security guard tilted his neck and looked at the old security in shock. When he saw that the elevator doors had already closed, he complained in frustration, "What are you doing? Didn't the boss say that without going through the front desk, all visitors should be kicked out."

"Bullsh*t, did you not see who he was? If you dared to stop him, your boss would stuff your head into the toilet."

The old security guard spat all over his face as he remained

completely dumbfounded.

"Who, Who is he..."

Seeing how stupid his new colleague was, the old security let out a sigh.

"Sigh, you just came from Hang City so you might not know, the Sixth Street now is not what it was before. Did you see the newly built casino in the Inner Circle? A few months ago a nuke blew up there."

"Nuke?!" The new security's eyes widened.

"Tactical nuke. Although it was not a big one, it did wipe out half of the Inner Circle."

"Is that the person..."

"No, but things changed here. The Group of Ten council collapsed after the civil war. And that man, the only victor out of the war, is the general of the Sixth Street." The old security let out a sigh as he said melancholily.

It would be impossible to say he didn't miss the old times, back then the status of being a security guard of Zhao Corporation was envied by many.

The new security guard's eyes were about to pop out as cold sweat began to roll down, he felt scared.

He was thankful that the old guy dragged him. It would be less of a deal if he lost his job, but if he offended someone of power, it would be a question of if he could walk out of the door or not.

Other people would need an appointment to see Zhao Chenwu, for Jiang Chen, the process was not so problematic.

When Jiang Chen walked into his office, the previous ruthless leader was already waiting in front of the desk.

"A rare visitor, what brings you here?" When Jiang Chen walked in, Zhao Chenwu stopped the work in his hands as he stood up

smiling.

Jiang Chen noticed that his mood seemed to be a lot better. He didn't have the same expression of despair that was present when he passed on his power.

"How have you been?"

"Haha, great, thanks to Mr. Jiang. Let's go talk in the room next door."

With the food business blooming, although he lost part of his power, he had significant gains in other areas. Under the direction of Jiang Chen he created the trade fleets, not only did he extend the business up to Luzhou, he even opened the market for tea and coffee. The green crystals flooded to him. In less than a month. He had already recovered nearly a third of his losses from the civil war.

While they caught up, the two walked to the guest room next door as they sat around a table. Not long after, his assistant Su Lei walked inside as she poured hot tea for both of them before leaving.

Jiang Chen noticed her right hand was switched into mechanical prosthetics. It must be because of the civil war.

After some small talk, Jiang Chen began to discuss the issues at hand. When he asked about the status of the ten T-3 power armors he has ordered. It was already March; it was around the time the order should be completed.

"It is already done! I went to examine it in the military factory, the technicians have completed the last stage of program testing, do you need me to take you there for a visual?"

Jiang Chen waved his hand. "There is no rush, I will send people to transport it back tomorrow. The 88000 crystals can be deducted from the food business' income. Also, how's your production capacity for your military factory?"

When heard Jiang Chen ask about the military factory, he gave a brief thought before he gave a conservative estimate.

"With the newly added production line, the production capacity increased by sixty percent."

"Sixty percent? Let me try a different question, how many power armor can the factory produce in a month?"

"At most three."

"That's too little." Jiang Chen shook his head.

Seeing that Jiang Chen was unhappy with his work, Zhao Chenwu had a helpless expression on his face. "It is not little at all. Power armors are not bullets, and the process can't be streamlined. It takes half a month with ten technicians around a skeleton with blueprints to make them. Also, these are all skilled workers."

"Why can't the production be streamlined? Is the power armor before the war manufactured one by one?"

When he heard Jiang Chen ask this, Zhao Chenwu forced a smile. "It is not that simple, there are thousands of parts inside. Without a complete industrial process, it is impossible to streamline the process for a massive thing like this. The power armor is one of the better products. If it is the spider tank, at best it would be one unit per half a year."

Zhao Chenwu paused for a moment before he continued.

"I am serious, with the increasing number of factories, the cost of steel, bronze, and aluminum have all increased. The profit margin of the firearms is no way near as high as the food business..."

Jiang Chen finally understood when he heard Zhao Chenwu say that.

The key point was, he had no interest in developing the military factory. The profit of the food business would bring in millions of crystals, and the power armor had a cost of nine thousand crystals,

to begin with. With a sale price of eleven thousand, it would only be a profit of two thousand. The work an entire winter would only net twenty thousand which would be equivalent to a trip down to the neighboring city.

He developed the military factory before to equip his private force. Now that Jiang Chen had put a restriction on the private force, and even injected them with the "honorary chip", he didn't have the motivation to develop the military factory.

But since the military factory was not his, Jiang Chen couldn't demand him to continue to expand if Zhao Chenwu was unwilling, so he spoke after thinking for a moment.

"How about this, sell the military factory to me, including those workers, give me a price."

Zhao Chenwu was ecstatic when he heard Jiang Chen was willing to take over the not so profitable military factory.

"No problem. The military factories used to produce spider tanks, and power armors cost a total of eight hundred seventy thousand crystals. I will sell it to you at cost."

Chapter 319: Purchasing Firearms

In the end, the transfer price of the military factories was lowered to six hundred thousand crystals before they agreed on the deal.

[Eight hundred and seventy thousand? You think your military factories have a stable source of income? Ordinary people would be unable to afford this, combined with the already limited distribution channel. Especially with the formation of the Sixth Street Bank, the wealth generated from the last two crusades completely ignited the industrial fire of the Sixth Street. Workshops and factories appeared like bamboo sprouts. With the lucrative food business in place, it would be insane to use the money to expand the military factories.]

Zhao Chenwu debated with Jiang Chen for a while before he settled on a price. He was satisfied with a price of six hundred thousand crystals. With these crystals as liquid assets, he could further expand the trade fleets and expand the business further beyond the horizon.

But for Jiang Chen, compared to crystals, as the general of the military government, needed to consider the military aspect.

"Also, how is the development of the T-4 power armor?"

Regarding development, Zhao Chenwu's expression was rather awkward.

"Part of the technical problems are yet to be resolved; it is primarily related to the engine. The request I sent out to the two mercenaries groups to retrieve technical support has yet to progress..."

"Transfer me the research team as well then," Jiang Chen said straightforwardly.

Since he recently incorporated fallout shelter 027, to the problem

Zhao Chenwu couldn't solve, maybe it would not be a problem at all for the scientists that inherited the technology before the war.

Zhao Chenwu nodded. "Okay, the research team is already part of the military factory. But to be honest, research is a bottomless pit. Other than the armor being a bit weaker, the T-3 power armor is superb in mobility as well as firepower, there would not be a lot of room for improvement..."

"Is it not weaker, but too weak." Jiang Chen shook his head. "Other than the armor in front of the chest, the other parts would be busted by a few scratches of the Death Claw."

Zhao Chenwu forced a smile, "You can't compare this thing to a Death Claw, the defense is not the strong suit of the airdrop type of power armor. If the Death Claw is in close range, even the land type power armor would not be able to hold out."

"Land type power armor? Speaking of this, is there a military factory that produces the land type at the Sixth Street?"

Zhao Chenwu shook his head, "No, or rather no need."

"No need?" Jiang Chen was slightly surprised.

"Compared to the cumbersome land type power armor, the airdrop type with high mobility and short range flight capability obviously are more fitted to explore the wasteland. For example, if a group of zombies surrounded the power armor, the airdrop type would be able to use the turbine engine to fly out, the land type would be stuck there being squeezed to death," Zhao Chenwu patiently explained to Jiang Chen.

While zombie's claw and teeth could not break the power armor steel, it could use its size to squish the power armor flat.

[I see, so it comes down to practicality after all...]

The tea on the table was already cold.

Looking at Jiang Chen deep in thought, Zhao Chenwu took a sip

of the tea and signaled Su Lei to add more hot tea.

"No need for the trouble, it is pretty late." Jiang Chen glanced at the clock on the wall as he stood up smiling.

Zhao Chenwu also stood up and laughed.

"Are you planning to leave? I will send you down."

"Oh, also, something else... I need another batch of firearms. Do you have any firearms dealer you can recommend to me?"

Zhao Chenwu paused for a second, "What type of firearms?"

"Anti-armor weapon, heat sensor grenade, and sniper rifle, the more, the better."

"Haha, you found the right person!" Zhao Chenwu was ecstatic. "One of my old friends happened to visit me from Su City and asked me if I was interested in absorbing a batch of firearms. But I am not even in that business anymore, so he was troubled by how to get rid of his batch. If you are interested, I will help you contact him right now."

"Then what are we waiting for?" Jiang Chen laughed, "Just take me to him, I want to get this done as soon as possible."

Zhao Chenwu noted a few things for Su Lei and asked her to contact the merchant from Su city.

Then he and Jiang Chen came downstairs and headed to the industrial area at the Sixth Street.

Not long after, the car was parked in front of a warehouse.

A middle-aged man with wrinkles all over his face stood in front of the warehouse. From the half burnt cigarette, he only arrived momentarily as well. When he saw Zhao Chenwu's car, his eyes immediately lit up as he stubbed out the cigarette and stuffed it back into his pocket. Then, he walked to the two people that just got off the car.

"Mr. Zhao, I heard you are interested in my firearms?" With the

wrinkles on his face squeezed together, the man smiled while exposing his yellow teeth.

"It is not me that's interested, it's this important individual." Zhao Chenwu looked at Jiang Chen as he began to introduce, "The Sixth Street Military Government General, Jiang Chen."

"It is General Jiang? My pleasure." The man's face was obviously shocked as he immediately extended his hand to shake Jiang Chen's. At the same time, he introduced himself, "I am Hu Youde, a merchant from Su city. It's a great pleasure to finally meet Mr. Jiang."

Hu Youde? (Homoyom for bullsh*t) that's a great name.

"You know me?" Jiang Chen let go of his hand as he was quite surprised.

"Mr. Jiang is a humorous person. Which merchant in this region doesn't know you?" Hu Youde scratched his slightly dirty nose as he laughed.

"Since you know him, then you should know what kind of people shouldn't be bullsh*ting." Zhao Chenwu told Hu Youde with a half-smiling look.

"Ahem, of course. Even if I have one hundred guts, I won't dare to bullsh*t Mr. Jiang. But with Mr. Jiang's reputation, you won't do anything like not paying right?" Hu Youde's muddy eyes shifted as he tried to test the water.

Now that the Sixth Street was no longer controlled by the Group of Ten, the merchants without force dealing with dictators were worried. If Jiang Chen didn't pay, he would have nowhere to seek justice.

Jiang Chen began to laugh.

"Don't worry. I won't do anything like not paying, just take me to the firearms."

When he received the promise from Jiang Chen, Hu Youde immediately started to smile as he bowed, exaggeratedly.

"Then I have to thank General Jiang, I will take you right now.'

Hu Youde turned around as he walked to the warehouse first.

"Do you need me to go along?" Zhao Chenwu asked.

"No need, I will go by myself."

"Okay, I will head back then... Also, this guy is mischievous, don't be tricked by him. Do everything you can to lower the price. The batch of firearms has already been here for half a month, he would have to sell even if he had to sell at a loss."

Jiang Chen was puzzled by Zhao Chenwu's words.

"Is it hard to sell firearms here?"

Zhao Chenwu shook his head.

"The market is already saturated with a small population. Now with countless factories and workshops emerging, this market saturation would become the norm. Needless to say the merchants from Su city, even the local factories, are starting to be troubled by their sales channel... Three months ago, this was hard to imagine."

During that time, people with crystals were all wealthy. The increase in quality of life reignited the survivors desire to hunt. Therefore, the mercenary groups and lone travelers eager to switch equipment even lined up at the door of the military factories. The firearms dealer without the worry to sell obviously did everything to increase productivity.

But people only have two hands, weapons were not easy to break either. After the period of "equipment switching" was over, the excessively produced firearms obviously were stored in the warehouses unable to be sold.

Excess production was a severe problem.

Without proper measures, after a short period of prosperity, the

newly opened factories and workshops may be on the brink of bankruptcy again. Not only in the firearms industry, with the gradual increase in general productivity, other industries will also experience a similar problem.

Jiang Chen looked at the ragged back as he became thinking about this issue.

Chapter 320: The Mine Pit and Slaves

The metal gate opened as the smell of desiccant dirt blew in his face.

Hu Youde searched for the button on the wall as he turned on the lights to the warehouse.

The dark space instantly lit up. The thick wooden boxes almost stuffed the entire area to its max capacity.

Inside the open boxes were baseball shaped heat sensor grenades, and bowl sized rockets. On the wall directly facing the door were rows of ghost sniper rifles, and by crude estimation, at least another hundred in the boxes on the side with changeable scopes. As to the barrels along the other side of the wall, without a doubt, must be launchers to the rockets.

"Ghost sniper rifle, heat sensor grenade, "Python" anti-tank rocket, reaper rifle, along with some other reliable gadgets. I trust you will definitely be interested." While Hu Youde laughed, he signaled a satisfied gesture to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen walked up and picked up a "Python" and tried to scope.

"Is this thing good."

"One round would bust a power armor," Hu Youde immediately added, "The land type too."

"Is the quality reliable?"

"I can guarantee it with my head." Hu Youde promised while pounding his chest.

Jiang Chen nodded, pleased. As he put down the rocket launcher in his hand, he strolled around the warehouse to try out a few things to ensure the quality of the other weapons.

"If you don't mind me asking, is Mr. Jiang planning something

big?"

"Oh? Why do you think so?" Jiang Chen played with the ghost sniper rifle in his hands as he said nonchalantly.

The small cunning eyes spun as Hu Youde cracked a smile. "Everyone knows that it is almost impossible to sell firearms at the Sixth Street now. Mr. Jiang is in the food business so obviously not interested in the small profit. This batch of firearms, it is going to be used to equip an army?"

Jiang Chen glanced at him as the tense Hu Youde immediately rushed to explain, "Ahem, don't be mistaken, I have no intention in collecting information."

"Then your intention is?" Jiang Chen asked him dubiously.

"I just want to know if Mr. Jiang is interested in people," Hu Youde said with a flattering look.

"People?"

"To put it simply, slaves. Ones who are already trained with the electronic collar around their necks so you only need to push them forward during the war."

Jiang Chen was flabbergasted. "You are not only in the firearm business, but you also do slave trade?"

When Hu Youde heard that Jiang Chen seemed to be interested, he immediately became more energetic as he started to explain to Jiang Chen, "Slave is a specialty to Su City. The mine pit at Su City has over seventy thousand slaves registered for sale. Although I don't have stock on hand, if Mr. Jiang is interested, I will immediately go back and haul you a batch."

Jiang Chen was astonished. "Seventy thousand? What kind of damn place is the mine pit."

Seventy thousand? Including the shadow population and nearby survivors, the Sixth Street only has fifty thousand people. Slaves

registered for sale alone were over seventy thousand, that was insane!

Although Hu Youde was a bit confused when he heard Jiang Chen didn't know what the mine pit was, he thought that it might be because Jiang Chen had never left Wanghai and without second guessing it, he began to explain the origin of the mine pit.

The reason why it was called the mine pit was not necessarily because it was actually a mine pit, but because there was a crystal mine pit worth one hundred thousand crystals or above there! Jiang Chen had heard about crystal mines from Sun Jiao a long time, but he had never seen one. Based on Hu Youde's description, it was a biological mine bed attached to the rock surface and it was in diced meat shape with similar behavior to moss. Although it looked disgusting, crystals could be produced from those diced meat.

The slaves at the mine pit had to wear protective suits to walk into the mine and pick up the sand-sized crystals from the disgusting and corrosive diced meat.

Because the owner possessed a huge "gold mine," he hired a bunch of raiders specializing in slave capture as he formed a force of four thousand to become a strong survivor force in Su city. Because they had a special relationship with the raiders nearby, other than outputting crystals, the mine pit also conducted slavery trade.

The dead parts of the diced meat could be cut and used as a prime ingredient for nutrient supply. Therefore the cost to feed slaves was not high. Hence the slave's population naturally increased.

Jiang Chen thought for a moment. "How many can you haul?"

"That depends on the type Mr. Jiang wants." Hu Youde smiled. "Right now it is the tail of the winter, it is not too dangerous on the road. The cheapest kind of slave, I can haul you more than one thousand, but that kind can only be used to boost the number

without much use. The type with good body conditions, I can also haul you around one hundred. Then it would be the more expensive kind, because of the limited supplies, I'll have to go back before I can give you an accurate response."

"The expensive kind? What expensive kind?" Jiang Chen asked curiously.

"For example, powerful lone travelers, special talents. Of course, the most expensive is the ice coffin." Hu Youde mysteriously smiled.

The smile looked perverted.

"What on earth is an ice coffin?"

"It is a great thing. Mr. Jiang has heard of hibernation chambers before right?"

"I have." Jiang Chen nodded.

The ultra-low temperature technology allowed humans to pass through an extended period of time with the body's functionality reduced to a minimum. For the people who are using it, fifty years would be the difference of a blink of an eye. Some fallout shelters were even made entirely of hibernation chambers, for example, Yao Yao came out of this type of fallout shelter.

"Imagine this, to have been a top celebrity, or princess before the war, you'll get to enjoy them crying, screaming, and shouting for security and begging for mercy while you tell them the world is hopeless, and then watch their whimpering face turn into despair-"

"That's enough," Jiang Chen interrupted his psychotic words.

It was a waste of talent for him to not write erotics with such vivid description.

Seeing Jiang Chen didn't look pleased, Hu Youde immediately shut his mouth.

After a brief pause, Jiang Chen spoke again, "The type of slave

with a healthy body, how much would they cost."

"Twenty crystals for one."

"Okay, I need one thousand, can you do that?"

When Jiang Chen stated he needed that much, Hu Youde was overjoyed as he immediately agreed.

"Of course, of course, I can do it, just leave this to me!"

The slave trade was a lucrative industry. By simply making 10 crystals per slave, it was much more profitable than the firearms business. He didn't even negotiate the price of the firearms as he sold it to Jiang Chen at the eighty thousand crystals cost.

After finally getting rid of the firearms burden, he couldn't wait as he headed back to Su city immediately. He wanted to transport the slaves before the hibernation of the mutants ended as it would save a lot of costs. March was prime time for trade and it only comes once a year!

But before he left, he mysteriously stuffed a small wooden box in Jiang Chen's hands, saying it was a gift to the general from the merchant.

When Jiang Chen asked what it was, he grinned and lowered his voice, "Do you know the secret behind how the mine pit trains female slaves?"

Chapter 321: Slavery Chip Enhanced

It was already the third day. The woman named Xu Lu didn't do anything to her.

If she had to compare between the past three days and a few days ago, it would just be that the three meals a day were changed to two nutrient supplies per day. If she wanted to go to the washroom, no one would let her out. Instead, a cup would be stuffed under the door.

As long as she withstood the initial embarrassment, it was not inconvenient at all.

To the fallout residents who lived a prosperous life, nutrient supply may be unbearable pig food. But to Han Junhua who was a soldier, nutrient supply was a convenient military food. Needless to say, she drank that in the fallout shelter every day. She didn't even have a few hot meals since the war started. Jiang Chen thought a few nutrient supplies would make her surrender? That was too naïve.

As to being lonely...

She was used to being lonely for a long time.

Han Junhua stared at the black wall as he continued to zone out like her usual routine. She had spent her time this way for the past few days as time passed by under such circumstances. She just didn't why that face would occasionally surface in her head.

Under normal circumstances, it was irregular to have this type of feeling towards the enemy, but she still couldn't resist being curious.

She was curious about the man who used the weakness of human nature to conquer fallout shelter 027. What kind of method would he use to force her to conform?

Of course, she thought regardless, it would be impossible.

Then, the door opened. A ray of light shone into the dark room.

She narrowed her eyes and looked at the light source. She saw Xu Lu.

"What day is today" She took a tube from Xu Lu's hand as Han Junhua casually asked.

"Why do you ask?" Xu Lu didn't answer, but instead, she asked back smiling.

"For you would personally send this to me."

Xu Lu only smiled at her.

"Do you want to watch me drink this?"

There was no response. Han Junhua didn't speak anymore.

She twisted open the cap as she chugged down the thick liquid expressionlessly.

Frp, the corner of her eyes, the smile on Xu Lu's face was more and more visible. For some reason, her smile made Han Junhua feel slightly uncomfortable.

Although she couldn't tell what the reason was, it made her uncomfortable.

Suddenly, her head became clouded as her vision began to blur.

Anesthetic?

As she quietly thought, her consciousness fell into the abyss.

Chapter 322: Camp Explosion

After putting on his pants, Jiang Chen looked at the Han Junhua who had fallen on the ground as an evil smile appeared.

Although he didn't take her first time from the front, from the back, however...

All in all, Han Junhua mindlessly sat on the ground. She looked as if her spirit had escaped her.

"The training has just begun, you have to last through the whole thing."

When she heard Jiang Chen's words, Han Junhua's body visibly twitched, her cold face reflexively displayed a trace of despair.

The metal door was slammed shut.

Until the light gradually turned dim before disappearing, what was left to the female PAC colonel was the endless darkness and the joy of climaxing.

When she saw Jiang Chen walk out, Xu Lu waiting at the door to greet him.

"Is it over?"

"Mhmm... Umm, I may have gone over the line." Until after the fact did Jiang Chen start to realize how wicked he was.

Xu Lu was a girl after all. When she heard Jiang Chen say that, her face uncontrollably turned red before quickly recovering.

"Maintain the status quo?"

"Maintain the status quo; I will drop by from time to time to... persuade her."

Xu Lu nodded with a smile.

"Okay-"

But at the same time, a "boom" explosion sounded outside of the

command center!

The window glass began to buzz due to the vibration as it scared Xu Lu enough to duck onto the ground with her hands over her head.

Fires erupted as Camp 27 was in disarray. The survivors all ran towards the elevator while the soldiers ran to the tent area where the explosion had occurred.

When he heard the explosion, Jiang Chen immediately ran out of the command center; he happened to meet Wang Zhaowu, who was responsible for camp defense.

"General, I-" After bumping into Jiang Chen, cold sweat began to roll down.

He was responsible for the defense of the camp. Now that something like this has happened under Jiang Chen's eyes, he was drenched in cold sweat.

"Don't say anything. Go to the explosion scene and figure out what has happened!"

Jiang Chen knew it was not the time to determine who was responsible. The most critical thing was to investigate the reason behind the explosion!

"Yes!" Wang Zhaowu clenched his teeth as he shouted at the top of his lungs before he ran off to the explosion area.

The ground was burnt black as the high temperature melted through the concrete brick on the square.

The fortunate thing was that the explosion occurred at the corner of the camp. Although the erupted flame was daunting, it didn't cause massive casualties.

After the soldiers created a zone of separation around the explosion, two soldiers in protective suits ran inside as they quickly searched the explosion area. After confirming that there

were no radiation or remaining explosives, they signaled other people to come up.

"General, just leave this to us. This place has just blown up and is unsafe." Seeing that Jiang Chen was about to walk up, Wang Zhaowu stopped him.

"Our soldiers already searched the area; there should be no explosives left on site. It is better to have an extra pair of eyes, so we don't miss any details. "As Jiang Chen said this, he brushed away Wang Zhaowu's hand, and he walked to the tent area that was now in shambles.

Seeing that Jiang Chen could not be convinced, Wang Zhaowu didn't know what to do as he decided to follow along.

The tent in the middle of the explosion had already been blown up to dust. Jiang Chen kicked away the fried clothes as he saw a broken face.

It was Academician Qin.

When he was beside Jiang Chen, Wang Zhaowu looked at Academician Qin on the ground and said "Poor elder."

Jiang Chen stared at the aged face as he gave it a moment of thought before he squatted down.

Wang Zhaowu looked at Jiang Chen dig through the rocks as he took out a fist-sized mechanical heart from Academician Qin's chest. His eyes were wide open, "Digitalized human?!"

"That's right, digitalized human."

Jiang Chen didn't say anything as he stuffed the mechanical heart into Wang Zhaowu's hand.

"Investigate the cause of the explosion; I will be waiting in the office."

Then, Jiang Chen silently left the scene.

Instincts told him that it was murder, and the target was

Academician Qin Xuehai.

But why?

...

"Kill confirmed." Lin Chaoen muttered as he put away the controller in his hand and walked away from Camp 27.

Any experimenter of the fallout shelter must die. It is father's direction to wipe these experimenters out.

If they were close, he would personally do it. If they were far, then he would hire raiders or mercenaries.

The results were the same; the experimenters must be eliminated!

As to why he didn't know.

As an intermediate artificial intelligence, he possessed the ability to think, but he didn't understand the behavior.

It was not logically thought through, but more like a belief?

It was comical to make a machine think from the perspective of a human. Just like it was comical to make a human think from a rock's perspective.

After passing through a street, he suddenly stopped.

Bell-shaped eyes were locked upon him, and the shadow of ten claws swayed. Its shaking tail seemed to be telling him that it was ready to make a move.

There was no Death Claw nest in this area. If a Death Claw appeared, there was only one reason.

It was targeting him.

"Death Claw? To finish me, at least send a Mother of Death Claw." Lin Chaoen expressionlessly took out his light sword as he swung it a few times in the air.

What he didn't know was, Jiang Chen already killed the Mother

of Death Claw.

"Roar-!"

The deafening roar created a shockwave, the Death Claw charged at him.

At the same time, Lin Chaoen moved.

A trial of data flashed across his pupils as every movement of the Death Claw's muscles were captured by the digitalized eyes before being sent to the central processor. It completed the reaction analysis in 0.0001 seconds.

He kneeled down with the sword retracted. The fierce wind from the sharp claw cut by his head.

The light sword brightened and was followed by the scream of the monster in pain. Lin Chaoen's sword blinded the Death Claw's eyes before he lowered his body, appearing behind its body.

With its eyes damaged, the Death Claw stumbled and crashed into the shops on the side of the street.

It listlessly swung its claws and tail. Concrete pieces scattered everywhere.

Lin Chaoen put away the light sword. He took out the particle vibration dagger and strolled to the blinded Death Claw.

He kicked the right leg of the Death Claw and stepped to the other side of the Death Claw.

The Death Claw immediately turned around as it swung to where Lin Chaoen had stood, smashing the concrete ground into pieces, but its entire back was exposed.

With dagger over his head, he effortlessly penetrated its weak spine.

"Roar-" As it made its last sobbing sound, the Death Claw straightened its back as if it was electrocuted.

Lin Chaoen didn't stop as he swung the dagger down again, cutting its spine in half like he was cutting tofu.

Blood and organs spilled everywhere, the Death Claw crashed onto the ground.

Drawing out the dagger, the blood on the blade began to fade. The high vibration frequency had vibrated the dark blood into a fine mist. A path of light bloomed under the sea with the Dindal effect.

An evolutionary road paved with blood.

"No improvement at all?" He put away the dagger and walked across the Death Claw's body as one foot stepped out of the half-destroyed shop.

But then, his footstep stopped.

Zombies had already surrounded the shop. Pairs of hollow eye sockets locked onto him. In stumbling footsteps, the zombies moved in his direction.

"Win by numbers? So problematic."

Lin Chaoen spoke to himself as the light sword reappeared again.

Typically speaking, zombies would not attack the mechanical him, but these zombies were apparently not typical. The zombies howled and leaped at him.

The light sword drew a few circles before disappearing into the sea of zombies...

Chapter 323: A Murder?

The explosion in the tent area had caused the camp to panic. A lot of people were yelling that they wanted to return to the fallout shelter and there were even signs that it would evolve into conflict with the patrolling soldiers.

But Wang Zhaowu was rather decisive as he led the camp soldiers to defend the elevator entrance. He fired machineguns into the air to suppressive the signs of unrest and controlled the situation with his forceful action.

As the director of the camp, Xu Lu didn't sit around. She used her charisma and positive image among the fallout shelter residents to gradually stabilize the residents' emotion.

At the same time, the investigation for the cause of the explosion was rapidly in progress.

Not long after, a report was placed on Jiang Chen's table.

21 wounded, five died, 17 tents destroyed.

The center of the explosion was close to Academician Qin; only two to three meters away. Further away, the soldiers managed to find the wreckage of a drone. Based on the pieces of evidence, it could be concluded that someone controlled a drone with a bomb towards Academician Qin's tent before remotely detonating it.

It was a blatant murder, and the murder came from outside the tent.

But why?

Jiang Chen's eyes were closed shut as he went into deep thought.

He couldn't understand what would make an elder, who was already half a step inside his coffin, so hateful. Especially an elder that just came out of the fallout shelter.

Suddenly, he seemed to have caught onto something as he took

out the black metallic sphere Academician Qin gave to him.

"Is it because of this?"

With a bomb, the person obviously didn't want this thing. Someone wanted to destroy the communication coordinate with Zhenghe Ship? Of course, that was only a possibility. Another possibility was based on the consideration of Academician Qin's identity. Someone wanted to eliminate the experimenter at Fallout Shelter 027...

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

Someone knocked gently on the office door.

After throwing the "golden apple" into the storage dimension, Jiang Chen said, "Come in."

Xu Lu pushed open the door and walked inside.

"The residents' emotions have all been stabilized. New tents and supplies were provided to the residents that suffered losses. To the residents that suffered more severe wounds, they are transported to the fallout shelter for medical aid."

"Great, you did well." Jiang Chen nodded, validating her work.

Xu Lu humbly smiled as she waited for further instruction from Jiang Chen.

"Where is Wang Zhaowu?"

"He is personally patrolling with the team. Do you need me to find him?"

Jiang Chen shook his head, "No need. Tell him there is no need to be so anxious. I won't blame him on this since no one would have thought of using a drone to detonate a bomb. However, I hope the same thing won't happen a second time."

"Okay." Xu Lu nodded and left the office, gently closing the door behind her.

Jiang Chen leaned on his chair again as he tilted his head to face the ceiling. Slowly closing his eyes, he tried to sort through the listless evidence inside his head.

To be honest, if it were just a few irrelevant fallout shelter residents who had died, he wouldn't be bothered by it at all. What made Jiang Chen unsettled was the feeling of being in a bigger conspiracy.

Someone killed people in his territory and used an unexpected method. However, he had no clue about the motive behind the killing.

There were two possibilities. One was to destroy the golden apple, and another was to kill Academician Qin...

Wait!

Jiang Chen suddenly opened his eyes as he realized he entered into a logical error.

Regardless who the killer was, he must be sure of one thing, and that is the fallout shelter is already open, and Academician Qin has moved to the surface. It was not hard to know about this point as camp 27 was only recently constructed, and the camp was not well fortified like the Fishbone base. A drone hovered in the air would thoroughly detect everything in the base.

Who would have plotted against fallout shelter 027 from the start, and, as if he had the foresight, know that it has opened recently? The answer was obvious.

Lin Chaoen, and the people from the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce.

Based on the mission details obtained in the EP, Jiang Chen could deduce that Dark Red Chamber of Commerce could only be considered an accomplice. They were helping Lin Chaoen with the formula of "happy times."

Therefore, it must be Lin Chaoen that plotted this explosion!

But what are his motives?

A word popped into his head.

Evolution!

Jiang Chen still remembered the words that Academician Qin had told him about the three directions of evolution for civilization, as well as the inevitability of ideology output from the new civilization to the old one. Jiang Chen didn't think it was a big deal, but now something like this has happened.

Could it be that these two things are connected?

"Robots, digitalized human... representing Supreme?" Jiang Chen mustered.

Then, the signal light at the corner of the table began to flash.

Seeing that there was a phone call, Jiang Chen pressed on the corner. Before him, a holographic projection appeared and projected Cheng Weiguo's portrait.

"Boss, we have already investigated the location you have requested." When he saw Jiang Chen, Cheng Weiguo reported in an undertone.

"Oh? Did you find something."

"We found a survivor gathering spot... but we are not certain. This is the aerial view." As he said this, Cheng Weiguo transmitted a video in front of Jiang Chen.

It was a recording from one thousand meters above.

The target location was an office building. Because it was close to the city center, the building received higher impact from the high temperature of the shockwave. Just from the burnt surface, there was nothing to be made out. But from the sentry guns at the top of the building, it was not a no man land.

Immediately, the helicopter descended. The pilot wanted to move closer to observe if there were survivor activities but was

quickly fired at by the anti-air machine guns hidden underneath. The picture shook violently and was immediately followed by the helicopter backing away.

Because he didn't receive any attack instructions, the gunner didn't fire back with the Type-50 electromagnetic pulse cannon.

"Is there someone there?" Jiang Chen asked with a frown.

"It is unclear." Cheng Weiguo's expression was helpless, "Any survivor gathering spot with some capability would be equipped with life signal detection absorber. From the outside, it was impossible to tell if there were people inside. But with the number of sentry guns, someone should be there."

"Send a few drones to keep an eye on it, if there is anything immediately report to me. Also, send a few more men to camp 27... If there is nothing else, that's it."

"Yes!" Cheng Weiguo saluted and ended the communication.

Jiang Chen turned off the screen as he let out a sigh against the chair.

"Fu*k, why are there so many things to take care of."

He cursed as he got up and left the office.

...

The next morning, Jiang Chen spoke with Wang Zhaowu and urged him to prioritize drone defense. Establishing a radar within the camp and an EMP trap were necessary.

After these things were finished, Jiang Chen returned to the Fishbone base.

It was almost mid-March. If there were no surprises, the events in the modern world should be progressing smoothly.

He has already left for a month. It would be better to solve the Pannu Islands' problem as early as possible. Now that the modern world's development was at a bottleneck, he could only bring out

those insane technologies after he manages to secure a reliable location.

After telling Sun Jiao that he was leaving for a few days, Jiang Chen took a batch of firearms from the Sixth Street and traveled back to the modern world.

Chapter 324: The Gunshots in Coro

To the Pannu Islands near the equator, the difference between winter and summer was negligible.

The sea breeze from the South Pacific Ocean carried the salty taste unique to the ocean; it swayed the green palm trees as well as the desolate smokes.

War.

No one had expected that the shadow of war would cover this isolated and small country.

As to who shot first, no one remembered.

The Liberal Party, with the support of "unknown force's" funding as well as the firearms purchased from American arms dealer, quickly equipped an anti-government force of five hundred.

Their original plan was to start the uprising at the end of March. With the force separated into two, one force attacking Johnny's mansion while the other capture the presidential palace. They wanted to end president Edward's corrupt reign and support the new regime.

But the truth stated that they were still too naïve.

The uprising experienced hardships from the beginning. While the Liberal party, with an ample amount of funding and the extreme disappointment of the people towards Pannu's current regime, could quickly gather a force willing to fight. But because of the abundance of people as well as the dismay in management, Pannu's current government seemed to have received information beforehand. The moment the uprising started, the military reacted.

The riot first started in Pannu Islands' capital Coro. The anti-government soldiers, wearing masks printed with the new state and the city's camouflage were equipped with M4A1s. They were

quickly tossed into an intense fire with state forces who held the same equipment.

Then they were forced to retreat multiple times.

The result completely surprised the Liberal Party.

They originally thought that the moment the first shot was fired, the government military would join forces with them under the banner of justice.

But their plan failed.

The government military immediately started firing, and the soldiers wearing the new flag was quickly gunned down on the street. Then the armored vehicles headed onto the road as the 50 caliber heavy machine guns began to unleash its power on the rioters, concrete debris as well as broken limbs scattered everywhere.

Although the government force was made up of only 100 people, they were all professional soldiers. Even if they used the same American equipment, the combat ability of both sides was not on the same level. Especially since the government forces had armored vehicles and a tank on top of everything!

It was slaughter.

The new flag symbol didn't bring courage to the coup but instead became the identification symbol for the government force to identify the enemy. The strategy of a direct fire was wrong. Although the Liberal Party's cause was deeply instilled in every Pannu citizen's heart, they still vastly overestimated their own influence and power. In modern warfare, numbers are not the decisive factor in winning a battle.

Blood flowed from the front of the presidential palace to the north bank of Coro Island. The rioters attacking the palace had to continuously retreat. Those who were intelligent ripped off their masks and fled, pretending to be citizens. However, the slow

reacting rioters were pushed out of the rural area and forced to jump off the cliff at the north end of Coro island.

The vibrant blood made the passionate young men calm down. Although ideology was necessary, so was life. To the enemy they could not beat, they had no desire to fight for their life.

On the other side of the battle, the same group of people attacking Johnny's mansion also suffered heavy defeat...

Sparks jumped everywhere as the bullet shells dropped onto the ground.

A white man in a bulletproof vest leaned against the wall as he maintained a professional stature. The SCAR assault rifle accurately eliminated the rioters across the street.

"Headshot, the fifth one." The corner of Ouburn's mouth, holding the cigarette, curled. He adjusted his gun before pressing the trigger one more time, "Now it is the sixth one... You have lost."

"Sh*t." The black young man leaning in front of the other window cursed as he felt the pain of losing the 200 USD bet.

The rioters with M series assault rifles were no different than monkeys with sticks. Without receiving professional military training, they couldn't even use their cover to create crossfire coverage.

"How is the situation outside?" Johnny walked behind them as he carefully peeked out of the window.

He had thought that he was courageous. One time for a pound of weed, he even whipped out a pistol to exchange fire with people from another gang. But that courage didn't seem to be too useful on the battlefield. He looked at the concrete debris scattering everywhere as it was the first time he felt so fearful.

Ouborn spat out the cigarette butt in his mouth and laughed. "Boss, don't worry. Even if 100 more came, they will only be targets."

As he said this, the heavy machinegun on the roof unleashed fire and pinned ten something rioters, who were attempting to climb into the mansion, dead on the ground.

"Just like this," Ouborn gave a thumbs up to the window on the other side as he said casually to Johnny.

They were mercenaries from Australia and part of the Australian special force before leaving the army. Now, they receive a high salary of 5000 USD a month to protect this American rich man.

Johnny felt relieved. He sat on the sofa before standing up again.

On the table was wine produced from Australia. Although the cap was removed, the anxious him didn't take a single sip out of it.

"Boss, perhaps you need to relax." The black man with rifle comforted him as his smiled exposed his white teeth.

It was too easy to take care of these rioters.

"Sh*t, of course, I know." He sat back on the sofa again as Johnny grabbed the wine bottle before pouring a cup for himself.

But because his arms were trembling, the red liquid spilled onto his hand...

"What a waste." The black man longingly moved his sight away from the wine as he shifted his attention back to the scope of the assault rifle.

"Pay attention. Make sure you secure your position."

"Okay, boss."

The mercenaries didn't know why their boss was so frightened. The rioters had no deterrence at all. Although they conducted a massive scale attack, that soon was stopped by the heavy machine gun on the roof.

Just a little longer, the military force will arrive. Johnny was the star businessman on Pannu Islands, as Edward has easily taken more than ten million USD from Johnny's hands.

But only Johnny knew himself that the money didn't belong to himself, and instead, a man called Robert gave it to him.

He previously didn't feel uncomfortable at all as he freely used the bundles of cash to do business, bribe, and cause havoc under Robert's directions. But with Johnny International starting to expand, he almost possessed a monopoly over the entire Pannu Islands' economy.

Until this point, he started to listen less and less to Robert's direction, at least he thought so. They didn't have a debt relationship. Without Robert's help, Johnny International could operate smoothly now.

And once the area Linhua Group was developing is complete, the tourism on Pannu Islands would exponentially grow, and his Johnny International would reap the benefits.

That was true until a phone call two days ago woke him up from his sweet dream.

"Two days later, the Liberal Party will face an upheaval." That day, Robert told him on the phone.

"That's impossible, they are only an underground party without power or money," Johnny remembered as he rebuked immediately without hesitation.

"Is that so? I am only reminding you. It's up to you if you want to listen or not."

After this sentence, Robert hung up the phone.

Johnny didn't think it was a big deal, but he felt uneasy as he spoke with Edward about it. He said that he had heard from an employee about the Liberal Party planning an uprising...

But the uprising actually happened.

The rioters were weak, weak to the point where his bodyguards didn't suffer any injuries to block all of them out of his mansion.

As to the bullet holes in the walls, it would only take a few thousand dollars to repair, his only loss...

But what frightened Johnny was not this, but everything had been under Robert's control.

How did he know the riot would occur? Isn't that guy in Los Santos? Dammit.

Confusion and fear tangled in his heart, he couldn't bother with the wine on his pants as he took a big gulp from the cup.

The red colored alcohol rolled down the corner of his mouth, along his neck, and passed beneath his collar.

"Ha!"

He swung his hand as he smashed the glass into the wall.

"Sh*t! Sh*t!" Johnny swore out loud as he stood up from the leather sofa. He walked to the stairs and headed down.

"What's happening with boss?" The black guy glanced at the stairs and cursed.

"War anxiety? I think all the new recruits suffer from this during their first," a bodyguard who hadn't spoken said in a low voice.

Ouborn didn't say anything as he vision remain locked 500 meters away, the scope's crosshairs behind a rioter running away.

He had already dropped his weapon, but Ouborn didn't plan to spare him.

"Thirteenth," Ouborn pressed the trigger as he muttered out grimly.

Johnny arrived at the basement downstairs.

Four women were locked here barely covered in clothes. Their skin colors differed with varying identities. Three were locals while a blonde was a news reporter for New Zealand who has been locked here for less than a week.

They wore eye masks, face masks and locked in cages. When they heard the door opening, their feeble figures began to move, followed by a pleading whimper and the sound of shaking chain.

Breathing heavily, Johnny loosened the belt on his pants as he only wanted to unleash his anxiety through hormones.

"Sh*t, bit*hes..."

The phone suddenly rang as it made the aroused Johnny jump.

He took out his phone, wanting to smash into the wall. However, he saw the caller.

<Robert>

His fingers began to tremble as he instinctively wanted to hang up the phone.

But after debating for a moment, he gulped as he picked up.

"Hello?"

"You picked up? I thought you would hang up on me," Robert mocked.

"Sh*t, tell me what the fu*k you want." Johnny no longer respected him like when he first came to Pannu Islands as he shouted back angrily.

"You drank?"

"..."

"No wonder you are an Irish that lives inside booze." Robert grinned. He cleared his throat and then continued, "Let's talk about something serious. If you want to live, follow what I say right now. There is a boat on the North shore of Coro Island, take it. It will take you east to Australia, and you can spend the rest of your life there in peace and wealth.

There was no response.

Robert paused for a moment as he moved the phone away.

He didn't know when the phone disconnected.

"This dumba*s."

Robert shook his head while laughing. He didn't bother with Johnny anymore as he called Jiang Chen.

Chapter 325: Insurgents' Ending

"He rejected," Robert said.

"Mhmm." Lying on top of a chair while enjoying the peaceful horizon, Jiang Chen sluggishly held his phone.

Although unfortunate, it was something he expected. Since Johnny just experienced life where he was above everything, a single phone call would not be enough to make him ditch everything there and spend the rest of his life in a corner. It was unpractical.

Especially since he felt that he had now gained the confidence to break away from the chains on him, it certainly made sense.

"Sh*t, I don't understand. Just shoot this garbage, why make it so problematic. If he really accepted the route of retiring in Australia, would you really let him live?" Robert complained.

Johnny knew too much, it would be a threat to let him walk.

"There was a high probability of him rejecting the offer. But since he did contribute to my cause, I thought it would be a nice gesture to give him an option. Of course, to making the wrong choice, I feel sincerely sorry."

Although when Jiang Chen said that, he didn't look sorry at all.

"...Ok. Let's not talk about that dumba*s anymore. The Freedom Party people got beat up badly this time." Robert's tone carried a trace of mockery.

"This guy, they bought the firearms from you, who laughs at their customer this way?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"I remember teaching the dumba*s that bought the firearms from me how to use the AT4 RPG, but I heard they didn't even bust a single armored vehicle." Robert cursed out, but he sounded like he was laughing.

Because the harder they fall, the more advantageous it was for Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen smiled as he didn't respond to his words.

Without busting a single armored vehicle was something unexpected for them. Based on what Jiang Chen and Robert had imagined, even if the uprising failed, they should at least be able to break two or three armored vehicles, perhaps they could even cause some trouble to that tank. The fewer heavy armors on the island, the more advantageous it would be for the next step.

The tropical climate made it really easy for people to feel sluggish. Although the phone was still by Jiang Chen's ear, he began to feel sleepy.

"Hello? Are you still listening?" When he heard there was no response for a while, Robert asked.

"Ahh, yes... Mhmm, just leave the rest to me."

"Eight armored vehicles, one tank, and two helicopters, you sure that's okay?" Robert was skeptical.

Although he participated in the creation of Future Security, because he was not part of the training, he was unsure about their capability. Even though they had trained for half a year already, their opponent was the actual military.

"Of course." Jiang Chen yawned.

"Okay, looks like I am worrying too much. I will not disturb your nap." Robert joked and then hung up.

Not a problem? Rather, it was simple.

Jiang Chen put the phone on the table as he sluggishly stretched out his body.

His thoughts drifted to the distant horizon, and he gave up the control of his muscles to gravity. It felt like his entire body was loose.

He had enough of the oppressive feeling at the wasteland, enough of the yellowish green radiation particles. The pristine blue and pure white made him unusually relaxed.

"It would be great if someone could live here forever." Jiang Chen muttered to himself and closed his eyes.

After spending too long in the apocalypse, he was tainted with a trace of hostility. However, following the sound of the crashing waves in the Southern Kingdom, his hostility was being washed away.

A trace of fragrance entered his nose.

Soft skin gently touched his head.

With a smile on his face, Jiang Chen opened his eyes. Like what he had expected, it was the exotic face.

It was Ayesha.

When Jiang Chen came back to the modern world, he asked her to come back.

The sea wind swayed the lightly curly hair. The white veil outlined the lithe but athletic figure. The vest line on her abs stretched to the tip of her bikini; her pale skin was that bright under the tropical sunshine.

"You are here," Jiang Chen said.

"Ivan said you were here, so I came." Within her green pupils, there was love as gentle as water. Ayesha smiled timidly as she hugged Jiang Chen's head from behind.

As he saw the softness on her face, Jiang Chen smiled, satisfied.

"Are you used to the climate here?"

Ayesha nodded, but the words that floated out of her mouth were something completely different.

"I miss you."

Regardless how many time he listened to it, it made his heart beat a little faster.

"Mhmm, me too."

He gently squeezed the hand caressing his face as he kissed the back of her soft hand.

With fingers trembling, Ayesha became misty-eyed.

She leaned forward and pecked on Jiang Chen's lips.

Jiang Chen only smiled. He quietly held onto her hand and watched the line connecting the ocean and the sky.

In the sea waves of the Southern Kingdom, the two stayed until the sun set.

...

This was the southernmost tip of Pannu Islands. The tragedy at the north end, Coro island, didn't disturb the peace here.

The deep water harbor was deserted as the two docks were empty, only a few seagulls unpleasantly left some droppings. The small deep-water harbor that had cost at least five million USD perhaps was a failed investment to begin with. The occasional vessel that docked here was mostly here to unload to the Celestial Trade company storage.

The situation on the island was highly volatile as the government agencies were a complete mess. The government force searched house by house for the anti-government forces which put the entire island into panic mode. The uprising failed in less than 12 hours, everyone knew it was the end of the Freedom Party as they drew the line between them.

Although the rioters didn't hurt president Edward, an AT4 rocket happened to land in his backyard and torn his nicely decorated garden into pieces. The enraged Edward immediately ordered all rioters to be hung and ordered that all residents must

cooperate with the military force's search. Any non-cooperation would be viewed as the accomplice of the rioters.

"Hello, Mr. Jiang. Did you happen to see... rioters with weapons?" A Pannu soldier in city camouflage stood in front of the warehouse and asked Jiang Chen.

"Other than my security, no locals approached this place today." Jiang Chen smiled at the soldier.

"Is that so?" The soldier extended his neck to peek inside the warehouse, but he didn't go in.

Edward specifically urged them to not offend the foreign investors.

Pannu Islands were in the stage of development, and they needed investments (bribes). If this riot changed these capitalists' investment rating for Pannu, it would be problematic.

Although they have received information that a few Freedom party members escaped to the Southern end of Coro Island, there was no evidence pointed to them fleeing here.

The soldier looked at Jiang Chen for a few more times before he signaled his comrades to leave.

Jiang Chen watched the Jeep drive away as he smiled unnoticeably. He then went back into the warehouse.

"Thank you."

From the shadow of the warehouse, Zhang Yapin's lifeless face appeared as he walked in front of Jiang Chen and bowed deeply.

Chapter 326: Commissioning the War

"Thank you."

"No problem."

Jiang Chen looked at the Zhang Yapin who seemed to have aged overnight. He gave him a comforting smile.

Zhang Yapin's face was full of bitterness. His mouth twitched for a while before he finally squeezed out a sentence.

"We failed... Sorry."

Five hundred people, five times the force!

They never thought they would fail; even if two people died for every government force, they wouldn't have lost. But they overestimated the determination of the people that joined the force. They had the will of iron before the war, but as soon as the war started, they swore at their parents for not giving an extra pair of legs when they fled the battle. Only a few died in the crossfire, but countless died escaping.

Regarding equipment, the anti-government had excellent equipment. Although they didn't have any armored units, they had plenty of anti-armor AT4 rockets. Not to say the countless light machine guns, grenades, and smoke grenades... Unfortunately, they didn't use them before escaping, leaving the equipment to the government force.

Without a doubt, a total loss.

The uprising had failed, the Liberal Party under the suppression of the current regime could not even take care of themselves, Jiang Chen's five million USD investment naturally went down the drain.

To the foreign businessman that helped him when he was in need, Zhang Yapin felt guilty. However, he couldn't do anything

about it.

"Do you know the reason behind why you failed?" Jiang Chen asked lightly.

Zhang Yapin bitterly smiled as he leaned on the wall of the warehouse.

"The lack of organization? The lack of training?"

"Your uprising was too hasty." Jiang Chen then muttered to himself in his mind, [Sorry, Robert leaked the information.]

"Regardless... There is no use to saying any of this."

"Have you given up?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"...The civil war ended in 12 hours, Edward's government had already demonstrated the power of the Pannu military. At least in the next 10 years, no one would dare oppose his ruling."

"Of course I know this, I don't need you to tell me. I only want to ask, have you given up?"

Zhang Yapin stared at Jiang Chen blankly. Finally, Zhang Yapin with a bitter smile shook his head.

"How can I give up... But, I will learn to accept this reality. We originally thought that with 500 people and advanced equipment, we could easily execute Edward, but..."

"There is no could in history, and no if."

"I know, but I... Sorry, but I have failed your investment."

Jiang Chen laughed. "Five million USD is only a small number to me, I am willing to take the bet. Business is a lot like gambling. The truth is I lost the first round. Now I just want to know, are you still worth my next bet."

Zhang Yapin was shocked.

"You mean..."

"I can fund five million more."

"That is wasting money. Not only did president Edward outlaw forming any parties, even if the Liberal party rose again, no one would respond under our banner."

Jiang Chen laughed.

He needed that effect. A weak, and easy to control government in power. Therefore, even if they replaced president Edward, their reputation among the citizens would not be high because the previous regime was not overthrown by them, but only under external influence. It will be a replica of what happened in Iraq, a complete puppet regime.

Zhang Yapin looked at Jiang Chen's pleasant smile in confusion, he didn't know what was funny.

"I remember you studied in New Zealand before."

"That's right." Zhang Yapin nodded. He even considered that if the uprising was to fail, he could flee to New Zealand or Australia.

"Then have you heard the word mercenary before?"

...

The riot ended.

The gunshots in Coro city had completely stopped, replaced by the siren of ambulances. Not only were the rioters injured, so were innocent citizens. The riot happened all of a sudden without any time to react. After the failed uprising, the cowardly rioters escaped into the crowd which caused a lot of ordinary citizens to be wounded, and there were even casualties.

Tonight would not be quiet.

Outside of the presidential palace.

In the palace similar to the Whitehouse, Edward was facing cameras as he clarified the situation to the foreign reporters eager for news.

"Mr. President, what's your opinion on this riot?"

"They are only a bunch rioters, and my military suppressed them! Let me repeat, they are all rioters! Other than that, I have no opinion," Edward shouted at the British reporter.

He didn't remember how many times he had to clarify this. Are the heads of the Western reporters made out of glue? Or are they just deaf?

"Is that so? But they are all citizens of Pannu Islands, without using the police and directly sending the military, did this not violate the constitution of the country?"

"I repeat, no! If I have, I will go change it now."

"Is your country's constitution written on toilet paper?" An American reporter mocked.

The crowd laughed.

Edward was so angry his face turned white, but he couldn't do anything to them.

The firm stance of the Pannu regime was only domestic. The American aircraft carrier was parked at Guam Island one thousand kilometers away. They would be able to initiate military action to rescue their citizens within moments.

The only thing that angered him was that he had ordered for all flights into the country to be suspended two days ago, but these reporters seemed to have appeared out of thin air onto his territory.

After dealing with the reporters, the weary Edward returned to the presidential palace and sat on his chair.

But before he could get a moment of peace, a Han walked in.

Wang Tianfeng, the representative from Linhua Group. He was from a relatively powerful family from Han and was also the son of Linhua Group's president Wang Linuha.

"Is there something wrong?" Edward used a calm tone as he

looked at the man standing in front of his table.

"Regarding the progress on construction," with fluid English, Wang Tianfeng was straightforward, "the riot in your country effected the progress of our construction..."

"If it's in regards to business, you can talk with Johnny." Edward didn't want to listen to this question anymore.

"But I haven't been able to find him recently," Wang Tianfeng said helplessly.

To be honest, he didn't want to come to this god forbidden place. Even if he had to deal with foreigners, he would rather go to Europe or North America. But Linhua Group's business expansion internationally was the decision of his father and the board. As the successor of Linhua Group, he had to familiarize himself with international business.

Based on what his father said, it was an excellent opportunity to build a reputation for their company. On the peaceful Pacific Island, compared to the politically unstable Africa, it was much easier to develop business here...

Yes, two months ago, it was peaceful here. But now, the riot had almost entirely halted construction.

To be honest, rather than staying in the real estate business, he favored the future of IT much more. But Linhua Group's failure to acquire Future Technology. Additionally, this massive project from overseas has made the board change their decision.

As he thought about this, Wang Tianfeng cursed at the person called Jiang Chen.

He was a dog raised by the Wang family. He feels this bloated just by being on the Wall Street Journal twice.

While he thought about this, he selectively ignored the ability Future Technology had demonstrated and put all the achievement of Future Technology domestically as the success of his uncle. But

he was not to be blamed for thinking this way as Linhua Group rose because of political support.

"You can't find him?" Edward raised his eyebrows in shock.

"I went to his mansion, but his security blocked me out. From the looks of it, the security level there is pretty high?"

"What is that guy doing?"

There was a limit to fearing death. The civil war has already ended and he is still hiding in his mansion?

Chapter 327: Pannu Landing

The night began to fall.

Despite the intense change that happened during the day, most of the Pannu people have drifted to sleep already.

Johnny was still in his mansion; curled up in his basement. Sitting on top of the cold wooden chair, he was chugging his collection.

Lafette from 1982, Margaux from 1986... Half a year ago, these were things he wouldn't even dare to dream about. The weed in Los Angeles was expensive, but compared to the "blood of the upper class", it was still night and day.

The basement was humid, but he was trembling.

Not because of the cold, but because of the fear he felt from the bottom of his heart.

He ordered the mercenaries to station themselves around the mansion and not let a single fly in.

He could read through their eyes. He knew the people he has paid to do things thought he was crazy. But he didn't care, he had enough money, he only wanted to live...

To be honest, he didn't know why he was afraid of the guy who was in faraway Los Santos or why he was scared of the person behind Robert. Although this mansion and the saving in his bank account all belonged to him, he didn't have any sense of security.

He felt like a hand was controlling everything.

Like being the reckless billionaire he is, the increasingly cocky dictator president, the officials corrupted by USD...

And the hundreds of bodies outside the mansion.

He chugged the red wine like there was no tomorrow.

The sour-sweet taste in his throat was like the ink of the bill, the color was like virgin blood.

Beside him were four naked bodies, but he didn't have enough energy to play with them anymore. Even his finger became sore eventually.

"Sh*t!" He cursed as he flung away the glass in his hand.

Smash—

The glass shattered.

He stared at the pool of redness on the ground as he decadently burped.

"Dammit."

He said this in Chinese. It sounded weird. He learned it from Wang Tianfeng.

Wang Tianfeng just came to find him, the bodyguard told him.

Robert introduced Linhua Group. Wang Tianfeng was the representative from Linhua Group, and he didn't trust them.

He was shaking. His instincts told him, someone wants to kill him, someone wants him died.

He didn't want to die. He wanted to continue to play the role of a billionaire. He could act recklessly and at his will. Whether it was the wife or the daughter of the neighbor, as long as he was interested and he had the USD, Edward would solve the problem for him.

But the last call from Robert woke him up completely.

Yes, he was just a thug from the ghetto, an Irish without any talent. The only reason he possessed everything was that someone needed him to stir the muddy water.

Leave? Retire in West Australia? Go to hell, how could he agree!

He hung up on Robert and ripped apart the sim card.

With a grim look in his eyes, he stared at the basement door.

"Come, I want to see, how will you take my fu*king life away!"

...

The next evening, at the southern tip of Coro Island.

An old transport vessel quietly sailed into the empty port.

The port was deserted without a soul. Due to what had happened yesterday, most of the residents on Coro island were immersed in fear and sorrow. Most people chose to ask for a day of leave so that they wouldn't need to go outside.

The vessel docked.

Fifty muscular figures walked down from the vessel in an orderly fashion.

The vessel came from West Africa. It sailed across half the globe.

Ivan stood along with Jiang Chen on the high ground near the port. Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes as he overlooked his loyal soldiers on the dock.

"These are fifty of the most talented soldiers. They have fought with Tuareg tribe's guerrillas before during their training in Nigeria. But for real, is there no need to bring any equipment along?" Ivan asked Jiang Chen.

"No need. "Our firearms" have been transported into the warehouse already," Jiang Chen answered concisely.

Ivan looked at Jiang Chen in astonishment.

The firearms had already arrived, and he didn't sense it the slightest. His came to gain a new understanding of the boss' ability once again.

"When should we start the operation?" Ivan asked concisely.

"When you are prepared."

A slightly cruel smile appeared on Ivan's mouth.

"Then now is a good time."

Jiang Chen smiled and threw warehouse No.3's key into Ivan's hand.

"Mhmm, I will leave it up to you."

After he finished, Jiang Chen left.

Ivan watched Jiang Chen leave as he stood firm and saluted.

...

Including the fifty people that arrived earlier, the total number of mercenaries from Future Security had reached 65 people. It was equivalent to half of the force of Future Security.

No armored vehicles, no tank.

But Jiang Chen prepared something much more advanced, kinetic skeletons and drones.

Before he returned to the modern world, Jiang Chen almost cleaned out all the kinetic skeletons stored in the warehouse of the Fishbone base, even the ones that just came off the production line. Wang Qin was quite confused as to why Jiang Chen moved these things into the mansion.

But Jiang Chen obviously wouldn't explain it to her.

When he opened the containers inside warehouse No.3, Ivan ordered the captain of each team to hand a kinetic skeleton to each of the soldiers. At the training base in Nigeria, Jiang Chen left two sets of kinetic skeletons. Therefore, all the soldiers here have practiced with them, so they had no problems equipping them.

Wearing the kinetic skeleton with polyethylene bulletproof boards and wielding the fluid looking Reaper assault rifle, the team of futuristic looking soldiers walked out of the warehouse.

The 64 people were divided into eight teams under the command of Ivan to complete the mission. All instructions would be given by the terminal in Ivan's hand and sent in real time to the tactical

helmet of each captain.

The eight modified vans were the only method of transportation used. Both to store ammunition and as a drone control terminal.

Other than the eight infantry teams, fifty hummingbird drone would also be involved. In a small-scale conflict without EMP, the disc-sized drone was without a natural predator.

It was meant to be an unfair war, just like how the military steam-rolled the anti-government force.

From equipping to dispatching, it only took ten minutes.

Standing in front of the warehouse, Zhang Yapin silently watched the trails of dust left by the eight vans, speechless.

When he watched Ivan, Jiang Chen's "bodyguard", begin to command these mercenaries, he already guessed the identity of these mercenaries.

Jiang Chen walked beside Zhang Yapin with a smile. "I am glad you made the correct choice."

"Is that so? Perhaps it is the worst choice." Zhang Yapin sounded like he was speaking to himself.

"It would have to depend on how you view the problem.

"Oh?"

"Imagine this. Until today, you were all just underground party members that the government searched for. From today on, I will raise you to the throne." Jiang Chen exaggeratedly opened his arms.

"But this 'throne' is only your puppet, am I right?" Zhang Yapin smiled bitterly.

Seeing that he understood the situation well, Jiang Chen laughed joyfully.

He thoughtfully looked into the eyes of the future president.

"That's right. But without me, you are not even a puppet."

Chapter 328: Operation Sword Shattering

Deep into the night in Pannu barracks.

Soldier A: "Stop sleeping, the superior said to take extra caution, we have to keep an eye out."

Soldier B rubbed his eyes and adjusted his hat, "Mhmm, I will be up soon..."

The battle yesterday lasted until midnight. Until now, they haven't had the opportunity to close their eyes.

Soldier A lit up a cigarette as he glanced at the small TV in the corner, "The TV is playing president Edward's speech..."

Soldier B sighed. "War... This goddamn war. Once the curfew is over, what do you plan to do?"

Soldier A: "Take my kids on vacation in Australia. Little Jim has been wanting to go for a long time. He wants to see the Great Barrier Reefs... What about you?"

Within the military, president Edward had high prestige. Some of the personal checks he received were distributed among the soldiers as a bonus. And because of this, while he didn't gain respect among the citizens, he received support from the military.

Soldier B: "I think I need to take care of my family. She said in the letters that she wished I'd come back early."

Soldier A: "I wish this whole fiasco can be over soon..."

Soldier B: "Shhhh... I just heard something..."

That voice was light, like the vibration of a cicada's wings.

The hummingbird with a 2mm caliber machinegun hovered in the air as it silently stopped in front of the window. The thumb-sized wide field camera reflected two alerted but clueless faces.

Tatata

An abrupt sound.

Followed by the glass shattering and splashes of blood, the Grim Reaper silently arrived.

...

The army is the foundation of a stable regime.

To overthrow a regime, destroying its military was enough.

The mission with the codename "Shattering sword" promised to shatter the sword of the unwise ruler with flame and steel.

Three signal flares ignited and broke the quietness of the cold, silent night.

Tatata!

Bullets began to fly into the barrack; the orange tail light laminated the entire camp.

Future Security's mercenaries launched an unexpected attack.

Pannu Island's government was still immersed in their victory from yesterday. Although they remained alert, they were still caught off guard.

"The barrack is being attacked, I repeat, the barrack is being attacked." The general roared into the radio as he leaned against the thick concrete post, ordering the soldiers patrolling in the city to return and defend.

An armored vehicle dashed out from the garage as the machinegun on the top spit out intense fire. It unleashed its power in the darkness outside of the camp.

"Dammit! Who are these people? They are definitely not the rioters!" A soldier leaned behind the armored vehicle as he anxiously clipped on his helmet and fired into the darkness.

Tatata.

A few bullets scathed by his head as he immediately ducked

down.

"It's drones! Dammit... we have to shoot those down!" A government soldier holding a light machinegun fired at the shadows hovering above.

"Too small, can't hit them!"

"Dumba*s, just cover fire!"

The dense bullets hindered the attack from the drones as it forced the drones to retreat temporarily, but just as they thought they were at an advantage, the Future Security ground force began to attack.

"Three o'clock direction."

"Roger."

The eight-person team almost covered every functionality. There were markers, snipers, infantry who took care of the cover fire, and support soldiers who maintained fire suppression. The team currently had no use for medics... even if a stray bullet accidentally hit them, the outdated bullet would not be able to pierce through the polyethylene board on the kinetic skeleton.

With the piercing power of the Reaper assault rifle, the concrete barrack was like tofu, non-existent. The bullets could even leave a row of dents on the steel door of the armored vehicle.

The only trouble that the government force could cause to these mercenaries were the heavy machinegun on the armored vehicle. But against the armored vehicle, the mercenaries were more collected than the rioters.

A few "Python" rockets flew over as it instantly blew away three armored vehicles.

Another armored vehicle realized the dire situation; it released a smoke grenade as it immediately backed away. But a rocket flew in its direction as if it had an eye and penetrated its armor without

any doubt.

Flames erupted, and smoke filled the air as the armored vehicle scattered everywhere and hit a few government soldiers who were taking cover.

The general watched the flames as his eyes began to pop out. He tightly clenched onto the radio as he forgot how to speak.

A soldier ducked behind cover fired back with a heavy machinegun while he shouted.

"Dammit, their firepower is too strong."

At the same time, a deafening explosion covered the sound of the bullets.

An explosion erupted among the field controlled by the attackers.

As the general saw this, he turned ecstatic as he roared at the almost fallen friendly position.

"It's a tank! Our tank! Everyone hold their damn position! The victory will belong to us!"

Tank, and helicopters. To demonstrate the negligible military power of Pannu Islands, president Edward put all these heavy armors onto the street to patrol.

In front of the armored force, any infantry was minuscule!

Only one round of attacks...

He stared in the direction of the support force with a fierce expression.

Contrary to the excitement of the general, against the tank, Future Security's mercenaries were calm and collected.

The HE shell exploded. In fact, it wounded a few mercenaries, but that was it.

The medics quickly dragged away the wounded soldiers.

At the same time, a mercenary with a "Python" on his shoulder,

in cover among the shadows, opened the laser guide and locked it onto the tank.

Before the tank could reload the second shell, he pressed the trigger.

Smoke erupted, The arm thick anti-armor rocket that was launched left behind a trail of orange light as it flew towards the front armor of the tank.

In front of the thick armor, the trail of flames seemed frail.

But the next scene completed shocked the government force.

The undefeatable god in their heart – "Chief" tank was blown open by the seemingly negligible rocket as if its armor was made out of paper.

The flame went up to the sky as it illuminated their faces of despair.

The helicopters with rotating machine guns flew towards them, but it soon crashed elegantly, along with it was the last remaining hope of the government force.

The ten something hummingbird drones swarmed forward at the thin propeller of the helicopter, it was a simple way of attacking, but surprisingly effective.

Their hope was extinguished entirely, the government force without any morale left finally lifted the white flag as they ditched their weapon and walked out of cover.

Now, the regime of president Edward has finally ended.

Chapter 329: Farewell

The night was bitter.

A daunting human shaped-armor walked along the empty street. The moonlight scattered onto the merciless steel as it shined on the white symbols, T-3.

His steps were slow as he scanned around. It was as if he was taking a stroll.

Broken houses.

The closer he approached the "mansion" the more tragic the scene looked. From the bullet marks on the wall and its density, it seemed to be from the cover fire of the machine guns. From the signs of explosions amongst the street, It looked like it was from grenade launchers.

In the shambles, Jiang Chen saw a pair of eyes.

Like a startled animal, the eyes escaped him when he turned around slightly.

His throat moved before looking away.

"I can do the "cleaning". Ayesha's voice came into his ears.

"No... I think I should go personally."

Although he couldn't see Ayesha's face, Jiang Chen could still imagine her gentle gaze.

In the civilian building not far away, the bullets almost penetrated the entire wooden back wall. A hand appeared in front of him, shaking, before quietly shutting the wooden window.

Jiang Chen could feel that they feared him.

"Are you feeling okay?" Ayesha gently asked.

"Of course. I have seen plenty of things more horrifying than bodies," Jiang Chen looked away from the civilian buildings in

ruins as he said casually.

Ayesha knew he was talking about the other world.

"But I feel you are not really okay."

"Why do you say that?" Jiang Chen sighed.

He was getting closer and closer to Johnny's mansion. He pulled out the tactical rifle from his waist.

Although it certainly felt like killing a chicken with a machete, he still wanted to personally say goodbye to Johnny. As to the reason... he couldn't explain.

"Instincts." The cold voice carried a trace of tenderness.

Instincts?

Jiang Chen smiled, he didn't comment on Ayesha's explanation.

Ka—

The crisp sound of the magazine being clipped on.

"Ayesha."

"Mhmm."

"Do you think... I am in the wrong here?"

It was supposed to be quiet here, everything started because of him. If it was not for his out-of-the-blue idea of asking Robert to send Johnny here, and then supporting an opposition to start a civil war, the people living here may never have had to experience war in their lifetime.

It was a question he recently started to realize. The change in dimension may only take half a second, but the change in one's thinking process would take a long time. Sometimes he questioned himself if he had used the logic of the apocalypse in the modern world.

This way indeed matched his interest, but was it correct?

"In my heart, you are always correct."

Jiang Chen paused.

A moment later, an open-minded laugh echoed inside the steel armor.

"Thank you."

After he hung up the communication channel, fury instantly activated as a series of dense red dots appeared in his field of vision.

All the trouble and hindrance of human nature were thrown into the back of his head, Jiang Chen felt his head was never so clear.

The clarity was known as slaughter.

Ding-!

The armor vibrated faintly as a bullet hit the plastic steel, it didn't leave a single trace. Jiang Chen looked forward with a grim smile, it was a black man aiming with his automatic rifle in hand. It should be the mercenaries that Johnny hired.

The black guy saw his shot was ineffective. While he was shocked, his actions didn't stop as he launched a grenade.

With the cool steel in front of him, he instinctively felt fear.

The turbine engine in the back spit out flames as Jiang Chen casually separated himself from the grenade.

The machine gun on the roof was pointed in Jiang Chen's direction. However, after he fired a few shots in that direction, the people along with the gun was shredded into pieces. Then Jiang Chen turned his gun and aimed at the red dots hidden behind the wall and pressed the trigger.

The bullet ripped apart the weak wall and shredded the hearts hidden behind it.

Jiang Chen kicked open the steel door of the mansion as he

immersed himself in the rain of bullets without avoiding anything, Jiang Chen walked forward in big steps and started to fire back with the rifle.

The mercenaries hired by Johnny fell down one by one. Seeing that they could not harm the "monster" in any way, the remaining mercenaries all began to feel fear.

Then, an RPG with a trail of flame flew towards Jiang Chen.

Without thinking, Jiang Chen slapped the RPG with his left hand.

Explosion, flame.

The shattered shell made screeching noises on the plastic steel, but it didn't damage it at the slightest.

"Explosive shell? Try the armor piercing next time, suckers." Jiang Chen grimly smiled as he shot the person with the launcher onto the ground.

The mercenaries were terrified.

The truth had proved that in front of an undefeatable enemy, the professionalism people held was just bullsh*t. The remaining red dots began to retreat. They abandoned the person that hired them and fled in three directions.

Jiang Chen ignored the mercenaries that lost the will to fight as he smashed open the door to the mansion and walked inside with the rifle on his shoulder.

The trip mine at the door flew up.

Jiang Chen in Fury laughed contemptuously as he didn't even bother to dodge. He passed through the exploding smoke and walked towards the basement.

There were five red dots inside, instincts told him Johnny was there.

Fury deactivated.

He took out the laser sword and melted the lock, Jiang Chen kicked open the door.

A pungent alcohol smell blew in his face. With eyebrows furrowed, Jiang Chen started the air filtration system and walked downstairs.

The light was on.

The dark red room was filled with a cage, pole, wooden horse... as well as all kinds of sick-minded devices. Jiang Chen didn't look at the four naked bodies and stared at the man on the wooden chair.

"Wine... You certainly know how to enjoy life."

Pale eyes looked at Jiang Chen as Johnny's throat moved.

"Are you here to kill me?"

"That's right."

"Where did the mercenaries upstairs go?" His voice had a hint of pleading, but he was unwilling to accept reality.

"Either dead, or they ran away."

Johnny's eyes popped as he grabbed the pistol on the table and aimed it at Jiang Chen.

His hand trembled. Especially when he saw that Jiang Chen didn't react to his action, his trembling became more noticeable.

"I beg you, please give me a chance..."

"I did, but you didn't value it."

Johnny first paused, before he started laughing hysterically.

"Hahaha, if I listened to Robert and gave up everything, would you let me arrive in Australia alive? Bullsh*t!" As he laughed, Johnny waved the pistol in his hand and pointed at Jiang Chen who was inside the steel armor.

Just like a child waving a toothpick at an adult.

"No... If I answer it like this, it will make you feel better when you die."

Johnny temporarily held a pleading look on his face before it changed into hysteria.

"Then let's die together!"

Johnny shouted, pressing the trigger in his hand.

It was not a pistol, but a detonator in the shape of a gun used to control the 15 kilograms of explosives underneath the basement.

Sparks flashed, but nothing happened.

His face began to show his despair.

"Wh...Why."

"Even if I explain to you what an EMP is, you probably wouldn't understand... Whatever, farewell."

Jiang Chen pointed the gun at his head and pressed the trigger.

Chapter 330: New World

The past three days were incredibly abnormal for the people living on Pannu Islands.

They previously thought the government force would be overthrown by an anti-government force, but the anti-government force suffered unimaginable losses. Just as they were about to give up hope on the anti-government force, the mercenaries they hired made the government force surrender with a white flag.

The dramatic turn of events made people unable to comprehend what just happened.

But regardless, the revolution was finally successful.

After the barrack was captured, people finally recollected their confidence for victory. The insurgents yet to die in the civil war reunited under the new flag and retrieved the equipment from the armory and captured the presidential palace.

They dragged president Edward that had yet to wake up from his bed and shoved him into prison. An insurgent climbed onto the top of the presidential palace and axed down the original flag and replaced with the new flag; nine star and two palm leaves.

The nine stars represented the nine islands of Pannu Islands, palm leaves represented victory.

At the same time, with the march of the insurgents, Zhang Yapin elected as the head of the Liberal Party became the new leader in the presidential palace. He read the new declaration in front of the foreign reporters.

The old regime was banished. The Pannu Islands regime was changed from a presidential dictatorship to a presidential republic. At the same time, the country changed to federalism. The country's new name was New United Pannu, or in short, Xin.

The first president was Zhang Yapin with a term of five years. A

general election will be held five years later. The parliament was compromised off nine members elected from each of the nine islands' own jurisdiction.

Other than some small amendment in the constitution to the president's power, all laws were succeeded by the previous political regime.

A federal body consisting of only nine Islands were comical in the eyes of media. A lot of the western media were debating if this news should be placed in international news or entertainment.

Immediately, the BBC reporter asked if the country was named in Chinese. Zhang Yapin explained that people with Chinese heritage comprised of 36% of the island's population, Chinese was listed as an official language along with English and Dutch. It was a decision based on culture, so there was no need to interpret it further.

Another reporter asked a really sharp question. "President Edward used the military to establish a dictatorship, what would prevent you from going on the same path as him."

As to that question, although Zhang Yapin felt bitter, his expression didn't reveal anything. He calmly announced a term that astonished all the reporters – "Defensive contract."

Pannu Islands' national defense will be solely contracted to Celestial Trade Corporation. Celestial has the right to hire mercenaries within or outside of the border of Pannu as its defensive force. Pannu Islands will be directly responsible for the constitution with no need to follow the order of the president. The contract fee would be paid in the form of customs tax and land rental cost.

When they heard Zhang Yapin's explanation, the same thought flashed across all of the reporters' minds.

This is insane.

In this case, it practically meant the military of the country was handed over to private ownership, the military would operate similarly to a corporation.

Would this military have any combat ability? Would this military be able to protect national security? Would this kind of company be safe in the first place?

But after they thought it through, this kind of thing was not without precedence.

The current UA force was an army that was most reliant on private corporations. Over 60% of the defense budget was paid to defense contractors. The current UA soldiers would complete the most basic duties as a soldier while the rest were contracted out. From weapon development, manufacturing, to the logistics behind supplies, private contractors existed everywhere.

The force would be government-owned while private corporations contracted for the work. Not only would it save a significant amount in terms of cost, but it would also throw the burden of any casualties to the company.

Since there was a precedence, this measure could certainly be applicable.

But it was the first time these reporters had heard of contracting the entire "national defense" to a private corporation.

They had to say, regarding being lazy, the sesame sized small country was at the frontier of the world.

Because of this, the small country with less than twenty thousand people made to the front page of international news several times. At the same time, Celestial Trade also got on the pages of a reputable news agency.

To the company that the public never heard of, all kinds of irresponsible claims began to appear.

...

Someone said that oil may be underneath Pannu Islands and the Celestial Trade Corporation was a subsidiary of an oil giant, so the capital may be from the UA. Someone also guessed it may be the work of HUA as they plan to intervene in international affairs...

Of course, no one imagined the connection between Celestial and Future International since the two were completely unrelated. Before the boat left from West Africa, Jiang Chen closed Future Security in Nigeria and moved the equipment and the remaining individuals onto two vessels. As to the basic infrastructure, it was sold to the Nigeria government at cost.

The two vessels would set sail through Cape of Good Hope and take the far route to Pannu Islands.

On the other side, after the insurgents had shoved president Edward along with his family into the prison, they furiously marched towards Johnny's mansion.

They were much more careful this time after they learned from the tragic experience of attacking Johnny's mansion previously. They brought the only armored vehicle that remained from the civil war. With the cover of the armored vehicle, they were much more confident.

But when they arrived at the mansion, they found out someone already visited.

The metal gate outside looked like a car smashed into it as it lied on the grass field a few meters away. The wall looked as if large caliber bullets sprayed through it as a few parts were broken into sections. Especially the machine gun position hidden behind sandbags, the sand from the bags had all spilled out. A lot of walls were shattered into pieces. They didn't know what weapon was so powerful.

The bodies in the mansion were yet to be cleaned, all the fatalities had their heart pierced by a bullet. The killer's shooting was frighteningly accurate, even for the mercenaries that hid

behind the wall, the bullet penetrated through the wall before it hit their heart.

In the end, the insurgents found Johnny's body in the basement along with four females he locked up.

Three of the females were locals, one of them was a wife, and one was in junior high. They were all registered died due to vehicle accidents, but they were actually locked up in the villain's basement.

The other woman was a reporter from New Zealand and captured when she sneaked into Johnny's mansion undercover for a report. When the news was exposed it cause a huge uproar in New Zealand. However, because Johnny had already died, there was no purpose seeking justice on a corpse, especially since the old regime was already overthrown. The incident was heated for a period before it cooled down.

In the end, the four victims all received a generous sum of compensation from the Xin government. It was rumored that the money was donated by an anonymous wealthy man as a small compensation to the unfortunate people.

Of course, these were all after stories.

Chapter 331: Neutrality

The next day.

The nine-star flag waved above the Pannu Islands and the citizens celebrating the new regime walked onto the streets as if they were celebrating New Year or Christmas. They cheered on the new birth of the country.

Noontime.

In the cafeteria of the presidential palace, Jiang Chen and Zhang Yapin sat on the two sides of the table.

Lunch was curry lamb with rice along with an odd coconut smell. It certainly tasted like south Asia. In front of Zhang Yapin was a piece of steak along with coconut juice. With the shift in the regime, only the chef was the most indifferent in the entire presidential palace.

"UA extended their welcome to us wishing us to join forces with them. They indicated that if we continue to extend the pro-UA policy like the previous regime and announce declaration that favors their political view internationally, they would increase their funding to support us," Zhang Yapin spoke about the country's affairs while working hard to cut the steak.

Jiang Chen didn't even raise his head as he said without hesitation. "Reject."

"But... That is ten million USD," Zhang Yapin seemed to be unwilling to give up the money as he said with difficulty.

It was ten million USD. If it were split among the citizens, it would be 500 each. They only needed to speak a few sentences in front of the media, and no one listened to them anyways. This place was just a tiny country, the entire islands combined together was not even bigger than a province in Australia.

Jiang Chen raised his head as he rolled his eyes at Zhang Yapin.

"Someone hires you to curse at your mother, why would you agree?"

There was no need to think. They wanted to drag a bunch of Southeast Asia countries to curse about the Han threat theory. Pannu Islands was located on the southeast side of Country F, they could be stretched to a surrounding country of Han.

Zhang Yapin fiercely shook his head, but he added one sentence in his mind, [That depends on how much...]

"It's only ten million USD, my Future International has an income of two hundred to three hundred million USD per month, I'll loan you the money if you need it," Jiang Chen put a spoonful of the rice in his mouth while saying this slowly.

"Just pay me back with the land."

"Ahem, could I interpret this as showing off?" Zhang Yapin smiled bitterly.

Pannu Islands just recently introduced a tax cut measure to stimulate economic recovery, but there were still significant holes in funding. The mess created by Edward now had to be cleaned up by the successor.

"I am only giving you some confidence. I chose Pannu Islands because I believe in its future prospects," Jiang Chen said.

"Johnny Group declared bankruptcy. The ten billion dollar project is now down the drain. What prospect is there?" Zhang Yapin's expression was bitter.

He initiated the uprising because of the passion in his blood, but now that he has become the president, he began to feel the difficulties of managing a country.

"No, I am going to take over that project."

Zhang Yapin looked at Jiang Chen in shock.

"Ten billion USD, do you have that kind of money?"

"I believe a lot of banks are willing to lend to Future International," Jiang Chen said confidently.

That was true. Even when they were in China, a lot of banks went to Xia Shiyu, begging her to take a loan from them. The current liquid cash of Future International is 1.5 billion which was the earning of five months. Although ten billion was rather daunting, with Future International's equity as collateral, it would be easy to obtain.

Especially since he didn't even need to borrow the full ten billion.

"You are really willing to ... borrow ten billion for a small island country?" Zhang Yapin looked at Jiang Chen in disbelief.

"Of course, I believe this will generate more than one hundred billion in return."

Zhang Yapin held his breath.

He could not imagine how the country with less than one hundred million USD GDP and a population of fewer than twenty thousand people would generate more than one hundred billion in value.

"Excuse me for being honest, but it is hard for me to imagine... Although the Pannu Islands have a vast sea territory, it doesn't have oil. Could you point it out to me? Even if it is just painting a picture for me." Zhang Yapin smiled bitterly.

"How should I say this? Hmm... Okay. First, Pannu Islands is near the equator."

"Near the equator?" Zhang Yapin's eyes widened, "Do you mean tourism? Even with tourism, it is still hard to generate ten billion return in ten years right?"

"It is hard to explain to you. All in all, just remember what I said." Jiang Chen put down the fork in his hand as he slowly got up.

There were plenty of advantages of being near the equator, it was

not as simple as tourism. With space elevator for example, to non-equator countries, it was something they couldn't even think about. To the technology that appeared in 2150, Jiang Chen had the confidence of bringing them into the modern world.

"Are you planning to go?" Zhang Yapin also put down his fork as he looked at Jiang Chen leaving the table.

"I have something to take care of and I am also full."

"Also, if other countries –"

Jiang Cen stopped, turned back, and smiled. "Maintain neutrality and friendliness. You know what I mean."

Zhang Yapin helplessly let out a sigh. "I know."

"Do a good job and maintain your current diligent image. Once your term ends, I will give you a retirement fund."

"I don't need your retirement fund, I just want you to keep your promise and lead this country to prosperity."

When he heard this, Jiang Chen looked at Zhang Yapin in surprise.

There was not a lot of people that could refuse money in this era.

After a moment of pause, Jiang Chen said lightly, "Of course, I promise."

If everything proceeds smoothly, in less than five years, this would become an island that the world desired to be.

...

Under the shade of the trees outside the presidential palace, a blue Lamborghini was waiting and Ayesha was sitting in the driver's seat. A grey sports bra drew out her beautiful curvatures and a pair of shades was clipped on the collar. The view was certainly a beauty with a nice car as it made the passersby turn their heads.

This Lamborghini was previously Johnny's, but now it belonged to Jiang Chen.

Although he died, he could not escape this crime. The court prosecuted Johnny with 17 charges and confiscated all personal assets to the country's treasury. The cars he had on Pannu Islands, the mansion, as well as two boats were all auctioned off in Australia. There, Jiang Chen took it all over as his own possession, needing only to bid twice.

Since it belonged to the deceased, there may be some misfortunes attached to the things of the people who died of an unnatural cause. On top of that, the rich mostly feared death, but Jiang Chen didn't mind as he was an absolute materialist.

Jiang Chen pulled open the door as he sat in the passenger seat.

Ayesha put the shades over her eyes and put her hands on the steering wheel while turning to look at Jiang Chen.

"Where are we going?"

"Linhua Group's construction site."

Ayesha nodded as she started the car.

Leaning on the comfortable chair, Jiang Chen looked at the scenery flying by as he tried his best to snap the beauty in his mind.

It was an indiscernible feeling. Before he had to work for his next meal but now he has become the hidden owner of a series of islands. This was his kingdom. No deceit or trickery would work against him here. No one would be able to plot against his company.

Perhaps he was bored, but he turned and looked back into the car at Ayesha concentrating on driving.

The shades and sports bra was a beautiful set. Any style of clothing seemed to look great on her.

Ayesha sensed Jiang Chen's gaze as she began blushing with her lips carved up.

She enjoyed his gaze.

Although they were yet to be married, she considered herself the wife of her husband. As a traditional wife, in her perspective, the husband was everything...

Chapter 332: The Disastrous Loss of Linhua Group

Xin was formed.

As to who suffered the most economically, it would be the Linhua Group working on the construction site.

The collapse of the old regime and the bankruptcy of Johnny International made Linhua Group's ten billion USD contract turn into a piece of scrap paper.

As to the two gold mines used by Johnny International as collateral, it was the typical trick, the old fox, Robert used. He first managed to find two abandoned mines and then hired geologists to reevaluate the gold reserve of the mines and fake a report. Then he took the gold Jiang Chen provided to create a production report in South Africa, completed the tax procedure, and produced a beautiful four quarters production report.

Immediately after, under Robert's directions of readjusting the business' focus, the two goldmines stopped operating. By using manipulation and forgery, the two goldmines were valued at 10.3 billion USD and completed the asset collateral verification.

Asset collateral verification was easy to fake since it was not an asset sale process. Therefore, the auditing team would usually not conduct an onsite audit. Robert even told Jiang Chen that even without the gold, he could still borrow gold from other mines to complete the asset verification process. A lot of mines were willing to do this because it meant that someone was willing to take on part of the tax burden for them.

Compared to the international capitals who fought through fierce market competition, Linhua Group, growing out of policies, was just a naïve baby still learning how to talk; they were no match against Robert who even dared to trick the FBA. Linhua Group's

project team did carefully examine the fifty paged asset verification report, but they didn't think that the asset behind the iron seal of the South African government was fake.

Now that Johnny International was bankrupt, the two goldmines were given to Linhua Group as collateral. But when Wang Linhua wanted to sell it off for cash, he realized that the two mines were all abandoned mines.

Johnny International forged the gold reserve. The asset audit report was inaccurate.

As if a rumble of thunder had struck his head, Wang Linhua immediately became unconscious after he acquired the news and was sent to the emergency room by ambulance.

Insurmountable loss.

These were the only words that could describe the loss suffered by Linhua Group, or the Wang family. On the ten billion overseas project, Linhua Group had currently invested 2.5 billion USD. However, Johnny International had gone bankrupt the day before the first phase of the project contract was due for payment.

A loss of 2.5 billion USD in the first quarter, this financial report would blind the Linhua board.

And not long ago, Wang Linhua increased his holding of Linhua Group through the secondary market.

...

On the west coast of Coro Island was the most beautiful scenery of all the islands.

The deep blue shallow waters reflected a stunning light under the bright sunshine, just like the goddess of the sea's veil. The coral reefs hid among the sea waves as it divided the magnificent undersea world into an array of pictures.

The islands covered in vegetation scattered between Coro Island

and Garlin Island, connected by deep or shallow sand beaches and formed a natural but sophisticated maze.

A car drove on the highway along the east coast. Jiang Chen rolled down the window as he gazed at the beautiful scenery from afar. He exclaimed,

"This is too beautiful."

"Do you want me to slow down?" Ayesha asked gently.

"No need, we should go faster," Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes as he stared at the seagulls at the end of the sky, "I need to get rid of the annoying people from my island."

With a grin on her face, Ayesha changed gears, "Sit tight."

The engine roared.

The car accelerated to a speed of 160 kilometers per hour as it turned into a blue shadow racing to its destination.

The speed may have been dangerous for ordinary people, but for Ayesha with the genetic vaccine, it was not a problem at all.

Moments later, they arrived at Linhua Group's camp.

With the car parked on the road, Jiang Chen saw from afar a group of people surrounding Linhua Group's door. Natives with hoes, scythes, and even sugarcane surrounded Linhua Group's door. Everyone was emotional as they were preparing to enter forcefully.

Soldiers with rifles maintained the situation. They were all insurgents who participated in the uprising. They were not dissolved after the war as some of them joined the police force.

He signaled Ayesha to wait for him in the car and walked straight to the gate.

"What's going on here?" Jiang Chen asked nonchalantly, stopping beside a policeman.

The bearded policeman frowned as he was going to tell Jiang Chen to stand aside, but when he saw a pass personally signed by Zhang Yapin in Jiang Chen's hand, he immediately stopped looking annoyed.

"It has to do with land compensation."

Jiang Chen immediately understood.

The negotiated compensation for two USD per square meters between Johnny International and Linhua Group was too cruel. Now that Johnny International was bankrupted and the old Pannu regime has collapsed, the citizens would not allow such an unfair agreement to exist.

Wang Tianfeng immediately called the police when he realized the situation was going south. Although the police force was also unhappy with Linhua Group, they still must uphold the law as they sent out a team to stabilize the situation. But the citizens still surrounded the police while they wait for an explanation.

"Let me go in to check it out."

The policeman hesitated before he moved and allowed Jiang Chen to go in.

Inside the camp was an array of trailers. The expensive equipment was all locked inside the warehouse by the workers to prevent the rioters from robbing or destroying it. As to the workers, they wore their hardhead and wielded sticks, preparing to fight.

If there were a conflict between the natives, the outsiders would always be at a disadvantage. Although they had "armed" themselves, everyone prayed that a conflict would not occur. In a riot, if they were killed by the rioter, it might even be difficult to seek justice.

When they saw someone walk over, they first felt tense, but when they saw it was a fellow countryman, they felt relieved.

Although there were quite some Han on the island, for them who traveled often, it was easy to distinguish who was home-born and who was not.

A tanned worker greeted Jiang Chen and asked, "How is the situation outside?"

Jiang Chen looked at the anxious expression on his face as he comforted him, "Don't worry, the Xin president is already working to resolve the problem."

The worker felt relieved as he wiped the sweat from his forehead and smiled at Jiang Chen, exposing his teeth. "Are you from the embassy?"

Pannu Islands were too small to have an embassy.

"No, but I am here to arrange your travel home."

When he heard he could go home, a look of joy appeared on the worker's face.

"Great, haha. Buddy, we all want to go home. The construction keeps getting delayed without any progress. The situation outside is becoming more and more dangerous. A month ago we could still go buy some fruits on the street, now we are afraid to even leave the camp."

"Sigh, it's been tough for you."

Although Jiang Chen disdained the Wang family's greediness, he didn't mind the regular workers. Or rather, it was a pleasant feeling to see his fellow countrymen in a different part of the world.

It was his fellow countrymen after all. Jiang Chen wouldn't sit around if his people encountered danger.

"It's okay." The tanned worker shook his hand. "Are you here to see Manager Wang? Do you need me to take you there?"

"No need, just tell me the location."

The worker didn't insist as he pointed at the concrete building at the back of the construction site.

"His office is on the second floor at the end of the hall."

After he said goodbye, Jiang Chen walked toward Wang Tianfeng's office.

Chapter 333: I enjoy the fact you don't like me, but you can't do anything about it

The door was knocked.

Wang Tianfeng, who was sitting at the table while on the phone, frowned. After he spoke a few more sentences to his sister regarding taking care of his father, he cleared his throat.

"Come in."

The door was pushed open. The person who came in almost made Wang Tianfeng's eyes pop out.

"Jiang, Jiang Chen?!"

"That's right. You recognize me?" Jiang Chen casually sat on the sofa in the office as he smiled at Wang Tianfeng.

He heard Wang Tianfeng was Wang Linhua's son; they indeed resembled each other.

Arrogance was apparent in his eyes.

He didn't understand why Jiang Chen would appear in this place. Future Technology had business here? The natives barely even used smartphones here.

"Of course, I'm asking you guys to leave the place." Jiang Chen looked at Wang Tianfeng with a grin.

Wang Tianfeng thought he heard wrong.

"What?"

"Asking you guys to leave this place," Jiang Chen repeated. At the same time, he took out a piece of paper from his pocket and folded it into a paper airplane before he flew it onto Wang Tianfeng's table.

He was displeased with Jiang Chen's attitude. Wang Tianfeng's eyes scanned between Jiang Chen and the paper airplane before

he, while suppressing his anger, opened the paper. As he studied the black letters on the white sheet, his chest pumped full of rage and his breath quickened.

"That's impossible! We already invested 2.5 billion on this project; the Xin government is bullsh*tting! They can't just get rid of us like that! I'm going to find President Zhang right now."

Although the notice was written in a reserved fashion, the decision was firm: All actions of Johnny International on Pannu Islands were illegal, and the previous land transfer agreement signed with the previous government wasn't recognized.

As he spoke, Wang Tianfeng got up from his chair and headed for the door, but he froze mid-step.

He suddenly remembered that the camp was surrounded by natives.

Jiang Chen crossed his legs as he reminded him casually, "I recommend you don't go outside now; the people in front of the gate want you dead."

A cold sweat rolled down his forehead as Wang Tianfeng thought of Johnny who suffered a tragic death in the basement. He remembered the partnership between Johnny International and Linhua Group. The rioters may potentially view him as an accomplice to Johnny even if he didn't do anything illegal.

He walked stiffly back to the desk as he looked at Jiang Chen again.

"Why would you appear here?"

Wang Tianfeng's eyes flashed; he seemed to sense that this had something to do with Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen didn't hide anything as he said straightforwardly, "Because Future International is the successor of the project and the Xin government is pleased with our compensation plan."

Successor?

Wang Tianfeng was stunned.

"How is that possible!? When did you get into real estate as a tech company?"

"Web + Tourism? You could interpret it this way. Who said we would build houses by ourselves? We can contract the work. You don't have to look at me like that; there's no way I'd contract it to you. You better get out of my sight as soon as possible so I can get on with my work term," Jiang Chen said pleasantly.

"You!"

Wang Tianfeng looked at Jiang Chen's grin as his face turned pale white from anger. His finger pointing at Jiang Chen trembled uncontrollably.

Everyone knew the first phase was the most difficult to execute, and it was also the phase with the highest cost. Linhua Group invested 2.5 billion in the first phase as they gathered the most advanced equipment and most professional workers to ensure that a solid foundation was established for the future. It wasn't just any poorly-built project they'd normally do domestically - it was Linhua Group's first international client. It would act as a business card and a case Linhua Group could use to discuss potential partnerships with other international clients.

Once they received the project from overseas, their sales team could proudly point at the Pannu Islands on the map and bring out diagrams of the completed construction to demonstrate their abilities and achievements to clients. The ten billion deal wasn't only significant in the amount of profit it would bring, but it was also a stepping stone to enter global competition.

Linhua Group couldn't afford to lose this project.

Therefore, a pleading look surfaced on his face.

"We have worked on this project for over two months and

invested over 2.5 billion USD on the project. You can't just make us leave; no one is more familiar with the project than us. We can forfeit the fee for the first phase, so at least give the next three phases to us?"

The humiliation made Wang Tianfeng want to kill himself.

As the heir of a ten billion dollar real estate company, he was forced to lower his head to a dog the Wang family supported before. His arrogance was tested to the point where it was about to shatter.

Needless to say, even up until now, he still didn't recognize the reality of the situation.

"I reject." Jiang Chen smiled. " On another note, you have reparations to pay on the basis that you illegally occupied the land. Therefore, you have to pay a fine. Of course, it's not a large fine - only ten million USD. I trust that with your company's financial capabilities, this amount is nothing to you."

"Illegally occupying the land? That's impossible! We have an agreement-" Wang Tianfeng's eyes were bloodshot.

"Any agreement with the previous regime is now void."

Wang Tianfeng's body trembled as he stared at Jiang Chen with a pale face.

"You knew about the coup from the start, right?"

"Of course. I happen to... have some connection with the boss of the Celestial Trade company." While the fact that he owned Celestial Trade Company was yet to be disclosed, even if people found out, it would only be a small number of people. This trading company had a total of three warehouses as its assets as of three months ago and it was registered in Pannu islands, but its operations were outsourced to New Zealand since it operated completely as an offshore company.

"Why didn't you tell us! Did you forget the favors the Wang

family gave you?" Wang Tianfeng already lost all rationality as he roared.

"Why do I have to tell you? How did you help me?" Jiang Chen shrugged as he put on an innocent face.

Wang Tianfeng froze.

"Since you are the successor of Linhua Group, you must know what your dad told me that night." Jiang Chen laughed.

When he heard that, Wang Tianfeng's throat moved. He wanted to argue, but nothing came out.

"I didn't plan to leave. But since I brought out Future 1.0, you couldn't sit around any longer and wanted to pick the fruit? How shameless. Please allow me to use this word to describe your father and your uncle."

When he heard this, the enraged Wang Tianfeng calmed down.

The expression on his face turned menacing.

"Aren't you afraid that something unfortunate could happen to your family? I know your family is still in the country." Wang Tianfeng stared straight at Jiang Chen as he threatened him.

"Of course not. They're currently traveling in Xiangjiang and will immigrate to Pannu Islands in a few days. Despite how powerful the Wang family is, could you capture foreign citizens in a different jurisdiction?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"You!" Wang Tianfeng had his eyes wide open.

"That's right. They became Xin citizens and automatically forfeited their old citizenship." Jiang Chen sighed.

It wasn't the best choice, but it was the safest option, and he didn't want these problematic things to bother him anymore.

Although the government wouldn't do something as despicable as taking someone hostage, some despicable people may think otherwise.

It took a bit of effort to convince his parents to immigrate, but he was finally successful. The two elders did long to see the outside world. Since they spent half their lives at the small factory and didn't even leave the province that many times, and now that their son was accomplished, they were more than happy to venture out to see the outside world.

Since they were getting old, they had more concerns. Therefore, they were a bit hesitant about leaving the country, partly because they didn't want to cause trouble for their son and partly because they didn't want to leave their old house. But Jiang Chen promised them that if they missed home, they could go back anytime.

Wang Tianfeng's lips shivered as he couldn't think of any way to threaten Jiang Chen. Just as Jiang Chen said, while the Wang family was powerful domestically, they didn't have the same reach overseas.

Seeing as Wang Tianfeng had nothing else to say, Jiang Chen laughed and stood up.

"You better leave the island in three days or the security force may forcefully remove you from the island. By the way, everything is within the boundaries of the law."

"You..."

Wang Tianfeng's fists clenched as he wanted to beat him up. But he managed to restrain himself since he wasn't home and if he caused trouble, his uncle wasn't here to solve things for him.

He should be glad he managed to restrain himself because if he did swing his fist at Jiang Chen, the outcome would be quite different than he imagined.

"I enjoy the fact that you don't like me but can't do anything to me." Seeing that he didn't take a swing, Jiang Chen grinned.

Jiang Chen fixed his collar before opening the office door and walking outside.

"Seeing that you allowed me to vent my frustrations, I'll arrange vehicles to transport you safely to the airport along with your workers. Also, some words for your father: It is never too late to seek revenge, although it has only been a few months.

Then he turned around as he left Wang Tianfeng, who looked like he just ate sh*t, there without turning his head.

...

When Jiang Chen left Linhua Group's camp, the citizens at the gate had yet to disperse. On the contrary, more people had gathered there.

The angry natives swung the sugarcane in their hand; it was quite a comical scene.

Jiang Chen looked at the workers inside the camp. He thought for a moment before he shouted to the citizens.

"Quiet! Everyone, quiet down!"

When they heard Jiang Chen shout, the citizens all looked in his direction.

"First, I am not from the Linhua Group." When he saw the unfriendly gazes, Jiang Chen cleared his throat to clarify.

When they heard that Jiang Chen wasn't a part of Linhua Group, the citizens all lost interest but before the crowd turned rowdy again, Jiang Chen continued shouting.

"But, I have already reached an agreement with Linhua Group. This construction site will be taken over by Future International. You may have never heard this name before, but don't worry. We will negotiate a price with the new president that you can all accept to compensate for your lost land. If you trust your president, please leave now."

The citizens stared at each other. A muscular, brown-skinned man walked to Jiang Chen and used Han mixed with English to ask

Jiang Chen.

"Is what you said true?"

"Of course." Jiang Chen nodded.

The person turned around as he debated with the citizens.

Finally, they seemed to have reached an agreement as the man stood in front of Jiang Chen.

"We trust our new president. But..." The man pointed in Linhua Group's direction, " Before the compensation is finalized, they can't leave."

"No problem."

Seeing the crowd beginning to disperse, the police on duty felt relieved and walked beside Jiang Chen.

"Thank you, my friend. If it wasn't for you, it'd be hard for us to take care of this."

"Don't worry, it's all part of my responsibilities. Especially... since some are innocent."

Chapter 334: New Moon Island

President Edward's trial was set for the fifth day after the coup had ended.

On this day, almost all Pannu people stayed home and gathered around the TV to watch the live trial.

In the end, the supreme court of Pannu Islands sentenced the former president Edward to seventeen crimes including treason. All his assets would be confiscated and he would be executed by the end of the month.

The result received support from all Xin citizens - the people who suffered under his reign wanted to rip off his skin and tear his tendons out. Of course, Xin was a civilized country so they evidently wouldn't sentence him to a violent death; death by injection was his final fate.

As to the soldiers that surrendered, considering that they fought as part of their duty, the court didn't punish them for their actions during the coup. In the end, they were only sentenced to 10 years in prison for accepting bribes.

At the same time, the previous government force was dissolved.

Once the political situation stabilized, the small country began to lose attention from international media and returned to a tranquil state isolated from the rest of the world.

But this was only relative - the small country remained in sight of many capitalists.

This was because of a ten billion USD project.

The infrastructure improvement project with its first phase complete restarted the bidding process for all construction companies in the world. The project was estimated to be in the seven billion range.

The most difficult first phase was completed by Linhua Group "free" of charge, so there were no other difficulties anticipated in completing the remaining three phases. Of course, considering the stability of the current regime and what happened to Linhua Group, the other construction companies all tightened their auditing process.

But when they heard Future International was the owner of the project, all concerns faded.

With a tech company with the profitability of over three hundred million USD a month, there was no need to question its ability to pay. Or rather, all construction companies hoped Future International would be unable to pay its debt. They could then use the equity in collateral and force the company to go public on Nasdaq. With a P/E ratio of 20 times, the amount of return would be unimaginable.

Of course, Jiang Chen didn't lack money to repay the debt.

All capitals focused their sights on the island isolated from the world. Even if they couldn't win the ten billion USD project, it wasn't a bad choice to share a piece of the pie along with the mega capitals for the development of the island.

...

The boat's engine hummed as Jiang Chen let the sea breeze mess his hair as he gazed at the horizon in front of the boat.

He bought the boat from the auctioning of Johnny's assets. The captain of the boat was an older fisher named Carter; the warehouse security man, Cassan, recommend him to Jiang Chen.

The brown-skinned native spoke equally fluent Han and English. He went to Yangchen in Hua before for business. When his business closed down, he returned home to fish and fished for twenty-something years.

"How much longer?"

"Soon." The old fisherman piloting the boat cracked a smile as he accelerated the boat.

They were cruising the sea at 50 knots; a single wave could send the boat soaring into the air. But the fisherman was undoubtedly a master of his trade - regardless how the waves changed, the boat cut through the waves smoothly and steadily.

Ayesha anxiously held onto Jiang Chen's hand while the other hand tightly grasped onto the iron railing. Jiang Chen was more courageous as he didn't look afraid at all. He stood there facing the wind as he breathed in the fresh air.

Not long after, an island surfaced in the close horizon.

"Do you see it?" the old fisherman shouted as he laughed.

"Haha, I see it." Jiang Chen couldn't wait to take his binoculars out as he looked at his island.

That's right, it was his island.

As the biggest winner of the coup, Celestial Trade Company not only won the contract for national security in which they acquired the rights to form a military on behalf of the Xin government, they also gained the permission to build a military outpost, one hundred square meters big, on the nine islands. On top of all this, the New Moon Island 150 kilometers west of Coro Island was leased to Celestial Trade Company with an indefinite term by the Xin government for the establishment of a military base.

Just like its name, the island was shaped like a crescent.

The island was covered in thick, tropical vegetation. The middle part of the island was higher with the two edges flatter. The gulf of the island was somewhat shallow with a bench forming when the tide fell. An aerial view taken at that moment would show the island was shaped like a full moon. When the tide rose, it was more similar to a crescent. Hence the island was also known as Tide Island.

Because of the small area as well as a lack of fresh water sources, it was uninhabited and not part of the nine Pannu islands. Although it would ruin the beautiful scenery on the island, building a military base here was an excellent choice.

Once the boat approached the island, Jiang Chen saw the two vessels anchored on the side of the island.

Because there was no deepwater port, the two vessels could not dock - they could only anchor far away from the island and transport the people and supplies through boats.

These people were all from the Niger military base. They were mostly Christians from Syria and were incorporated as mercenaries during their escape. Although they were half forced, when they realized that Jiang Chen wouldn't torture them and settled things appropriately with their family, they were gracious for everything Jiang Chen had done. After months of military training, they all settled into their new roles.

After a period of time, Jiang Chen would recruit new soldiers from Pannu. Based on his plan, in the first phase, the military base would maintain a force of five hundred people. While they prioritized the development of the air force, they would purchase old naval vessels and "modernize" them.

Of course, the plan must be executed one step at a time. Because they were in a peaceful time and Xin's foreign relations with neighboring countries was rather normal, they didn't have the need to expand militarily.

"Should we head for the shore or head to the vessel?" With the sea wind in his mouth, the old fisherman roared.

"To the vessel," Jiang Chen commanded.

"Okay."

The old fisherman dashed to the vessel.

The kilometers in the distance disappeared instantly.

After he secured the boat with chains, the people on the vessel lowered the ladder. Jiang Chen and Ayesha were the first to climb up.

When her feet came in contact with the flat deck, Ayesha felt disoriented and almost fell down. If it weren't for Jiang Chen catching her, she might've fallen into the sea.

"Are you seasick?" With how drowsy Ayesha looked, the corners of Jiang Chen's lips curled up.

Considering how disoriented she looked, it was the first time he saw her like this.

"A little bit." Ayesha shook her head as she touched her forehead.

"Why didn't you tell me earlier?" Jiang Chen said, concerned.

"Because... You looked really happy while we were out there." A red hue surfaced on her cold face as Ayesha murmured gently. She kept her head buried.

With how cute she looked, Jiang Chen's heart skipped a beat and he gulped.

But then, a light cough came from not far away.

Ivan's defined face looked at Jiang Chen full of mockery.

"Boss, I'm not trying to be a third wheel, but... Everyone is looking." As he spoke, Ivan jokingly pointed.

The soldiers on the deck blew whistles and cheered at Jiang Chen, and the teasing in their eyes was evident.

Ayesha hid her blushing face behind Jiang Chen's back. Although she was open and proactive when they were alone, she still wasn't used to acting intimately in front of other people.

Jiang Chen facepalmed.

These people dared to laugh at the boss.

"Get back to work! If I see you all wandering around on the deck,

you don't get to join the BBQ party at night!" Jiang Chen shouted at the top of his lungs.

When they heard there was a BBQ party that night, the soldiers all dispersed and got back to their jobs. The people with nothing to do all pretended to be busy since no one would say no to barbeque.

Jiang Chen grinned at Ivan with a grimace.

"Ahem, boss, I'm just... preventing you from embarrassing yourself in front of your subordinates." Ivan forced a laugh. He felt eerie being stared down by Jiang Chen.

That was enough joking around. Jiang Chen put on a stern face.

"That's enough joking around; wait for me in the captain room. Bring Barkary along with you."

"Yes!" Ivan saluted and left with the order.

Chapter 335: Military Base

After arranging for Ayesha to rest in an empty room, Jiang Chen headed to the captain's room.

When he arrived, Ivan and Barkary were already waiting there.

Barkary was the man who worked as the manager to Future Security. He was in charge of the logistics. After Future Security shut down, Ivan asked if he was willing to relocate to work on the other side of the planet and Barkary accepted without hesitation. His only request was to bring his wife and children along. It was his dream to leave the impoverished West African region.

"Are you used to the deepwater here?"

Barkary smiled humbly, showing his white teeth. He spoke with his broken English, "Yes, just a bit wet."

"That's normal since this is the sea." Ivan laughed and patted him on the shoulder.

"Now, let's get down to business. Ivan must've already told you." Jiang Chen looked at Ivan and stared into Barkary's eyes.

"Of course." Barkary nodded.

Currently, the relationship between Celestial Trade and Future International wasn't disclosed to the public. Before Barkary arrived, he signed a non-disclosure agreement after which he would wear an electronic collar for ten years. The advantage was that his salary would increase from four hundred USD a month to one hundred thousand USD a year, the same amount as Ivan.

"Then your response is?"

"I have no reason to reject," Barkary said light-heartedly.

Jiang Chen nodded as took out the silica gel for the electronic collar and passed it to Barkary. The young black man didn't hesitate as he put the collar on in front of Jiang Chen.

"Don't worry too much, this is just for cautionary measures."

"I understand, but it feels weird to wear this," Barkary said as he touched his neck.

"You'll get used to it." Ivan patted him on the shoulder. "Buddy, now you're a part of us."

Jiang Chen laughed and looked at Barkary. "Just like before, I'll leave you the logistics of the military base to you, including fresh water, food, and living necessities. As to the firearms and ammo, I have my channel to take care of this. You only need to transport supplies from Coro Island's warehouses to here."

"Count on me," Barkary said confidently.

Jiang Chen nodded as he looked at Ivan. "You must've heard that Xin's national defense will be taken care of by Celestial. I plan to build a military base, not for training purposes. Do you have any recommendations?"

Ivan served in Kane before and was an old Soviet veteran. Even if he wasn't an expert, he must have some perspectives to share.

"A deepwater port would be a good idea. The area near the island is too shallow, so vessels with a higher displacement can't approach it. Without a deepwater port, both supplies and military mobility would be greatly limited."

"The deepwater port will definitely be built. What about other areas?" Jiang Chen said.

"Bunker, training field, radar station, hanger, runway... Mostly these." Ivan smiled. "The size of this island is pretty good and quite similar to UA's Wake Island. It might even be a bit bigger."

"Mhmm, I'll start the building process for the military base; keep an eye on this for me."

"No problem."

"Then that's all."

...

Moving took an entire afternoon.

It was indeed troublesome to move supplies between the island and vessels. Jiang Chen already made up his mind - he would contact people to build the deepwater port once he headed back the next day.

Although it was tiring to move supplies and build houses, Jiang Chen discovered that everyone's face was filled with joy and happiness.

To avoid the flames of war caused by extremists, they had to flee with their families from their homes. Now, they were finally able to settle down on the other side of the world, on a beautiful island, to restart their life.

Although it was just an inhabited island now, everyone believed great things were to come.

The passion for building their new home made everyone energetic. It wasn't long before an array of tents were set up in the middle of the island.

At night, people gathered in the middle of the island and started bonfires around the island. They took out food from the vessel and began the BBQ party.

Children chased each other in the camp, couples cuddled together, people who enjoyed large crowds sat in the circle. People joked, drank, and ate.

The aroma of the barbeque spread across the camp - it was just like a picnic.

Jiang Chen soon joined them. A young man from Turkey warmly asked Jiang Chen to try his roasted turkey.

It was crispy on one side but tender on the other; Jiang Chen almost ate his tongue.

With the saline and warm wind blowing while they drank cold beer, it was a superb feeling.

The BBQ party lasted till midnight, after which people cleaned up the garbage on the ground. Although it had only been half a day, they felt an indescribable sense of belonging on the island already.

How could he explain?

Compared with Demarcus engulfed in the flames of war, the life here was too pleasant.

The next morning, people didn't oversleep due to the celebration the night before, after months of military training made it a routine for them to wake up early.

Men lined up on the empty ground as they began the day's training with their trainers.

The children and women also woke up early, because they wanted to see the sunrise.

Since there was no extra tent on the island, Jiang Chen and Ayesha spent the night on the vessel. It was rather embarrassing in the morning because compared to the hardworking soldiers, it wasn't until noon before Jiang Chen left Ayesha's body in bed.

After washing up, the two didn't return to the island and remained on the boat.

Because he still needed to take care of the military base, he needed to return to Coro Island before taking a flight to Australia.

The older fisherman had woken up long ago. There was a bucket of fresh sea fish on the boat. When he saw Jiang Chen, the older fisherman named Carter was somewhat embarrassed. When he woke up in the morning, seeing that Jiang Chen had yet to get up, he took the boat out and fished.

But Jiang Chen only laughed as he didn't mind him using a small amount of diesel. He also jokingly asked for a few fish and asked

how to cook the fish.

The old fisherman felt relieved when Jiang Chen didn't seem to mind him using his boat for other purposes. He controlled the boat expertly with the steering wheel while he began to explain the delicacies of eating the fish.

Jiang Chen wasn't paying complete attention, but Ayesha listened diligently while she recorded things secretively on her EP. The girl thought Jiang Chen suddenly became interested in eating fish, so she made up her mind to master this cuisine.

Once this conversation about fish started, the fisherman began to talk about his stories from when he fished. This time, Ayesha was rather disinterested while Jiang Chen was completely drawn in.

It was hard to imagine that in a life of fishing so many outsiders considered dull, the old fisherman had all kinds of interesting stories to tell.

In the light and happy atmosphere, 150 kilometers soared by.

Chapter 336: Australia Trip

After he got off the boat at Coro Island, Jiang Chen didn't stop for a moment.

He told Carter to drive the boat back to his mansion before he took a plane to Melbourne, Australia.

It was already two in the afternoon when he checked in at the hotel near the airport.

Without any food in his body yet, he managed to find a Han restaurant to take care of his lunch before he started his schedule for the day.

Based on the directions given by his phone map, he quickly arrived at the building of a military company called "Mammoth."

Robert recommended this company to Jiang Chen since they were one of the internationally-renowned military base construction companies. They built military outposts in Iraq for the UN peacekeeping force before, and they also did business with Robert in the arms deal.

After he explained his intentions to the gorgeous reception lady at the front desk, the boss of the company personally came down to greet Jiang Chen.

The boss of the company was an Australian man with a big beard named Thomas; he had served in the Australian special forces.

Robert already communicated with him beforehand, so after briefly asking about Jiang Chen's requirements for the military base, he eagerly brought out ten-something construction plans. The decrease in international conflicts resulted in his company not receiving any projects of this size for a long time. It was apparent why he was so eager.

After two days of negotiation, the two parties finally settled on a construction plan.

The total contract was worth four hundred million USD. The construction would include four deepwater docks, a radar station, weather observation equipment, a runway, an artillery base and missile silo; it would be constructed similarly to the layout on Wake Island.

Of course, because of the restrictions in arms sales, the construction didn't include a missile launch device or high caliber artillery. Without the permission of the Australian government, Thomas wouldn't have the guts to sell those.

But Jiang Chen didn't want those things either.

Regardless of how reliable the missiles were in the 21st century, they wouldn't be stronger than the Disaster-32 Cruise Missile. Regardless of how powerful the artillery was, would it be more decimating than a Type-50 electromagnetic pulse cannon? Although he had yet to control the technology for the previous weapon and the latter was only limited to vehicle type, Jiang Chen firmly believed that with his continual exploration in the apocalypse, these unbelievable technologies would be his one day.

Thomas also sold Jiang Chen four UH-60 Black Eagle helicopters with a unit price of four million USD. Included in the price tag was the training for eight helicopter pilots.

With the four Black Eagles, the mobility of the military base on New Moon Island would increase substantially. With the transportation ability of the four helicopters, the soldiers of the Celestial Trade Company could quickly parachute onto any of the nine islands to respond to unexpected situations.

Before he upgraded the technology, Black Eagle would be the ideal transition flight vehicle.

...

By his third day in Australia, the military base contract had been settled. Mammoth sent professionals to survey New Moon Island.

Based on what Thomas said, if all projects were executed smoothly, the base would be completed by July.

After he finished this task, Jiang Chen didn't return right away.

The next morning, Jiang Chen woke up early and headed to the rural area north of Melbourne.

The Victoria province located at the Southeastern end of Australia was renowned as the "province of the garden." Because it was by the ocean, the climate was warm and wet, so the province possessed the best vegetation and the most fertile grassland in all of Australia. Victoria, therefore, was the biggest producer of dairy products and farm products in the country.

As the car left the city center, the air became a lot fresher.

Jiang Chen stopped in front of a farm just before he managed to catch the farm owner who just got off his truck.

"You are?"

"Jiang Chen." Jiang Chen introduced himself.

The farmer owner with a rather big beer belly wiped the sweat off his face with a towel.

"Jiang Chen? Han ?... Why do I feel like I heard this name before? Mhmm, you can call me Luke. I'm the owner of the farm. Are you here to buy fresh milk?"

"Fresh milk?" Jiang Chen was puzzled.

"Mhmm? Are you not?" The farm owner looked at Jiang Chen in surprise as he wrapped the towel around his thick neck. "Are you not a [purchaser](#)"? With your age, you must be an international student from Melbourne."

Luke used Han when he used the word purchaser.

Jiang Chen facepalmed. Future International was now a Fortune 500 company. As the president, it would be impossible for him to be a purchaser.

"Ahem, you made a mistake. I'm here to discuss a big deal."

Luke looked at him skeptically.

Just as they spoke, a van stopped in front of the farm.

A girl in a cap got out of the car. When Luke saw who it was, he seemed to know the reason why she came as he retreated to the farm right away.

"Hello," The girl was rather lively as she warmly greeted Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen smiled and asked her casually, "Are you an international student in Melbourne?"

The girl was rather talkative as she said brightly, "Mhmm, I'm studying business administration - I'm in my third year now. What about you?"

"I'm not a student; I finished studying two years ago."

"Are you not an international student? Are you an immigrant then?" the girl asked as she blinked her eyes.

Although it wasn't wrong for her to say this, Jiang Chen wasn't an Australian immigrant but a Xin immigrant.

"Mhmm."

"Eh? Where are you from then?"

"Hucheng."

"I see. I'm from Shangjing. Are you in the powder milk purchaser business?"

"Why would you think I'm a purchaser?" Jiang Chen said with a speechless expression.

The girl looked at Jiang Chen, confused. Then she seemed to understand something as she kindly recommended something to Jiang Chen.

"If you are taking some for your family, it's better to purchase it

from the superstore. Although the products from the farm are drinkable, the packaging is inconvenient and not hygienic."

"What about you?" Jiang Chen looked at her, puzzled.

"I'm not buying for my family." The girl rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen. "I'm a purchaser and I mostly sell on Wechat and Taobao... Also, I recently opened a purchaser store on Little White; I can pay my tuition now."

As she said this, a proud smile appeared on the girl's face. Compared with poor students studying abroad who made their parents sell their houses or students coming from rich families, there weren't a lot of international students who could be as independent as her. She didn't have a sugar daddy nor did she burden her family.

But she couldn't imagine that the designer of Little White was standing in front of her and casually having a conversation with her.

"Purchaser store... Uh, do the purchaser stores not purchase from the supermarket?" Jiang Chen faintly recollected the ads in his memory were written that way.

"Are you a fool or what?" The girl rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen. "Have you never purchased powdered milk from Walmart before? Han customers are only permitted to purchase two at a time and they're also more expensive. The online store I own with a friend sells at least twenty-something a day -how could we purchase that from the supermarket? We buy directly from the farm and purchase the expensive empty containers from the recycling plant-"

Then she seemed to have realized something and immediately stopped talking.

Coincidentally, Luke walked over to them while carrying a big bag. The girl's eyes lit up and she immediately walked up to him.

The Australian helped the girl load the powdered milk onto the van and accepted her stack of bills.

"See you." The girl smiled sweetly at Jiang Chen before she waved goodbye.

Jiang Chen waved back and said goodbye to the girl he didn't know.

A courteous girl.

But he felt the sweet smile was fake.

"Okay, buddy, what's your big deal?" Luke wiped off his sweat as he asked Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen didn't respond as he asked an irrelevant question, "Is that powdered milk safe?"

Luke was completely lost. He looked at Jiang Chen with a puzzled face before he nodded.

"Of course it's safe; my farm passed all health inspections from the very start. Although that batch was off-label supplies that I asked my friend's powdered milk factory to produce, the quality is undoubtedly safe.

After a moment of silence, Jiang Chen sighed with a tone of defeat.

"As long as it's safe. Of course, I'm not here to buy powdered milk, I'm just a bit curious... Whatever, let's talk business..."

Purchaser refers to people buying international goods and selling them back domestically

Chapter 337: Public Opinion

Celestial Trade Company's food was all previously imported from New Zealand. The specifics of its operation were all contracted to professionals to manage. But with the increase in demand, this operational model was no longer suitable.

This is what Jiang Chen was planning:

He would import goods from Australian farms and transport them to Coro Island through the port in Melbourne. Part of the goods would be sold by Celestial Trade Company in Pannu Islands and part of them would be kept as raw ingredients for further food production and transported to the apocalypse.

At the same time, the Xinlong Food Processing Plant located in Wanghai City would be moved to Pannu Islands. All the staff willing to relocate overseas would be kept on, while local cheap labor would be hired to perform the assembly process. They'd produce cheap raw ingredients from Australia into canned foods and preserved products.

This processed food would be partially be sold locally and moved to the apocalypse.

Therefore, he wouldn't only save on tariffs, but he would also save on the labor cost as well as easing transportation of the goods to the apocalypse. It was like hitting three birds with one stone.

Of course, with such a massive and long-term deal, it couldn't be hastily decided upon.

Jiang Chen only initiated the conversation because he happened to be in Australia. Therefore, he made a personal trip. As to the specifics of the deal, he left it to Zheng Hongjie to take care of and left Luke his number.

After that, Luke cheerfully sent Jiang Chen off in a taxi to head back to Melbourne.

He booked tickets for the next day. Although there was still some time before it turned dark, he didn't know what to do by himself when he looked at the busy street. He started to regret not bringing Ayesha along.

The girl seemed to really enjoy pretty clothes. He still vividly remembered the date with her in Veit. That day, they almost cleaned out an entire clothing store with some intimacy that happened that same night.

When he returned to the hotel he was staying at, Jiang Chen felt lonely on the massive king bed, so he took out his phone.

He happened to see Liu Yao's message on Little White, so he replied.

<Are you here?>

<I'm here, haha, did you miss me?>

Without any surprise, Jiang Chen still replied instantly. He sometimes even suspected whether the girl created a special alert just for him.

With a smile on his face, Jiang Chen naughtily prepared to tease her.

<Guess.>

<Definitely not! (Sad)>

<Congratulations... You guessed wrong.>

<Haha. (Happy)>

Jiang Chen continued to type on the screen with a smirk on his face.

<How is your filming going?>

<We're close to finishing. I'm so tired.>

Buzz

Liu Yao sent a selfie over.

Scissor hands at a 45 degrees angle - playful but at the same time demonstrating her impressive 36D cleavage.

She also added: <Do I look good?~>

Jiang Chen couldn't stop himself from laughing as he replied.

<Good to masturbate to.>

<Screw you!>

Although that was what she said, she didn't feel annoyed at all as another buzzing sound came through. This selfie was even more flirtatious. Although nothing was exposed, it teased Jiang Chen even more.

Fine, Jiang Chen was hard.

Needless to say, time flies when you talk with a beauty. Liu Yao was also a great conversation starter as she didn't make Jiang Chen feel bored at all as the night flew by.

Just as Jiang Chen prepared to say goodbye, Liu Yao sent another message over.

<Also, did you know that Weibo has been full of posts about you these last few days?> <Weibo?> Jiang Chen paused.

He did register a Weibo before and Sina decided by themselves to verify him as an Orange V. He had millions of followers already. But since he was flooded with messages such as <I want to bear your baby> and was constantly tagged with pointless things, Jiang Chen hadn't logged on for a while.

After he said goodnight to Liu Yao, Jiang Chen didn't immediately sleep but instead opened Baidu and searched for his name.

After he searched himself, thousands of posts popped up about him.

Some were negative, some were positive.

<Internal feud? Future International's sudden expansion in real estate, Linhua Group's record loss of 2.5 billion USD. In the face of profit, the tendency of countrymen to fight each other remains unchanged!> Jiang Chen could guess the content just by scanning the name.

Disregarding the fact that it might've been an internet army hired by Linhua Group to change public opinion, Jiang Chen wasn't bored enough to read this type of foolish article. It was written without any proof or understanding of the circumstances and emphasized partial facts rather than the complete picture.

While he was in the country, Linhua didn't act like a victim when they were plotting against him. They had the attitude of <I'm going to buy 50% of your share, or you can't do business here> when they negotiated. They totally deserved what they got now.

Of course, there was certainly a lot of positive news. Generally speaking, public opinion stood on Jiang Chen's side, since Future International's rise to the top meant that Hua's artificial intelligent stood at the frontier of the world. Although Future International had relocated to Xin, Han netizens still considered it as a national company. Even though Alibaba's IPO made a Japanese person named Su Zhengyi the wealthiest man, people rarely considered Alibaba a Japanese company.

Other than the posts with polarized opinions, Jiang Chen saw a post with an interesting point of view.

<Celestial Trade Company and Future International, they belong to the same hidden organization? Overseas Han organization may be plotting a masterpiece!> The original poster of this post listed large quantities of half-fake, half-genuine "evidence" and perfectly demonstrated their imagination as the OP connected the two completely contrary companies together. He declared that the organization controlling the two companies was an overseas Han organization. Counting the coup in Pannu Islands, it was their work that sparked everything. The formation of the Han-speaking

country, Xin, was a link in their master plan.

And this organization may have received secret support from the Han government!

The renowned, born-in-the-nineties billionaire Jiang Chen was only a pawn of the organization.

Because of this sophisticated thought process, clear explanation, and excellent storytelling ability, the post caused a lot of people to reply. The number of likes easily broke a million. But the replies were also funny, such as: <The OP knows too much; [is your water meter okay?](#)> <The UA wouldn't allow Hua to intervene with Pacific affairs. This coup was the afterproduct of the superpowers' strategic conflict - OP's intelligence is questionable. What overseas Han organization? There should be a limit to this guy's imagination.> <The person above is a pro-UA supporter, let me curse at him.> The comments certainly entertained Jiang Chen, but if he were to comment on the post, the only word he could think of was: Bullsh*t.

A lot of conspiracy theories had no proof to back them up. Logically, any natural occurring events could be described as "preplanned" after the fact.

Of course, these comments were like smoke screens for Jiang Chen - the more, the better for him.

When his eyes began to feel drowsy, Jiang Chen flung the phone away. Just as he was about to sleep, the EP on his left hand buzzed.

When he opened it, it was Lin Lin's message.

<Come back.>

Although Jiang Chen was puzzled why Lin Lin didn't just open the video message, he still got up from the bed.

He closed the curtain by the window before he started interdimensional travel on the bed.

Slang for the police busting you for inappropriate comments on the internet

Chapter 338: Interdimensional Material Transporter

Due to the difference in time zones, Melbourne was three hours ahead of Wanghai. When Jiang Chen returned to the mansion in the apocalypse, the light was still on in the mansion. Sun Jiao and them were not asleep yet.

After he said hi to Sun Jiao, Jiang Chen headed directly to Lin Lin's lab.

Instincts told him that Lin Lin had a surprise for him.

When he pushed open the lab door, Jiang Chen saw Lin Lin in a white lab coat. The girl's fashion sense was particularly weird; she liked to wear fashionable clothing from before the war underneath a giant white lab coat.

"Wow, you're fast." When she saw Jiang Chen, Lin Lin put aside the item in her hand and walked to the door with a grin.

Jiang Chen instantly knew what her expression meant and took out the pudding from the storage dimension and put it in her hand.

"Did you call me back because you wanted pudding?" Jiang Chen facepalmed as he looked at her joyful expression of opening the pudding.

"Of course not." Lin Lin proudly raised her eyebrows. Using her plastic spoon, she pointed at the helmet on the lab bench with high spirit. "Dang dang dang dang!"

It was a circular plate. Inside the circular plate was a fist-sized metal sphere.

"Is that a Golden Apple?" Jiang Chen looked in the direction of the spoon, puzzled.

"No, no, no!" She proudly raised her tiny chest as she arrogantly shook her finger. "Although part of the inspiration came from that

"Golden Apple", the technology is not on the same level at all."

"Oh? Then what is special about yours?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"That Golden apple is a communication device and sends out a resonance signal. But mine, I can send mass!" Lin Lin smiled.

Jiang Chen was moved as he rushed to say, " You mean, you can transfer the mass from the modern world to here?"

Lin Lin shook her head. "It is impossible to send mass from another dimension to this dimension. Any physical quantity is useless between dimensions. Even with the most advanced technology in the 22nd century, it could not create a miracle that extends beyond the boundary of physics."

"Then why did you shock me and say it could send mass?" Jiang Chen said helplessly.

As she spoke, Lin Lin smiled mysteriously and handed the sphere ball to Jiang Chen from the circular plate.

"Try to put that metallic sphere into your storage dimension."

Jiang Chen looked at her skeptically. He took the sphere and threw it in the storage dimension.

"Then put this on." As she said, Lin Lin placed a soft plastic bracelet into Jiang Chen's hand.

He followed Lin Lin's direction and put it on.

It was light, and it didn't feel like there was anything at all around his wrist. Inside the bracelet, a grain-sized crystal was in the middle and it cast a dark green light.

"Take out anything from the storage dimension." Lin Lin curled up the tips of her mouth proudly.

Anything?

Jiang Chen muttered to himself and followed Lin Lin's instruction. He connected his conscious to the interdimensional

bracelet and selected the Type-11 pistol floating in the sub-dimension.

But what happened stunned him.

The pistol didn't appear in his hand, but rather, appeared on the circular plate that contained the Golden Apple.

"What happened?" Jiang Chen was flabbergasted.

"Just as I have expected." Lin Lin rubbed her chin as she nodded in confidence. Then, she handed the pistol back to Jiang Chen.

"Stop playing riddles with me, what exactly is this?" Jiang Chen threw the pistol back into the storage dimension. He glanced at the circular plate, this time the pistol didn't appear there.

"To put it in simple terms, it is the interdimensional mass transporter or a transport array!" Lin Lin walked in front of the whiteboard in the lab and drew two lines.

"The two lines represent two parallel worlds." As she explained, Lin Lin also drew a circle between the two lines, "And this circle represents a small universe."

Small universe? Super Saiyan?

Jiang Chen had a strange expression on his face.

Professor Lin Lin ignored the fact that Jiang Chen's attention slipped away for a moment as she moved her nose and slapped the circle.

"You refer to this as the storage dimension, but is it just a convenient backpack?"

"Then what is it?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

"I already said," She stared into Jiang Chen's eyes with excitement, "It is a small universe or a sub-dimension. It stands outside of the macro universe, parallel to all timelines, but it would be infinitely closed to all timelines. Theoretically, it is not possible to transport mass to the small universe, but you could.

Although the current theories can't explain your ability, we can take advantage of this!"

"Take advantage of this?" Jiang Chen muttered to himself while immersed in thought. Then, he took out another box of mango pudding from the storage dimension.

"That's right; the bracelet can continuously emit Klein particle waves of special frequency to interfere with your interdimensional bracelet's recognition of the fourth-dimensional coordinate. It is similar to adding a backdoor program in the computer software. By changing the fourth dimensional coordinate, the objects being taken out would appear on this circular plate, rather than in front of the person wearing the bracelet – Ahh! Pudding~"

Green lights flared into the circular plate as the Klein particles in the dimension vibrated rhythmically.

Just like the previous pistol, the mango pudding didn't appear in his hand but appear on the plate. Jiang Chen tried to put the mango pudding away, but there was no reaction at all.

The "transport array" seemed to be one-directional, it could only send items here and not the other way around.

Lin Lin's eyes lit up as she snatched the pudding on the circular plate with a smile on the face. She joyfully rubbed it against her face.

"As long as I wear this bracelet, the stuff I take out from the storage dimension would appear on this circulate plate? Even if I was in the modern world?"

Jiang Chen was excited by the idea. If that was the case, then he didn't need to tirelessly run back and forth. He would only need to wear the bracelet and stand at the warehouse in the modern world, throw all the supplies into the storage dimension before taking it out.

"That's right!" Lin Lin put her hands on her waist as she laughed

proudly.

"Haha! This is amazing! Lin Lin, you have helped me so much!"

The thrilled Jiang Chen grabbed Lin Lin's shoulders, hugged her, and spun her around.

"Wahhhh! What, what are you doing!"

Lin Lin's face instantly turned red. Steam began to emerge from her head, and her limbs moved listlessly in the air. Jiang Chen also realized that his action was a bit over the line as he immediately put her down.

"Ah, sorry, ahem... I was too excited." Jiang Chen forced a laugh as he embarrassedly scratched his head while looking at Lin Lin with a face as red as a ripe apple.

Lin Lin hissed a few times, especially unlike her, but didn't say anything. Instead, she grabbed the two boxes of pudding she obtained from Jiang Chen and ran out the door with her head buried.

When she passed by Jiang Chen, he noticed that the red hue has extended from her ear to her neck.

Jiang Chen paused for a moment.

[...Digitalized human can blush too?]

Chapter 339: Return to Xiangjiang

Lin Lin stuffed boxes of pudding into the kitchen fridge before walking back to the room. The expression on her face seemed to suggest that she still hasn't completely forgiven Jiang Chen for his action. When she came in, she didn't say anything as she just pushed Jiang Chen out of the room with her two slim arms and shut the door.

Jiang Chen stared at the closed shut door, knowing he was in the wrong. However, all he did was awkwardly scratch his nose as he didn't know what to say to apologize.

Jiang Chen admitted that despite not processing his action through his head, the act he committed was over the line for a girl. But he didn't expect her to react so dramatically.

After deliberating for a while, Jiang Chen let out a sigh and gave up on the idea of explaining himself. Instead, he walked to his own bedroom.

Worst case he would just have to bring her a few more boxes of pudding next time... Mango flavored.

Jiang Chen lied on his bed and muttered to himself before he closed his eyes and commenced interdimensional travel.

When he opened his eyes again, he was in the modern world.

He raised his hand and pressed the grain-sized crystal on the bracelet as the dark green light immediately dimmed down. He threw the bracelet into the storage dimension, and then checked his phone for the time.

It was getting late, already midnight.

He rubbed his weary eyes, dragged up the sheets, and slept till morning.

...

The next morning, Jiang Chen checked out from the hotel before arriving at the close by airport, empty-handed. He boarded a plane from Melbourne to Xiangjiang.

The ticket was book three days ago.

Because there was still the bidding on the construction site and the loan to take care of, Jiang Chen had to head to Xiangjiang before returning to Xin. It was already April, and the contract with Dalmer corporation was almost up. Although the "smart driving system" was completed by Yao Yao in two hours, to avoid any commotion, Jiang Chen hasn't given the USB and the chip to Carmen Rothschild. On this trip to Xiangjiang, Jiang Chen planned to provide Carmen with the program.

One billion in two hours, needless to say, Yao Yao was the biggest "goldmine" of the wasteland.

After hours of flying, with the flight attendant's gentle announcement, Jiang Chen woke up from his nap and got off the plane.

At the gate of the airport, Jiang Chen saw the stunning figure from a distance.

It was Xia Shiyu.

Before he returned to Xiangjiang, Jiang Chen had sent a message to Xia Shiyu, asking her to pick him up if convenient.

With a smile on his face, Jiang Chen walked directly towards her.

"You are finally back."

Although her face was rather expressionless, Jiang Chen could still read the sense of blame within her eyes. He had known her affection from the start and thus obviously understood the meaning behind her words. However, just like before, he only laughed and avoided the question.

"I haven't seen you in two months... You have lost weight."

Xia Shiyu rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen, didn't respond, and instead opened the Maybach door.

The car was previously Jiang Chen's ride, but he left the key to Ayesha who was protecting Xia Shiyu at the time in Xiangjiang before he left the country. After she had confirmed that Xia Shiyu was safe, Ayesha left the car key to Xia Shiyu according to Jiang Chen's instructions. Now, the car became Xia Shiyu's mode of transportation.

In the passenger seat, Jiang Chen looked at Xia Shiyu who was combing her hair to the side as she started the car.

"Do you like it?" Jiang Chen asked abruptly.

Xia Shiyu's eyes instantly turned red. She stepped on the gas as the car dashed forward along the barrier. The series of actions almost scared Jiang Chen to death.

"What, what are you even saying?" She hastily gained control of her steering, but the red hue climbed from the bottom of her neck to the tip of her ears. Xia Shiyu's voice was also listless, and her tone was even off.

"Ahem, I... I am asking if you like the car."

Her pumping chest began to return to normal. The calmed Xia Shiyu turned her head and gave Jiang Chen a dirty look before she returned to her expressionless state.

It seemed like... She was angry?

"Uh, I am serious. If you like it, I'll give it to you as a gift," Jiang Chen said in a tiny voice.

"No need, I can afford it myself." Xia Shiyu clenched her teeth as it made a crisp sound.

She didn't know why she was so angry. But there was one thing she was certain about and that was this guy definitely was not as courteous as she had thought. No, he was a pervert!

As to how she knew about this, she learned that by living with Ayesha. Because of her delicate figure, although her face looked young, she had always thought Ayesha was over 18. Until one time they talked about age, and she finally knew Ayesha's real age.

But that was not the point. When she asked that if Jiang Chen had done anything to her. Ayesha looked at her innocently and said in a casual voice: We had sex.

Had sex?

Xia Shiyu didn't manage to react at first, but then it hit her like lightning.

She just remembered that she was completely stunned.

She had thought Jiang Chen was a type where he would always be respectable to girls but never had the skill to interact with them. However, he was actually a pervert that did it with his own bodyguard – a girl that was less than 18 years old.

But Xia Shiyu's reaction was typical as Ayesha told Xia Shiyu with a straight face. It was normal for people to be married at the age of 13. Especially during a conflict-filled era, the age might be even younger. Also, she had expressed to Xia Shiyu that she could sense her affection towards Jiang Chen as well and she wouldn't mind sharing his gentleness with her.

Perhaps it was ordinary in Ayesha's eyes. Since in her home country, polygamy was common. Even if Syria was at the frontier of modernization among the middle eastern countries, this point did not change at all.

But to Xia Shiyu, who lived in the modern world, it was an unacceptable practice!

When she heard that Ayesha and Jiang Chen had done it before, she was shocked.

Then remorse, even despair, before it gradually turned into hate.

All men would turn to the bed once they have money.

She felt as if she had just gone through a break-up, although her feelings and the relationship could only be considered a crush.

But regardless, it was her first time feeling so heartbroken.

But with Ayesha's pure and innocent eyes, she couldn't impose the hate on her, especially since she had risked her life to save hers. And what made her feel the most powerless was...

She still loved him.

If she didn't love him, she wouldn't even be sad about this. She would not be jealous of the fact that another woman was before her, she would only need to leave.

If she didn't love him, she wouldn't be here to pick him up.

...

The car stopped at a modern apartment as Xia Shiyu skillfully parked the car in the garage.

"This place is?"

"My home," Xia Shiyu answered concisely and got out of the car.

Jiang Chen followed her as they walked to the elevator of the apartment, he had to ask.

"Do you not plan to send me to a hotel?"

"That's too problematic, just live here." Xia Shiyu swayed her hair as she didn't realize how explosive her words were and pressed the elevator button.

Jiang Chen was shocked.

"Uh?"

"What, do you dislike me?" The corners of Xia Shiyu's mouth formed a beautiful curvature while she looked at Jiang Chen.

Stunned by the glimpse of her beauty, Jiang Chen didn't manage

to react in time.

"No, No."

Xia Shiyu was satisfied with Jiang Chen's expression as a smile appeared on her lips, and she said, "Then that's that. This time you are back for business, it is easier for us to exchange opinion if we live together... No other intentions."

Jiang Chen thought the last sentence was trying to cover something up.

As they spoke, the elevator arrived.

While the door opened, she only stepped one foot into the elevator.

Jiang Chen looked at Xia Shiyu with eyes saying "What are you waiting for" as he stepped into the elevator feeling puzzled.

She had already made up her mind, she must act proactively.

What if he had another woman? Still not married yet! Before he gets married, it's all fair game. Therefore, she will win him over.

Ayesha's presence made her feel threatened. She had no feelings to be bothered by the childish question of "Who confessed to who first". Xia Shiyu made up her mind to drag Jiang Chen onto the right track and save the good person that mistakenly went on the "wrong" road.

No need to be mistaken, it was just for her to repay the favor of him saving her multiple times.

Xia Shiyu comforted herself.

...

In the Pannu Islands thousands of kilometers away, two transport vessels and two construction vessels slowly headed to New Moon Island.

To best protect the local environment, Jiang Chen didn't choose

to blow up the reef to build the port, but instead, he decided to build a sea platform two kilometers away from the island. There, he would construct a dock that would connect the platform to the land. As to the sea platform, it will be built with a three kilometers long arch water dam.

Two cars could travel at the same time on the dam. On the far end of the dam, they will construct a tidal wave electricity generator. Although the depth near the island was somewhat shallow, the continuous waves made up for it. Not only did it solve the problem of connecting the land to the sea platform, but it also addressed New Moon Island's electricity.

The sea platform cost more than one billion USD and even surpassed the military base by two folds, but Jiang Chen still considered the investment to be well worth it. The sea platform and dam construction were contracted to a company called "Wilson" while Thomas' "Mammoth" was only responsible for connecting the dam.

Since these professional sea construction projects already exceeded the capabilities of a military construction company. Thomas had brought up the idea of working with other companies on this project. The boss of both corporations were all confused as to why Celestial would spend so much money to build a sea platform.

Usually, this thing was built far away from the shore; it was kind of pointless to build it near the island. Especially since the request was to build it as large as possible, they wondered what the true intention was behind the project.

Chapter 340: Blackmail

Due to the construction project being a sensitive topic, the construction company didn't ask more about the usage of the sea platform. After they received the upfront payment, they sent the vessels to start building.

The sea platform was the size of two football fields, shaped triangularly. If it were far away from the shore, the difficulty of constructing it would be unimaginable. If it were standard steel, the tide of the ocean would dismember this giant. But if titanium were used, the cost of the construction would be an astronomical number.

However, because it was in a shallow sea with a depth of ten meters, the construction process was a lot simpler. A reinforced steel base could be inserted into the rock bottom of the ocean, making it equivalent to a man-made floating island.

The four vessels were anchored near New Moon Island as they sent out boats to explore the surroundings.

At the same time, Celestial Trade Company's vessel also lowered a boat and approached the construction vessels. After they boarded the Mammoth's ship, Ivan and Barkary had met Thomas. After they confirmed the details of the construction project, the three began to joke around on the deck.

A Ukranian, a Nigerian, and an Australian, it was as if they were in a United Nations meeting. Ivan was the oldest among the three and had the most to say. He joined the army in the Soviets, so he talked about the dramatic changes in East Europe and the civil war in Ukraine.

Just as they were having a great conversation, three medium-sized boats appeared from the horizon along with a few sharp air horn sounds.

"What's that?" Ivan frowned and took out the binoculars from his pocket, but he couldn't recognize the red-blue flag.

Barkary didn't recognize it either as he narrowed his eyes and took a few hard looks. Thomas had more knowledge as he immediately recognized it.

"It's Country F's flag. It should be their fishing boats." Thomas raised his eyebrows as he felt a trace of ominous feeling and walked to the tip of the vessel.

The three fishing boats stopped beside the vessel. Immediately, a southeastern Asian with yellow skin and his shirt unbuttoned walked out onto the deck of their ship and shouted a few gibberish words at Thomas.

Although Thomas recognized the flag, he didn't know the F language as he had to drag the translator on the boat out to explain to him.

"What is this guy saying?" Ivan walked beside Thomas with a frown.

The F citizen saw that another foreigner came out from the boat and gave Ivan a hard stare. But Ivan, born in Russia, had seen more bullet holes than people was not afraid as he stared back at him.

The F citizen was someone that preyed on the weak. Seeing that Ivan didn't back down, he subconsciously wanted to go back. But when he saw the two other fishing boats come by, he regained his courage and stared back and began shouting towards the ship.

"He is saying that this is the territory they fish in. Our construction boats have scared away the fish, and they are seeking compensation from us. These shameless bastards, the construction gets delayed every time they're here," Thomas cursed.

F country's fishing boats? But isn't this Xin's territory?" Ivan frowned.

New Moon Island was twelve hundred kilometers away from the

southernmost island MLL Island of Country F. Therefore, there should be no territorial disputes in this area.

"Speaking from the law, yes. But these bastards never follow the law. Even if they took a sh*t here before, it would be their fishing territory even if it was in your backyard. It is the result of the moronic president," Thomas cursed.

Since he was in the military construction business, despite being a veteran, he still had fury in his attitude. It was just the years in business that had rounded out his eyes. He knew that there was no use in being angry. If he angered the natives, there was no way the construction could continue.

He took a few deep breaths and calmed his emotions down. Then, speaking with the interpreter, he began to negotiate with the fishermen.

But Ivan standing on the side had a different reaction.

These monkeys were here to scam them. His eyebrows jumped, and he signaled Barkary.

Barkary understood. Smiling, he jumped onto the boat and headed to Celestial Trade Company's vessel.

"Now we would have to ask the Xin government. This is their territory; they should send their coastal guards here and capture these monkeys asking for bananas. Then transfer them back to their home country. But even then, they would almost be immediately released by their government," Thomas said in rage.

"Xin government? Why do we need to ask them?" Ivan's eyes narrowed as he looked at the monkey from F.

Thomas paused for a moment as he looked at Ivan, puzzled.

Ivan took out his phone. He didn't call Zhang Yapin but called another number.

<Jiang Chen>

...

The interior was fashionably decorated. The warm colored wallpaper certainly gave a peaceful feeling. The range of appliances completed the room with comfort and beauty. Just by looks, the owner of the apartment knew how to enjoy life.

After he took off his shoes at the door, Jiang Chen scanned the decorations and asked Xia Shiyu nonchalantly,

"Are you still renting?"

"Mhmm."

"Why don't you buy a house? The company just paid out dividends last month, there is no way that you don't have the money right?" Jiang Chen was confused.

Future Technology had its shareholders meeting in March, (Although there are only two shareholders), and paid out 4 billion USD in dividends. Xia Shiyu owned 1% of Future International. Because she was taxed in Xin, she barely paid any personal income tax. She had at least forty million in her savings account.

"I feel like you won't live here too long." She took off her shoes, and her feet covered in black stockings stepped into slippers. Jiang Chen, watching on the side, reflexively gulped and missed the deeper meaning behind Xia Shiyu's words.

"Feel free to sit, I will pour you a cup of water... Also, where is your luggage?" Xia Shiyu looked at Jiang Chen's empty hands as she asked in confusion.

Facepalm! He should have brought the luggage from the storage dimension in the airport bathroom.

Of course, Jiang Chen had luggage, but he couldn't tell Xia Shiyu it was in his storage dimension.

"Uh, I prefer to buy local." Jiang Chen had to make up a story.

Xiao Shiyu's delicate eyebrows raised.

"That's such a waste... It's okay, I will bring you to Causeway Bay tonight. At least buy a few sets of clothing and formal clothing for professional gatherings. Those are necessary for a business professional."

"Okay, as you wish."

Sigh, he should have insisted on staying in a hotel. Of course, he brought everything with him, it was just inconvenient to bring it out in front of Xia Shiyu. Due to the devil controlling his mind for just a moment, he had agreed to live at Xia Shiyu's place, leading him to have to rebuy everything.

It was not that he cared about the money, it was because he hated the trouble.

Jiang Chen watched Xia Shiyu go into the kitchen. He felt relieved and sank into the sofa.

A light scent twirled around the tip of his nose, it was Xia Shiyu's odor.

It was a faint scent, and it carried a hint of lily. It made Jiang Chen feel thirsty. It had to be the work of hormones getting him into trouble.

Not long after, Xia Shiyu brought a cup of water from the kitchen and handed the warm water to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen immediately chugged the entire glass clean to suppress the weird feelings in his mind.

"Are you that thirsty? Do you want another cup?"

"Ahem, no need."

Xia Shiyu nodded, sat beside Jiang Chen, and grabbed a stack of documents that were on the table.

"These are the information about the bidders-"

But at the same time, Jiang Chen's phone began to ring.

"Sorry, let me get a call." As Jiang Chen spoke, he walked to the window and took out his phone.

[Ivan?

Did something happen at the New Moon Island military base?]

He looked at the name and picked up.

"Hello?"

"Boss, citizens from country F are causing trouble in the ocean territory near New Moon Island. They said our construction has interfered with their fishing."

Country F fishers?

When Jiang Chen heard Ivan's explanation, he first paused for a moment. He was so angry that he began to laugh.

[Fu*k, I'm already unhappy with them. Now they want to take advantage of me? I have to pay up even to build in my backyard?]

"You are asking for my permission on this? Pirates have invaded our territory. You tell me what the coastal guard should do. Don't see me if you can't take care of it properly.

...

After he received confirmation from his boss, a wicked smile surfaced on Ivan's face.

The grimace was mixed with thrill as he was waiting for the boss to say this.

"Yes! Commander."

Chapter 341: Fishermen? They are pirates!

After Ivan hung up the phone, he took out the pistol strapped to his waist and loaded the gun.

His action made Thomas jump as he immediately blocked the Russian.

"Are you crazy! If your action gets filmed, they will definitely take the opportunity to scam you!"

Thomas who frequently conducted construction with Han companies knew that even if these fishermen looked dumb, they were extremely cunning. If they filmed Ivan pulling out the gun, they would return and make a few holes in their own boat. He knew that without paying money, the construction would be unable to continue.

What's even worse was that the actions of these fishermen received the support of the F government. Their government would also first pay for their damage and then help them with the international lawsuit.

"Scam?" Ivan scorned contemptuously and aimed at the monkeys' chest.

The country F citizen was first scared, but then he turned ecstatic as he ran inside to take out his camera. When he saw this, Thomas in defeat put down the hand holding onto Ivan's arm as he smashed his hand onto the railing of the deck.

"Dammit... Now that's that. I'm going to request your boss extend the construction period. We can't conduct any work with their interference."

Ivan ignored Thomas' complaint and looked at the translator on the side.

"Tell them to leave Xin territory within a minute. This place doesn't welcome pirates."

"Pirates? They are fishermen.." The translator paused for a moment as he attempted to correct Ivan.

"The boss said they are pirates, so they are pirates," Ivan raised the pistol and said emotionlessly.

Seeing that Ivan began the countdown, the translator clenched his teeth and translated his message to the fishermen on the fishing boat.

The fishermen were immediately enraged.

[Fu*k you. You threaten us with a gun, you think we are scared?]

They banked on the fact that the neighboring countries cared about their own feathers and wouldn't shoot. Who are you trying to scare pointing at people instead of the boat?

As to being pirates, that's more bullsh*t! Without a single gun, who would believe that?

The country F citizen didn't back down as he acted even more recklessly. He was not only mocking Ivan, but he also coastal peed in their direction.

Half a minute passed; five boats emerged from the distance. On top of the boats were fully equipped soldiers. Although they didn't wear kinetic skeletons, the rifles they had belonged to the 22nd century.

"Sixty." The last Russian word came out of his chapped lips.

Time was up.

Thomas thought he would awkwardly put the gun down, or shoot at the water or the boat, but the Russian pressed the trigger aimed at the monkey's chest.

That's right, it was the chest! Not the hands or legs!

Bang-!

Blood began to splatter as it instantly stained the clothes of the

monkey. He tumbled and fell down on the deck. He had his eyes widened as he looked at his chest in disbelief.

He wanted to scream, but only blood coughed out.

"Run! They are killing people!"

"Run! Run!"

The gibberish mixed with screams diffused over the sea. A fisherman quickly dashed out from inside the boat and dragged the wounded companion inside. The three fishing boats accelerated at max speed as they fled in country F's direction.

Thomas stared blankly at Ivan.

"You... killed him?"

"I killed a pirate," Ivan added as he fired a few more rounds at the fishing boats turning around. Although he didn't hit anyone, it made the fishermen scream in fear. Although he didn't understand, he could hear the fright in their voices.

There was no return once he fired the first shot, if any escaped, they would be a witness in court. Since he killed a person, he would have to leave all of them here, down into the deep abyss.

Perhaps Jiang Chen didn't have that kind of awareness, but Ivan had. At the front line in Oesk, he fought head to head with the Russian army, why would he be afraid of the country F?

Thomas's lips twitched, but then he sighed in defeat as he shrugged.

"Fine... That was beautiful, I fu*cking wanted to do that for a long time."

"Territorial issues are without negotiations, only war." Ivan scorned and used a famous quote.

"That's right, but sometimes... for business, we have to learn to compromise to avoid a bigger loss."

"But my boss told me, we are not businessmen." Ivan smiled.

But an army.

Thomas was shocked, but then he sighed.

"Then you have an interesting boss... I will retrain my crew. They didn't see anything today."

"Thank you," Ivan looked him in the eyes and said sincerely.

To the scums who caused trouble. Only blood would teach them humiliation and awe! If you take one step back, then they would take your mercy as weakness and take ten steps forward!

Ivan got on the fast boat as he personally commanded the "pirate" hunt.

"Attention all boats, attention all boats! Three pirate boats are fleeing in the northwestern direction. They carry weapons on board. Fire at will. I repeat. Fire at will!"

"Roger!"

The coastal guard in fast boats immediately moved towards the three fishing boats' direction and fired with their rifles. It left a series of bullet holes in the body of the boat. The fishermen finally knew that they messed with the wrong group of people as they were only begging to grow a pair of wings and escape for their lives to their border.

The fast boats didn't ask them to surrender at all as they were treating them like pirates. In terms of speed, the fishing boat was nowhere as fast as the fast boat. The fast boats fired at the engine of the fishing boats simultaneously, and it didn't take long before their engines blew out.

In the blanket of fire, the country F fishers hid inside their boat. They cursed at the foreigners with their dialect about how they don't follow the rules while they screamed inside the radio requesting for their coastal guard's assistance. Since they were

deep into Xin water, even if their coastal guard trespass the border, it would still take some time.

Suddenly, the firing stopped.

Just as these monkeys thought that their people had arrived, a few "clanking" sound transmitted from outside the boat.

The Xin boats approached them and threw a few things inside.

The captained adjusted his hat and carefully peeked out and looked at the deck through the window. When he saw a few M-series assault rifles on deck, he first paused for a moment before his expression suddenly changed drastically.

The two fast boats throwing weapons on the fishing boats quickly moved away while the other three stopped thirty meters out.

The soldiers in bulletproof vests lied on the deck, and one soldier held an AT4 rocket launcher on his arm.

"#\$%\$\$!"

The captain ran for his life to the outside of the boat and kneeled on the ground in fear. With tear-filled eyes, he begged for mercy.

But unfortunately, no one understood him, they didn't plan to spare the invaders.

The soldier aimed at the fishing boat and pressed the trigger.

Three RPGs fired from three different directions at the three fishing boats. The explosion lit up the sky to a vibrant red. The coastal guards of country F were on their way just in the distance. The soldiers on the fast boats followed Ivan's instruction and fired a few rounds at their own boat to create a few bullet holes.

The soldiers threw away the one-time usage AT4 rocket launcher and took out the more advanced "Python" rocket launcher on the side. Everyone reloaded their clips and prepared to engage in battle.

Under Ivan's command, the five fast boats approached the country F coastal guard ships.

Chapter 342: How did I forget about that?

Jiang Chen stuffed the phone back into his pocket and returned to the living room.

"Who just called?"

"Uh, a friend," Jiang Chen nonchalantly replied and sat back down beside her.

Seeing that Jiang Chen wasn't planning to explain, Xia Shiyu only glared at him suspiciously before she stopped persisting on the question and picked up the documents on the table.

She cleared her throat and put on a stern face before she began to explain the documents to Jiang Chen.

"The paper documents contain information on the bidders, mostly about the specifications and bidding price. As to the design project and project visualization, they are all on my computer, and we can take a look later. But before we start, can I ask you a question?"

"Of course." Jiang Chen laughed.

If it a question he could answer, he would facepalm answer. If It were not appropriate for her to know now, he would remain silent.

"Future Technology currently has good profitability. We just managed to gain our footsteps in the web space, why did we all the sudden expand into the tourism real estate market?" Xia Shiyu pushed up the glasses on her nose and asked with an undertone.

From an investor's perspective, Future Technology has a bright future. Its return would be far higher than building infrastructure in a small country on the Pacifics to revitalize the tourism industry there.

"Because I believe in the future of Pannu Islands' tourism, as well as Xin's growth prospect, Xin's plan to pay partially with land and

sea developments also fits my interest."

For construction such as the expansion of airports, roads, hospitals, because these projects were none not-for-profit, Xin's government won't make Jiang Chen work for free. Because the Xin government didn't have the money and was unable to access loans from international banks, they could only repay Jiang Chen in the form of land and ocean development rights. Based on the consideration that once the infrastructure was built, the land price would appreciate substantially. From a business's point of view, there was a lot to gain, only that...

"But is it worth it to take on billions in debt for these of high-risk projects that could not generate profit in a short period? Right now Future Technology is currently working hard to expand its global market. It is in a rapid growth phase. The establishment of subsidiaries, talent acquisition, all these need money. If the cash flow is broken, its consequence would be severe."

She looked at Jiang Chen with a stern face and gave him a hard question to answer.

It was a problem.

It was rather embarrassing because Xia Shiyu was the one who took care of the company for him. Not including the current operation of the business, he didn't even manage to meet all the board members as the president. Although they had drunk together before, after such a long time, he has almost forgotten all of their names.

Of course, Jiang Chen was not to blame for his short memory, he was a man that lived in two worlds after all.

As he heard the question, he scratched his chin and began to deliberate.

"How much does Future Technology need to expand its operation?"

"Currently it is in the process of establishing subsidiaries in Australia, North America, Europe, Russia and Southeast Asia. This includes the construction of the subsidiary headquarter and hiring and training employees with an estimated cost of eight hundred million USD."

"Eight hundred million USD? That's not a lot." Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

Seeing that the company's president had no sense of money, Xia Shiyu was exasperated and began to educate Jiang Chen about the fundamentals.

"We are a tech company and the majority of our income is attributable to Future 1.0 and <New Era>. Although we have formed an absolute advantage in terms of technical capability, with the rapid shift in technology, no one can guarantee we can maintain the technological edge. Imagine this, if a replacement product for Future 1.0 was introduced on the market. Even if it could only do one out of the functions we currently offer, such as accelerated hardware, battery saving, or smart control and even if it was inferior compared to Future 1.0 if it was free, would people still be willing to pay for our VIP service?"

"By that time, we would have to decrease our VIP charge, or even change the paid service into free service. If we lose Future 1.0 as a revenue channel, without exaggeration, Future Technology may turn from being profitable to losing money."

Xia Shiyu warned Jiang Chen with sternness.

The reason why she said so much was so that Jiang Chen wouldn't be blinded by Future Technology's current high profitability and sign a multi-billion deal without processing things in his head.

Without a doubt, from the company's expansion perspective, Xia Shiyu had the right foresight. But Jiang Chen saw further compared to her since his perspective was not limited to the small

Future Technology.

"Revenue channel? I will take care of that, you can just take care of the operation..." Jiang Chen held his chin as he vaguely replied.

Although it was not that virtual reality didn't exist, it still remained in the body sensing motion and visual replication stage. For example, a camera would capture user's action before it is fed back to the game. The VR glasses would then display it as a three-dimensional image in front of the user. It was incomparable to the virtual reality of the 22nd century, which directly connected the game to the nerve at the back of the person's neck. As long as you lie in the metal box, the entire head and body muscles would be sleeping, but the person's conscious would appear in the virtual world.

Without the need for mechanical functions such as vibrations to mimic real feelings, the senses were directly simulated in the brain. There was no need to have a screen because it would be extraneous to form an image on the cornea. The virtual reality equipment from the 22nd century would connect directly to the nerve. By that time, it would no longer be a dream to close your eyes and play the game.

Except the technology differential was too drastic. Jiang Chen himself was uncertain if he should bring the space elevator out or the virtual reality helmet out.

"Okay, then I won't ask anymore regarding this. But as the president, you should be aware of the company's operations."

"Haha, don't worry." Jiang Chen laughed confidently.

Funny, there were so many wonderful things in the apocalypse, there was no need to worry about money. But he should think carefully about the next money making product. Perhaps he should ask Yao Yao or Du Yongkang to create a new software? But he didn't have any ideas yet.

There was artificial intelligence, battery saver, mobile game, what else did smartphones lack?

Just as he was zoning out, he saw a red box under the table.

"What is that?"

Jiang Chen curiously reached for the cookie-sized box, but Xia Shiyu jumped up as if she had her tail stepped on.

She snatched the box away from Jiang Chen's hand, with a steaming face, she hid the box behind her back.

But the more she tried to hide it, the more curious Jiang Chen became. What thing made the ice mountain standoffish beauty embarrassed like that?

Could it be...

When Jiang Chen thought about it, the way he looked at Xia Shiyu turned lascivious. He narrowed his eyes. He was the only one to blame for being too perverted as he could relate anything to the sensual things in life.

Needless to say, women are sensitive creatures. When she saw Jiang Chen's abnormal smile, Xia Shiyu first paused for a moment before she realized.

"Get your mind out of the gutter! It's weightloss tea! Weightloss tea!"

Xia Shiyu in embarrassment threw the box in Jiang Chen's lap. The red hue made her entire neck turn red and her teeth clenched in anger.

[This bastard, what is he even thinking! Dammit!]

"Weightloss tea? But you are not fat at all." Jiang Chen looked at Xia Shiyu, confused.

Her waist and legs were both skinny, weightloss, she should gain some weight...

Wait, weightloss tea...

Jiang Chen seemed to have caught onto something. He closed his eyes and repeatedly chewed on the words.

But Xia Shiyu didn't notice the odd look on Jiang Chen's face. Her cold face was completely warmed by her blushing expression. She buried her head, not speaking.

[He said that I'm not fat?]

[That means... He is pleased with my body?]

The imagination of a girl in love was certainly wild. Even for a girl like Xia Shiyu with negative EQ could not escape the fate.

"Butt... My butt got a bit bigger."

With her finger twirling the tip of her hair, she used the decibel that only she could hear herself.

But as she spoke, she was stunned, why did she tell him such embarrassing thing!

With the bright redness of her face that was about to drip down, Xia Shiyu kept her head down, afraid to look at Jiang Chen.

However, Jiang Chen didn't even notice how awkward she was nor did he hear her murmur.

For an office lady, who worked long hours sitting in a chair, it was normal for her butt to grow some meat. But Xia Shiyu was okay since she was the type that could be blown away by the wind. Though it was still a woman's tendency to want to be beautiful, especially in front of someone she adored.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen clapped his hands and stood up. This scared Xia Shiyu who's imagination was running wild.

"Hahahaha! I remember now! Fu*k, how did I forget about that!"

Because of the lack of technical knowledge in this, he never treated it seriously. Now that he has given it some thought, that

thing could generate more money than any software, and it would produce a stable stream of revenue.

Xia Shiyu looked at Jiang Chen in bewilderment as he laughed hysterically. She was completely dumbfounded.

She didn't know what just happened to him.

Chapter 343: The Creative Use of Nutrient Supply

After he left with the words "I won't be back tonight," Jiang Chen eagerly ran out the door and left Xia Shiyu in complete shock.

[Won't be back tonight? Where are you going to sleep?]

[Also, didn't we say we're going shopping tonight?]

With a bunch of questions in her head, Xia Shiyu realized it was too late to stop Jiang Chen as he was about to slam the door closed.

She sighed and rested her forehead on her hand.

When she sensed the coldness in her hand, she paused.

She realized she was completely red.

Disregarding whether Xia Shiyu had any reservations about his quick departure, Jiang Chen ran to a nearby hotel. He ignored the concierge's strange look and ran to the elevator with his key.

After he locked the door, he lied down on the bed before he returned to the apocalypse and found Sun Jiao as he began to explain his intentions.

"Nutrient supply?" Sun Jiao looked at Jiang Chen with short breaths. She was puzzled. "Don't you guys have plenty of food on the other side? Why would you need that?"

Anyone with options wouldn't choose to drink the terrible-tasting nutrient supply on the wasteland. The meals at the mansion had fresh vegetables and frozen meat every day. In all of Fishbone base, only slaves and lower citizens would drink that.

"Help people lose weight! Oh, no, it's to make a profit!" Jiang Chen said in excitement.

"Lose weight?" Sun Jiao was full of doubt.

There were hardly any fat people in the apocalypse - it was

fortunate to have a full stomach in the first place, let alone having an excess of food, so losing weight was an interesting concept to Sun Jiao.

"Uh, it's hard to explain... There's an organic converter at the base, right? Can you take me so I can have a look?"

Although she was skeptical about the benefits of the terrible tasting liquid, considering how eager Jiang Chen looked, she had no choice but to bring him to the Fishbone base warehouse.

Based on Sun Jiao's words, the organic converter wasn't stored with the food but instead, it was stored with the steel and concrete. They passed by the Death Claw statue and arrived at the warehouse not far from the community center.

They pushed open the warehouse, and the pungent smell of water desiccant blew into their faces. A gas cylinder boiler stood at the corner of the warehouse along with a bunch of green fruits. There were some wires connected to the organic converter, resembling a magnified version of a squeezer.

The reason why poor people were so skinny in the apocalypse was mostly because of the ironically unnutritious nutrient supply boiler. Mutant meat and fruits are all dumped inside the device. When turned on, the particle membrane separated out protein, sugar, fat, and vitamins that could be absorbed by the human body. They were produced into liquid food that could be absorbed by humans.

Jiang Chen sniffed as a weird smell entered his nostrils. He looked with a frown at the boiler. "Is this the organic converter?"

"That's right." Sun Jiao nodded then tilted her head and asked, "You sure people would be interested in it if you brought this thing to the other side?"

"Definitely not this, something smells weird... Is the nutrient supply created by this really drinkable?"

"That's the way the organic converter is. The weird smell is because of the filtered out contents like the toxic substances. So this area can't store food otherwise the entire room's contents would be contaminated," Sun Jiao said in defeat.

Jiang Chen nodded to signal his understanding then he looked at the fruits on the side, "This fruit is?"

"This is mutated fruit - the double-headed cow really likes to eat it. Because of the high oxalic acid content, humans can't consume it directly, but it's not a bad ingredient to have in the nutrient supply. Combined with a small quantity of mutant meat, it can produce C-grade nutrient supply," Sun Jiao said.

Jiang Chen tried the C-grade nutrient supply once - the sour taste was nowhere close to being good. As a product, taste was certainly important. If it ended up tasting like Han medicine, not a lot of people would buy it.

After he thought for a moment, Jiang Chen asked, "If we use fresh meat or grain, would the produced nutrient supply reach level A?"

"Use fresh food to produce nutrient supply? Are you crazy?" Sun Jiao said in shock.

With fresh food who would eat this? Is this something an average person would do?

"Ahem, I'm not crazy! Don't you facepalm - tell me the answer."

Sun Jiao facepalmed and sighed in defeat.

"To be honest, although I never tried before, it's probably possible. To produce nutrient supply above B-grade, not only does it require strict ingredients, there is also a high requirement for the production equipment. I heard that Liuding Town has the equipment needed to produce nutrient supply above B-grade, but I never purchased that before. Aside from the better taste, I can't tell the difference between C-grade and E-grade. It may be more

nutritious? Who knows. Even if it is S-grade nutrient supply, it doesn't taste as good as real food."

"There's S-grade nutrient supply?" Jiang Chen in shock.

"Of course. S-grade nutrient supply was the nutrient supply produced before the war. I heard it was a military necessity. But in peaceful times, no one would eat that," Sun Jiao said.

"Where do you find the production equipment for the S-grade nutrient supply?" Jiang Chen desperately wanted to know the answer.

"I don't know... But the scientists at the fallout shelter should know."

Jiang Chen smacked his head.

How could he forget the survivors from fallout shelter No.27? With so many scientists, there must be a few who would know. There was no need to create S-grade nutrient supply - he could just create his own custom version.

At this thought, Jiang Chen immediately headed to the warehouse door. He wanted to fly to camp 27 right now to take care of it.

When she saw Jiang Chen head for the door, Sun Jiao paused and tried to convince him to stay, "Eh? You want to go now? It's almost dark... Why don't you wait until tomorrow?"

As she said that, her face felt a burning sensation.

Jiang Chen stopped and saw the red cloud on Sun Jiao's beautiful face. She obviously knew the meaning of her words as her face met his smirk.

He hugged Sun Jiao's waist and blew gently into her ear.

"Then I'll go tomorrow."

...

The next morning, with two dark circles, Jiang Chen took the helicopter to camp 27. When he got off, he looked for Xu Lu who was working in the command center.

Because all survivors' abilities were registered and recorded, when she heard then't purpose of Jiang Chen's trip, Xu Lu quickly managed to select a few people and called them to the office.

When they heard they were being asked to see Jiang Chen, the survivors were ecstatic.

Why?

There was no need to ask! It must be because their abilities were going to be used for something - likely a project team. Although it wasn't bad to live on the surface, it couldn't compare to living in the fallout shelter. Who didn't want to live a happy life with their family?

Even if Jiang Chen's requirements were strict, they would still accept without hesitation.

Chapter 344: Sorry

In order to lose a lot of weight, a lot of young girls with great family backgrounds only ate one meal a day, with some going to the extent of only eating an apple for their single meal. Jiang Chen wondered: wouldn't they starve to death?

Losing weight by dieting wasn't only harmful to the body, it was also hard to maintain. This was conveyed by the joke, "When fat people are losing weight, the more they try, the more fat they get."

Imagine this, if a weight loss medicine appeared on the market – no, it would be called low-calorie food! Two test tubes a day would ensure you were full without any damage to your body. If you drank it continuously for half a year, it would guarantee you would be as thin as the refugees in the ghetto... Of course, no one would want to be as thin as that. Normal people would stop drinking it after a month.

The nutrient supply from the apocalypse wasn't fit for marketing to the modern world. Since it was a product, the taste was definitely a significant consideration. Also with concern for food safety, the ingredients and nutrient value would have to be redesigned.

For the improved version of the nutrient supply, Jiang Chen made a few requests to the five researchers.

The first was that it had to taste good, then it had to be healthy. Third, the calories had to be low enough and fourth, the ingredients had to be easy to gather and suitable for large-scale farming. Finally, the recipe had to be finished within a month. For each day they were ahead of schedule, the researchers could spend a month longer in the fallout shelter.

Faced with Jiang Chen's demands, the five researchers all raised their chests in confidence and promised to finish the recipe within the allocated time.

When the five people left the command center, they all had cheerful smiles on their faces as they couldn't wait to return to the fallout shelter to start the experiment.

"Once they have results, immediately report back to the base." Before Jiang Chen left, he urged Xu Lu.

"Yes, Boss!" Xu Lu responded with a smile.

"Then that's all... Also, did Han Junhua give up?"

Xu Lu shook her head with embarrassment.

"Not yet."

"I see..."

[What a stubborn person; why can't she just listen? PAC already flew lightyears away - what's there to be stubborn about?]

"Do you want to go see her?" Xu Lu asked.

"Mhmm... Might as well." Jiang Chen said casually.

He wanted to personally ask if she changed her mind and display his genuineness. Then, depending on the circumstances, he would see if she needed a more intensive lesson before he left... Jiang Chen thought he was a wicked person.

A smile surfaced on Xu Lu's face and she nodded gently.

"Okay, please follow me."

Jiang Chen followed Xu Lu into the cold basement. The patrol at the door saluted to him and opened the door for them before closing it.

Han Junhua sat quietly on the bed and looked at Jiang Chen.

He could sense that the instant she saw him, a hint of fright flashed across her pupils. Although it quickly vanished, it left a deep impression on his mind.

With the calm and collected look she put up, he felt a sense of guilt for some reason.

Maybe because he still had the conscience of someone from the modern world?

"... You can leave for now," Jiang Chen said lightly.

"Yes." Xu Lu nodded before she left the basement.

When the steel door closed shut, the basement returned to silence.

To Jiang Chen's surprise, it was Han Junhua who first broke the silence.

"What perverted thing do you plan to do to me today?"

Her voice was distant and cold - it sounded like it could freeze a person without any hint of emotion.

"I..." Jiang Chen opened his mouth, but he chose to close it.

He came in with a script in mind, but with that face as calm as still water, he didn't know what to say.

Jiang Chen sighed and threw out the words he prepared beforehand as he gently said, "Sorry."

Surprise flashed through Han Junhua's eyes. There was also a trace of confusion, but it vanished instantly.

"Although I'm not seeking your forgiveness, I still want to apologize for what I did."

Jiang Chen admitted he did all those despicable things because he thought with his lower body and put his wicked thoughts into action. He didn't even think it was wrong afterwards. She was his captive - it was his choice to determine how he treated her.

If a person stayed too long in a society without rule and boundaries, the person would subconsciously be withered by the environment. Jiang Chen realized a long time ago that the longer he stayed in the apocalypse, the more he thought as a person from the apocalypse.

If it was the old him, although he lacked some boundaries, he would never r*pe or force people.

After a long silence, she said calmly with a peaceful tone.

"Who apologizes to their captive?"

"... Perhaps." Jiang Chen smiled bitterly. He shook his head and left the basement.

Han Junhua stared at Jiang Chen's back. She didn't speak.

But inside her dark pupils, she looked completely.

...

He returned to the hotel and checked out before he headed to Xia Shiyu's apartment.

But when he knocked on the door, he realized there was no response inside. He called Xia Shiyu before he realized it was 10. She went to work a long time ago.

On the phone, Xia Shiyu didn't ask where Jiang Chen went the night before; she just briefly explained how to get Future International's building and hung up the phone.

Her meaning was obvious. She wanted the missing-in-action president to take some time to come to the company. Regarding the construction bidding, they only managed to discuss it halfway before Jiang Chen ran out - it was the perfect opportunity to finish the last bit.

To save time, Jiang Chen took a taxi and headed on his way. He played with his phone.

But then, a number called.

<Wang Zhiyong>

When he saw the name, Jiang Chen was silent for a moment, but he still picked up.

"Hello?"

"It's me." Wang Zhiyong's voice was bitter.

"... If you're calling on behalf of your uncle, you don't need to say anything," Jiang Chen said lightly.

"I know you would say this." Wang Zhiyong sighed.

After a two second pause, Wang Zhiyong used a pleading voice.

"Could you not just let this one go?"

He never asked for favors from his friends - he didn't want to go to the trouble. But this time it was for his family, not for himself. Although he was reckless at times, he always stood with his family.

"You can ask Wang Linhua - did you consider letting this one go when he plotted against me that night?" Jiang Chen laughed.

Wang Zhiyong fell into silence.

After a lengthy pause, he let out a long sigh.

"I see... Sorry, this one is my fault."

The day when he came out of the police station, he didn't notify Jiang Chen that the Wang family was plotting against his Future Technology, even though he knew a few details of their plan at the time. When he compared his family to his friends, there was no doubt which one was more important.

"No problem. It's not your fault."

With a sigh, Jiang Chen hung up.

He didn't have a lot of friends, and now there was one less...

Just as he was about to put away his phone, his phone began to ring again.

It was an international call.

<Zhang Yapin>

Chapter 345: A surprising reward

The moment the phone call went through, Zhang Yapin lowered his voice and roared at him.

"God, what did you do!"

Jiang Chen first paused then asked in surprise, "Oh, you're a Christian?"

Zhang Yapin took a moment to think before he roared in anger again.

"Is this the time to discuss this right now? New Moon Island, country F fishers, pirates? Are you crazy?!"

After Zhang Yapin finished venting, he took short, panting breaths before finally regaining his breath after a long time. Jiang Chen noticed the phone kept ringing on his side, but he didn't pick up.

"Are you calm now?" Jiang Chen laughed.

The calm Zhang Yapin forced a laugh, leaned back into his chair, and continued.

"... Almost in despair."

"What happened?" Jiang Chen said lightheartedly.

"Just go read any newspaper from country F! Three fishing boats that accidentally entered Xin territory were attacked and maliciously sunk by the Xin military. All 11 fishers died... Don't tell me you didn't know about this."

[What the fu*k, sunk them?] Jiang Chen was stunned.

To be honest, he didn't think of sinking the three fishing boats. He just ordered Ivan to take care of things and confiscate the fishing boats as pirate boats. He didn't think the Slav had such a bad temper. He wondered what they did to enrage him.

Jiang Chen wouldn't admit his mistake as he tried to rebuke: "Who would buy the newspaper printed by them?"

They deserved to be sunk. Is a military base a place you can just wander around? Delaying the building of military infrastructure, in any country, would cost a few artilleries at least.

"It won't be long before the world knows. BBC's reporter is outside and being rowdy, saying he wanted to get ahead of his colleagues," Zhang Yapin said wearily as he rubbed his sore eyes.

After a lengthy silence, Jiang Chen asked in a small voice, "Did Ivan... really kill them all?"

"All killed."

"Where are the sunken ships?" Jiang Chen continued.

"The diplomat of country F is currently negotiating with me to start the recovery as early as possible..."

"Who's leading this?" Jiang Chen's eyebrows raised.

"They want them to lead the investigation of the incident. Their coastal guard ships already crossed the border, but your people forced them back... That's your own troops, do you really have no idea?" Zhang Yapin asked with skepticism.

Jiang Chen looked at his phone and glared at it; there were two missed calls.

He was at the apocalypse yesterday, how could he pick up the phone?!

"Ahem, I didn't have signal yesterday."

Zhang Yapin rubbed his temples wearily. "What should we do?"

"Other than recovering the sunken ships, what else did they ask?"

"They demanded us to arrest the murderers and prosecute them under the law, or else they reserved all options for the situation to escalate."

Murderers?

When he heard this word, Jiang Chen was instantly unhappy. He didn't notice Zhang Yapin's last word as he cursed.

"Fu*k, if they sunk, they sunk! They were in Xin territory; did they have any excuse to trespass illegally?"

"Removing illegally trespassing fishers would only require a water gun. More severe cases would warrant bumping their boat, but using rockets is unprecedented! Zhang Yapin said bitterly in a helpless voice.

"In military zones, unique circumstances should be treated with caution; who knows if they were spies or not?"

With a frown, Jiang Chen deliberated for a moment. He glanced at the driver beside him as he lowered his voice.

"I can't really talk right now... But all in all, just make sure you remain firm that the boats were all pirate boats. Pointing at the deer and saying it's a horse, do you understand? If you don't, Baidu it. I know you've never been to Hua, but don't forget things passed on by the ancestors. Remain calm throughout the recovery process. Just drag it on until I come back to take care of it. Okay?"

"Okay..."

Zhang Yapin's response was without energy.

He just became the president. The domestic situation had yet to be stabilized before a foreign affairs problem arose. The country F president spoke with him yesterday on the phone with a strong stance, seeming somewhat arrogant. Country F had a population of 100 million, while Pannu only had twenty thousand. The 500 times differential didn't give him a lot of courage to carry a strong attitude. With a current enlisted force of 120 thousand, it was six times Xin's entire population. If there was a military conflict, Xin would be the one losing – although Jiang Chen thought otherwise.

"Then that's all, bye."

Jiang Chen hung up the phone.

Half an hour of driving later, the car arrived in Kowloon. After they turned a street, among the skyscrapers, Jiang Chen instantly saw the name "Future International."

He threw down two bills, got out of the car, and took out the phone to call Ivan.

As Ivan picked up, Jiang Chen rushed to ask him:

"Did you kill them all?"

"All killed... I'm willing to accept the punishment." Ivan was straightforward.

"You didn't do anything wrong. The border must be protected!... But this incident might be a bit problematic so remain calm and wait for me to return," Jiang Chen said in an undertone.

"Yes!" Ivan said.

...

Xin's national defense contractor, Celestial Trade Company, sank three fishing boats and forcefully removed country F's coastal guards with force.

Contrary to the shock and anger in country F, the Xin citizens were all ecstatic as if they had all taken drugs. Even for the people who had reserved opinions about Celestial all began to turn to their favor.

To sum it up in one sentence, it was fu*king amazing.

The conflicts between the two societies had existed a long time before.

When president Edward ruled Pannu Islands, he only lived the lavish life with Johnny - he didn't care about the lives of the fishermen at all. How much tax did the fishermen pay? Was it enough to pay for one of his meals?

There were no steel guard ships in Pannu Islands - only a few fishing boats served as a replacement. The low military budget was all allocated to the land force to suppress dissident voices within the country.

Therefore, although Pannu Islands possessed a significant amount of sea territory, their control over the sea was practically zero. Not to say that F country fishers or even New Guinea citizens could enter their territory to steal fish, but New Guinea was much less ruthless compared to country F. Not only did they steal their fish, but they also bullied the local fishermen.

The Pannu fishermen all hated those F citizens deep in their bones. Because of economic limitations, Pannu fishermen's fishing boats were inferior compared to those of the F country fishermen. If they bumped into each other, the Pannu ships would be the one to sink. Therefore, when they actually fought for fish, they had to avoid them, even if it was in their own territory.

Therefore, that was why even with the vast fishing resources near New Moon Island, there wasn't a single Xin fishing boat.

It was certainly not the most thrilling feeling.

But Celestial's actions were like a slap on the thugs' faces.

The attitudes of the Xin citizens to Celestial Trade Company instantly changed from "outside interfering force" to the "protector of people." Before, there wasn't a lot of response to Celestial's recruitment, but after this event, the recruitment site had a long line up.

The sharp domestic problem immediately turned to face the rest of the world. The issues of land compensation, whether the development of the tourism sector would continue, and the restructuring of the government were all shifted to the back of everyone's mind because currently, all Xin people faced a common enemy.

It was country F.

The result was surprising. Jiang Chen didn't even consider it at the time.

Chapter 346: Evaluation of Bid

Future International's office in Asia was in Xiangjiang with the headquarters planned for construction at Pannu Islands. Of course, the current headquarters was only a shell. All the other offices in different continents were all in the process of development.

As the president of Future International, Jiang Chen left everything to Xia Shiyu to take care of.

Xia Shiyu had an excellent background; she was a top graduate from a renowned program at Wanghai University. Her knowledge and abilities were far superior compared to ordinary people. Although the jump from being the store manager of a clothing store to the CEO of a global tech company was rather massive, she still used her shrill shoulders to lift everything. She studied how to manage a company while she applied this knowledge through the daily operations of Future International.

Till now, even if she encountered some difficulties along the way, there had been no major problems in Future Technology's operations. Her abilities had to be commended as Jiang Chen knew he wouldn't be able to manage such a massive company himself.

It had been a while since Jiang Chen showed up. When everyone saw the missing-in-action president appear at the office, all the employees were shocked as if the Sun had risen from the west.

There were familiar faces and new faces among the employees. Not everyone chose to relocate to Xiangjiang, but Jiang Chen rewarded the employees who followed him. All of them were either promoted based on their abilities or given a raise.

After he took a tour of the company, Jiang Chen was surprised to see he could still put a name to the majority of the people, such as the Future 1.0 project manager Ning Huajian or the bold girl Su Mengqi from the company dinner.

Jiang Chen didn't interfere with their work after he greeted the people he knew. He then headed to Xia Shiyu's office.

She was dressed in a set of professional attire with her black hair curled up at the back of her head. A piece of hair dropped down from the side, reflecting the gentleness of the sun. When Jiang Chen came in, Xia Shiyu was reading documents. She sat straight up with her eyes focused; she had a tranquil but dignified vibe when she worked.

She noticed Jiang Chen come in as she put down the pen in her hand and looked up.

"You're here. Feel free to sit."

"Mhmm."

He sat on the sofa across from Xia Shiyu's desk. Jiang Chen scanned the thick pile of documents on the table as an embarrassed expression appeared on his face. A lot of these things should've been the responsibility of the president, but everything was piled onto her.

"Thank you for working so hard."

"It's okay."

Xia Shiyu tucked some of her hair behind her ear. She got up, picked up the laptop, and sat down beside Jiang Chen.

"These are all construction visualizations. The spreadsheet on the side contains cost estimates I organized. Although I understand your intention to be a free owner, as the president, you should be involved in the bidding process. Look at this one first..."

As she explained, she scrolled through the screen and led Jiang Chen through all the documents.

To gain the ten billion contract, all the major international construction companies spent their effort creating the most brilliant visualization. Not only did they use 3D modeling to

demonstrate every detail of the construction, they even built the 3D aerial view of the four constructed islands.

After spending an entire afternoon on his selection, Jiang Chen finally chose a Dutch construction company named BMA. The company was previously involved in the development of Maldives' tourism project. Their experience on island construction was extensive. This was demonstrated especially well with their 3D visualization that could be described as art. The second Jiang Chen saw it; he was captured by the design philosophy.

The harmonious fusion of technology and nature was demonstrated flawlessly in BMA's design philosophy. While they retained the natural beauty of Pannu islands, their bold technology design provided the best experience for tourists.

Most noticeable was the transparent "bubble hotel" that was just like a balloon attached to a post. With the attachment of an air pipeline, tourists could move the bubbles anywhere between the sea level and the hundred-meter-deep ocean based on their desires. They could also choose to fix the room or allow the room to freely flow along with the waves, dance with the colorful tropical fish and sleep listening to gentle grace of the sea. With the help of technology, this allowed tourists to completely immerse themselves in the beauty of nature. Jiang Chen was instantly hooked by this design.

The cost of 8.7 billion USD wasn't low by any means, but if BMA could really transform his backyard – Pannu Islands – into the jewel on the visualization, Jiang Chen didn't mind spending the money.

Although Xia Shiyu recommended Jiang Chen to consider his options for a few more days, he still went through with the decision. There was no point reconsidering it no matter how long he looked. Instead, he just left it to his instincts. Since the companies invited to bid were world-class, BMA was among the best, without a doubt.

Another reason he was so hasty was because he had to return to Xin immediately.

After they finished the bidding review, it was already six in the evening.

By that time, aside from employees working overtime, there weren't a lot of people in the building. After they left the building, Xia Shiyu sped up while Jiang Chen followed her as they walked to the company's garage.

With the door open, Xia Shiyu subconsciously looked around before she sat inside. Jiang Chen gave her a strange look before he took a seat.

With his seat belt on, Jiang Chen asked nonchalantly, "Do you have anything to do tonight?"

Xia Shiyu raised her eyebrows, puzzled by the question, "No."

"Then why did you walk so fast? It looked like you had something to do."

As she heard this, Xia Shiyu's eyes widened.

"Ahem, it's not good for the employees to see us being so close together. Since we're both single... If rumors spread, it would decrease work efficiency... All in all, that situation wouldn't be ideal."

She hastily shifted her gears as she attempted to start the car.

[It's not that bad to enter a car together, it could just be a woman giving her coworker a ride...] Jiang Chen ridiculed her in his mind.

Although he couldn't see her face from the back, with the light outside, Jiang Chen noticed her neck turning red.

"You forgot to press the clutch." Considering how listless Xia Shiyu was, Jiang Chen reminded her in a small voice.

"I... I know!"

Xia Shiyu turned around and gave Jiang Chen a hard stare as her feet forcefully stepped on the gas...

It was indeed a thrilling journey.

He didn't know what Xia Shiyu was thinking as she kept driving like a madwoman. A few times, she almost scratched the car in front of her. Jiang Chen stared at the steering wheel in her hands on high alert as he prepared to take the wheel in any unexpected situation.

But what Jiang Chen didn't know was that if he hadn't stared at her like that, Xia Shiyu might not have been so nervous...

Chapter 347: I don't dislike her

After a hectic journey, the two finally made it back to the apartment safely.

When they got off the car, both of them simultaneously felt relieved.

Xia Shiyu went to the door and took out her key, pretending to be calm, but before she could open the door, she dropped it on the ground.

"Why don't I just go sleep outside?" With how nervous Xia Shiyu looked, Jiang Chen made this proposal in a quiet voice.

[I'm just crashing at your place; we're not doing anything naughty. Why are you so nervous?! You're making me nervous too.]

"No, no need. It's too much trouble."

[No, no, it's probably more convenient...] Jiang Chen said in his mind.

As she finally lined the key up with the lock, Xia Shiyu seemed to be battling with something internally. She finally pushed the door open with one foot and stiffly stepped into the house.

[Everything was fine during the day...] Jiang Chen ridiculed her in his mind as he stared at Xia Shiyu's back.

Jiang Chen followed her inside as he was dragged to the spare bedroom.

The layout of the bedroom was feminine. It looked like where Ayesha stayed when she was protecting Xia Shiyu before. The sheets had the smell of sunshine; they were clearly hung out to dry outside not long ago.

Xia Shiyu, with a rigid look, threw Jiang Chen a set of spare keys before she hastily left the bedroom. She didn't have the fluidity she

had when she first invited Jiang Chen to crash at her place.

Jiang Chen shook his head and sat on the bed. He took out his phone and called his parents and Ayesha separately.

His parents were enjoying their time on Coro Island. Not only did they live in a mansion, Jiang Chen also hired two caretakers to care of them.

Jiang Jianguo enjoyed fishing before, but since the river near their old place was too populated to fish and Fanyang Lake was too far away from home, he wasn't able to engage in his hobby. Now that he lived near the sea, it was possible to fish only a couple steps away, so he picked his hobby back up. He spent all day fishing with Carter from morning to night.

In their conversation, Jiang Jianguo kept bragging to his son about how big the fish he caught were. Although they tasted salty, when they were mixed with ginger and garlic sauce, they tasted surprisingly good.

As to his mom, Li Xuemei, other than occasionally heading out to the sea with Jiang Jianguo, she spent the majority of time homemaking and gardening. Ayesha visited her sometimes to learn the secrets to Han cuisine.

Regarding the beautiful foreign daughter-in-law, Li Xuemei absolutely adored her. Not only was she courteous, but she was also virtuous; it was hard to find someone as good as she was. Especially with Ayesha's earnestness when she asked what Jiang Chen liked to eat, Li Xuemei was even more delighted as she kept telling her husband how lucky Jiang Chen was.

Although they weren't married yet, the two elders all treated her like she was part of the family.

The first phone call lasted for an entire hour before his dad hung up in fear an exorbitantly high phone bill.

The second phone call was rather short since Ayesha never spoke

too much. But from her concise words, Jiang Chen still felt her deep affection as well as longing from hundreds of miles away.

"... Remember to take care of yourself, I'll be back in a few days."

"Mhmm," Ayesha responded gently.

"That's all, I'm going to hang up."

"Wait," Ayesha abruptly said.

"Mhmm? Is there something else?" Jiang Chen said in surprise.

"Did you figure out Xia Shiyu yet?"

Jiang Chen almost choked on his own spit when he heard these words from the other side of the phone.

"Ahem? What 'figure her out'? Where did you learn this from?"

Ayesha tilted her head as she continued, "I didn't use this phrase properly? I saw it in a drama."

She previously enjoyed UA drama before, but to understand the mysterious "mother and daughter-in-law relationship," she specifically watched a few Han shows. Although she didn't quite understand, it dramatically helped with her vocabulary.

"Watch less of that drama..." Jiang Chen facepalmed.

"Okay, I'll stop watching," Ayesha responded mildly.

"Also, did you say something to Xia Shiyu? I think she has been acting a bit strange." Jiang Chen recalled when he first saw Xia Shiyu off the plane; he could only come to one conclusion. It must be Ayesha who told Xia Shiyu something.

In the two months when Jiang Chen was overseas, Ayesha stayed with Xia Shiyu. Jiang Chen didn't know what the two spoke about, but based on the fact that Ayesha saved Xia Shiyu's life and even lost her own, there shouldn't have been any conflicts between them. But because of Xia Shiyu's affection to him, as well as the damage of that kiss....

"She said she won't admit defeat." It was a rare occasion when Ayesha didn't answer Jiang Chen directly.

"She won't admit defeat? Wait, what exactly did you say to her?" Jiang Chen said, sensing a slight headache coming on.

"Ummm," Ayesha was hesitant, but she finally opened her mouth, "I admitted our relationship to her."

[No wonder...] Jiang Chen facepalmed.

No wonder Xia Shiyu looked at him oddly when he first got off the plane and invited him to live at her place; that was unlike the Xia Shiyu who always put on a cold face in front of anyone.

"Sorry." Like a kitty that accidentally broke a cup, Ayesha lowered her head as she said with a fast tone and small voice, "I only thought... since she really liked you, there's no need to restrain herself. I don't mind sharing with her and I don't plan to oppose her..."

To be honest, that kiss in the car and admitting the truth to Xia Shiyu were all intended to "push her." But things turned out opposite to her intentions - Xia Shiyu's first and second reaction were both surprising to Ayesha. Xia Shiyu seemed to have interpreted her actions as acts of aggression.

Jiang Chen immediately interrupted her, "No, no, no, you don't need to apologize; our relationship isn't something that needs to be hidden."

"But... She seemed to have misinterpreted something." Ayesha's voice still had a hint of guilt.

"It's not that she misinterpreted something. How should I say this? The Han culture is a bit different from your own; she won't agree to it."

"Then do you like her?" Ayesha asked seriously.

When he heard her sudden question, Jiang Chen stopped.

After he thought seriously for half a minute, he slowly said, "I ... don't dislike her."

Jiang Chen admitted he was a greedy person, and also a selfish person.

But he didn't plan to explain himself.

"I will help you," Ayesha said earnestly.

"There's no need to help me... Just go with the flow. To be honest, I don't even know myself how I'll treat her. Don't sleep too late; good night."

"Mhmm, good night." When she sensed that Jiang Chen didn't want to continue talking, Ayesha ended the topic.

Jiang Chen hung up the phone and lied on the bed.

"Woosh-"

He let out a long sigh. Jiang Chen turned and stared at himself in the mirror.

He grinned. When he looked at his smile in the mirror, Jiang Chen restrained the desire to smile bitterly.

[Whatever, I'll just sleep early. There's still a meeting with Dalmer Corporation tomorrow.]

While battling his thoughts, Jiang Chen didn't even take off his clothes before he drifted to sleep.

Chapter 348: One billion Deal

The next morning, he moved his slightly sore neck as he sat up on the bed.

It was Xia Shiyu who knocked on his door to wake him up.

She was accustomed to the nine to five routine. So every day, she wakes up early to cook breakfast. She placed the scrambled egg, toast, and milk on the dinner table. When they were eating breakfast, Jiang Chen's heart pumped a little faster while he watched her in an apron.

He didn't know she had such a virtuous side.

He remembered back in university that one of his friends who always bragged about how many girlfriends he had always said that a single girl's life is not always the tidiest. It was normal for them to clean up in a few months. But from Xia Shiyu, Jiang Chen didn't see any carelessness.

Their conversation during the day was normal, not the slightest bit of awkwardness existed from yesterday.

After breakfast, the two headed to the office together. She looked okay, but from the thick makeup covering her eye bags, Jiang Chen could see that she didn't have the best night of sleep.

...

The meeting with Daimler corporation took place in Future International. The representative they sent was from Europe and had arrived last night. The representative was rumored to be a "person of importance". Before the representative arrived, Jiang Chen was guessing who it could be, but he ended up seeing a familiar face.

"Haha! Hello, Mr. Jiang, we meet again."

With fluent Chinese, Carmen Rothschild opened his arm with a

warm smile and walked in front of Jiang Chen.

"Mr. Carmen? This is a surprise, you personally came to China."

Jiang Chen looked at the man in front of him with surprise before he quickly regathered himself and opened his arm.

Although it was weird to hug a man, out of respect, Jiang Chen gave him a manly hug.

"Of course, Daimler corporation values the partnership with your company, the same goes for the Rothschild family," Carmen said earnestly.

[He shouldn't have figured out the GPS tracker...] Carmen thought in his mind.

[What is this guy's intention?] Jiang Chen was puzzled too.

The USB Carmen gave Jiang Chen last night had a GPS tracker inside. Yao Yao, who only specialized in programming, although she had some abilities in electronic device modification, didn't receive any anti-surveillance training, so naturally, she didn't notice it. If it were Ayesha, the GPS tracker would not escape her eyes. It was all about specialties.

"My honor, you are also an important partner for Future International." Jiang Chen smiled.

The two sat down around the conference table. The bodyguard following Carmen stayed outside the room. The two technical experts in suits and an assistant followed inside. Xia Shiyu took out the contract and placed it in front of Jiang Chen, then stood beside him.

Just as the meeting started, Carmen couldn't wait and immediately said, "Let's get straight to the point shall we"

"As you wish."

Jiang Chen smiled and signaled the employee to place the brief containing the USB and the chip in front of Carmen.

On this trip, Carmen brought the technical experts from the company. The contract stated that the product must be delivered by May. To be honest, when Daimler's programmers heard that Future Technology not only tackled the technical barriers in the smart driving system, they also managed to complete it within a month before the deadline. They were so shocked that their eyes almost popped out.

Everyone had the same thought, "Is Future Technology tricking them?"

The Germans' rigorous technical skills were renowned worldwide. They could not let a single mistake exist during the quality assurance process. Because of their skepticism to Future Technology's ability, the board sent the two technical experts responsible for the primary control system over to audit the smart driving program.

If the innovative technology had any problems, Daimler corporation's loss was not as simple as compensation, the reputation they've built over the years would also suffer greatly as a result. On the other side, if this triggered people's fear for the autonomous driving vehicle, it would indeed cast a gloom over the future of smart cars. Because of their persistence to safety, it resulted in aborting the contract with the previous company.

The two technical experts walked up. A man with a stern expression open the briefcase, and the other took out a laptop computer. They inserted the USB into the laptop and began to work.

The conference room was quiet, there was only the sound of keys clicking and computer fan spinning.

Carmen's arms were placed on the table with his eyes half-closed, but Jiang Chen noticed that he had his full attention on that computer screen. Xia Shiyu was still expressionless, but from her continuously moving eyes, Jiang Chen could clearly sense her

unease.

Jiang Chen was the most relaxed. He leaned back in his chair while waiting for the results to come out.

At the same time, Jiang Chen noticed that the assistant behind Carmen was observing him. Jiang Chen gave him a friendly smile, but he looked away.

The two technical experts' expression was turning more and more grave as they began to exchange opinions in a small voice.

Xia Shiyu held her breath as her heart was pumping rapidly.

It was a one billion dollar deal! Whether it was a success or failure, it would all depend on the words that came out of the two peoples' mouths.

Finally, the two technical experts stood up. From their actions, the review was completed.

"The result?"

Carmen was more eager than Jiang Chen.

The older looking technical expert nodded, then turned to Jiang Chen and said in English.

"Mr. Jiang, your company's achievement in artificial intelligence is at the point worth praising and envying. Please allow me to apologize for my skepticism of your company's ability."

While he said this, the technical expert bowed deeply to Jiang Chen.

"Don't worry. As a technical expert, it is a virtue to dare to question," Jiang Chen replied with a calm tone.

"Ahem." Carmen coughed.

The technical expert realized his mishap and stopped talking.

They were not in the lab, but the conference table.

"Since our chief technical engineer has already verified the

excellent performance of the software, then my trip is certainly worthwhile." Carmen stood up and smiled.

Xia Shiyu felt relieved. She only noticed now that her palms were drenched in sweat.

She looked at Jiang Chen as her eyes stopped on the smile laced with confidence.

Her face felt hot as she looked away subtly.

Seeing Carmen stand up, Jiang Chen also stood up with a smile and extended his hand.

"It's great working with you."

"Haha, It's great to work with you too." Carmen also extended his right hand and shook with Jiang Chen.

One billion dollars. Although it was small compared to the eight billion USD gap, it would certainly alleviate some of their financial pressures.

But then, the corner of Jiang Chen's eyes caught the ring on his hand.

His pupils suddenly contracted.

That is...

Chapter 349: A Massive Loan

That shape, it's the Golden Apple!?

How is that possible!

Jiang Chen's first reaction was that he made a mistake. He wanted to confirm the shape of the ring, but Carmen already let his hand go. Because of the angle, he couldn't see the front of the ring.

"After we finish the next round of auditing, the one billion will be transferred to your company's account. Of course, I trust that there are no other problems. To celebrate the success of our partnership, can I invite you to eat lunch with me?" Carmen smiled.

"My honor." Jiang Chen humbly laughed as he hid his shock behind his laughter.

The Golden Apple? Why?

Could it be the Rothschild family and the Golden Apple have some hidden secrets? No... But that Golden Apple was inside the U-235 submarine, from the diary of the officer from the Third Reich. The Golden Apple was protected as the "last trump card" for the Third Reich. As a Jewish family, how could they have come into contact with this?

Could it be that it was Hitler who robbed the Golden Apple away from them? No, that didn't make sense.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen felt strange.

He suddenly realized that there was no point in being bothered by this.

Regardless of whatever the empire had plotted, that part of the history has already gone by for 70 years. From the diary, he already confirmed that the possessor of the Golden Apple didn't

know how to use it even at the last moment. Although the country may have received some technologies in the future, it still faded in the passage of time.

Carmen didn't notice the irregularity on Jiang Chen's face as he warmly welcomed Jiang Chen to sit with him on his vehicle. The black bodyguard sat down in the driver seat, and his assistant sat in the passenger seat.

Although the bodyguard didn't say anything for the entire trip, Jiang Chen still sensed a hint of danger from him.

The guy was dangerous, at least on the same danger level as Nick. But contrary to Nick's silent and reserved state, this person didn't attempt to restrain his murderous vibe. He seemed like a war machine.

The bodyguard of the Rothschild family was not a simple character.

Jiang Chen sat with Carmen in the back as they chatted and joked. Carmen spoke excellent Chinese, it was even better than Robert, and he was also very talkative.

It didn't take long before the car arrived at its destination - Catalan restaurant.

The place has quite a reputation in the upper-class society in Xiangjiang. From the delicate interior to the elegance of the waitress, it was easy to see how remarkable the restaurant was. From the respectful expressions the two waitresses at the door gave to Carmen, Jiang Chen suspected that the restaurant was an asset that belonged to the Rothschild family.

They entered a private room and ordered. It didn't take long before the servers brought up exquisite dishes. The two chatted while they ate.

"Oh right, I remembered the bet we made. I still owe you a Maybach EX," Carmen said as he elegantly dissected the red shrimp

from the Mediterranean.

When they first signed the contract, Carmen and Jiang Chen made a bet. If Jiang Chen could deliver the product before May, he would gift Jiang Chen a Maybach EX – one of the only five vehicles worldwide.

Jiang Chen was shocked.

He almost forgot about it.

"Is Mr. Jiang free in October?" Carmen smiled.

"Hard to say, is there something going on?" Jiang Chen asked.

"The Mun Auto Exhibition is in October. Daimler corporation will be participating in the auto exhibition as a sponsor. The five Maybach EX will be displayed during the exhibition, and one of them will belong to you. If Mr. Jiang has the time, I would like to extend an invitation."

"Even if I don't have time, I will make time to attend." Jiang Chen laughed.

Carmen also smiled. To Jiang Chen accepting the invitation, he was pleased.

As lunch was approaching the end, Carmen put down his utensils and wiped his mouth with the cloth.

"Speaking of something else, does Mr. Jiang mind talking about business during lunchtime?"

"Of course not, it is a tradition to talk about business over a meal."

"Then I will be straightforward. Although the Rothschild family is in an expansive industry, our foundation still lies within the banking sector. I heard that Future International recently accepted a bid to the ten billion mega-project, would you guys need a little help?" Carmen smiled.

"Oh? What kind of help?" Jiang Chen pretended to be intrigued

and asked.

"A loan of eight billion USD. A five-year term and an annual interest rate of 4.15%. Is Mr. Jiang interested in this loan?"

4.15% of annual interest was lower compared to the annual interest of 4.28% offered by the other banks Jiang Chen contacted. Although it was just a 0.13% discrepancy, for a multi-billion dollar loan, even 0.1% of interest differential was a difference of more than ten million.

"Eight billion USD?" Jiang Chen fell into deep thought.

"If Mr. Jiang has other opinions on the amount, we can discuss and adjust accordingly," seeing that Jiang Chen didn't give him a response, Carmen added.

Eight billion was nowhere enough, but not a lot of banks were willing to lend Future Technology over ten billion USD. Even if a few banks agreed, they would also include additional terms such as listing out the exact purpose of the loan or an IPO on Nasdaq.

Carmen came at just the right time to solve his problem, he deliberated for a few moment before he had an idea.

"Eight billion would not be enough, is Mr. Carmen interested in a bigger deal?" Jiang Chen looked at Carmen with a smile.

"Of course I am interested, Mr. Jiang's suggestion is?"

"Thirty billion USD on a three-year term with 99% of Future Technology's share as collateral." Jiang Chen calmly unleashed a mega bomb.

Carmen's eyes contracted as he held his breath, but he quickly regained his courteous expression.

Jiang Chen was pleased with how his facial expression changed.

He knew Carmen was tempted.

After a moment of silence, Carmen slowly said.

"Okay, we are interested in artificial intelligence, and we are also optimistic about the future of your company in this field. But thirty billion is certainly not a small number. I am interested in how you would pay me back in three years? Future 1.0's current market penetration is already reaching its peak. With the current speed of technology shift, it will not be easy for your company to continue to increase its profitability.

Jiang Chen was surprised; he didn't think Carmen would agree on this concisely. Just like he said, thirty billion was not a small number. Although the Rothschild family has built a massive business empire, money doesn't just simply grow on trees.

"That would be my problem. But I have a feeling that it won't take me three years to repay the debt." Jiang Chen with a smile didn't directly respond to Carmen's question.

It would still take fifty years before the first basic artificial intelligence is introduced to the world. Even with the diverse political background in the mix and the technology research speed of the modern world is faster compared to the apocalypse, the technological gap would still not be surpassed in the next ten years. Additionally, it will be hard because basic artificial intelligence was not merely an advancement in the IT field, it also comprised of sociology, psychology, biology and other areas of combined achievements.

Before Jiang Chen can make the artificial intelligence database public, just in terms of the artificial intelligence field, Future 1.0 could not be surpassed. So Carmen's concern was excessive, at least in the short run.

But just with Future Technology's current profitability, it would still be impossible to repay the loan in only three years. But did Jiang Chen lack methods to make money? He didn't have any concerns about repaying the loan.

Seeing that Jiang Chen wasn't planning to disclose any

information, Carmen didn't persist.

"Then what about 4.5%? This the best offer I can give. Although the rate should be lower at a higher amount, it is at a condition where the party would have an equivalent amount of assets as collateral. To put it straightforwardly, your company currently does not have the assets for a thirty billion dollar collateral," Carmen said with caution.

It was a risk he would take to lend the money to Jiang Chen.

"No problem, deal," Jiang Chen said without hesitation.

Future International needed money, and a lot of it. He had already acquired the base as Pannu Islands. Thus all the growth must be accelerated. The technology from the wasteland would continue to fuel Future International's growth in the world.

Although thirty billion was enough to purchase ten aircraft carriers, it was still a bit far away from completing the technological empire in his mind.

The only thing that made Jiang Chen puzzled was, why Carmen... Or instead, the Rothschild family had so much confidence in him and was willing to lend him the money without wavering.

It was thirty billion! Not the Zimbabwean currency, but the dollar!

What made Jiang Chen feel strange was, from Carmen's dignified and courteous smile, he didn't see a slight trace of hesitation.

Jiang Chen's confidence rose from his belief in the wasteland's technology, but what did Carmen count on? Even if it was the Rothschild family, how many billions did they have?

Although he was thankful for Carmen's help, he felt something was off.

Chapter 350: Balu's Manor

Obtaining the loan went surprisingly smooth, more smooth than Jiang Chen had imagined.

Carmen was highly efficient as a contract in English and Chinese was sent to him the next day.

After Jiang Chen had signed, the thirty billion USD loan was transferred from the British Rothschild bank to Future Technology's Swiss bank account. Carmen then flew back to Europe after the process was complete.

Before he left, he handed Jiang Chen an invitation to the Mun Auto Exhibition and warmly exchanged departing words with him.

Moments after Jiang Chen sent the wealthy European man away, he and Xia Shiyu left the airport.

When they got on the car, Xia Shiyu couldn't wait another second before she asked him.

"You really borrowed thirty billion USD?"

"Of course, do you think I was joking?" Jiang Chen smiled.

She looked into Jiang Chen's eyes earnestly as she let out a sigh of defeat, "Sigh... Okay, could you tell me your plan? How do you plan to be wasteful this time?"

"Wasteful? You don't have to describe me like that," Jiang Chen said helplessly.

But the way Xia Shiyu looked at him clearly expressed one message – "If this is not waste what is it?"

"4.5% in annual interest, do you know how much money you would need to pay back in five years? 37.385 billion! In USD!" Xia Shiyu exclaimed emotionally.

Forty billion USD was enough to purchase half of Baidu.

"Don't worry, I used my personal shares as collateral, not the company's asset. Even if I can't afford it at that time, it won't affect you," Jiang Chen comforted her with a smile.

She seemed displeased with Jiang Chen's explanation as she said coldly, "Who do you think I'm concerned for?"

Jiang Chen was slightly shocked as the smile on his face turned dubious, he teased her with a smirk, "Oh? So you are saying that you are worried about me?"

As she heard his words, Xia Shiyu's aggressive stance quickly came to a halt as her face began to turn red.

She looked away, started the vehicle, and stopped looking in his direction.

"..."

"I, I just don't want a new boss. I am pleased with the current work environment. Altho... Although the current president would make people frustrated at times, being able to relinquish control to people with ability is indeed worthy of being praised. If there is a new boss that pretends to know everything, it would be terrible.

Her luscious black bangs happened to cover the side of her face. The faint yet rapid explanation took a lot of effort for Jiang Chen to understand.

Seeing the usually cold Xia Shiyu worried about him greatly, Jiang Chen felt warmth swell up inside his body as he tried to comfort her.

"Don't worry, it's only thirty-something billion. The current market cap of Future Technology is ten billion, and I will double it in two years."

"..."

To Jiang Chen's unreasonable flattering, Xia Shiyu chose to remain silent.

With Xia Shiyu's distinctly unconfident look, Jiang Chen grinned and said, "Since you don't believe me, why don't we make a bet."

"Make a bet? Okay. Once you're bankrupt, become an assistant of mine and let me order you around for a few years," Xia Shiyu joked.

"No problem." Jiang Chen laughed, "But what if I win?"

"Up to you." She combed her hair to the side as the tips of her mouth curved up.

Although it was a bet, it was more like banter between friends as she didn't quite put this on her mind. Subconsciously, Xia Shiyu still believed that Jiang Chen would have a way to solve this problem. As to why she trusted him so dearly, she couldn't explain it either.

Jiang Chen mischievously smiled as he used a joking tone. "Up to me? Really?"

She noticed Jiang Chen's smile and paused before her pale face was once again covered in a red hue.

But she didn't say anything this time as she hid her expression behind her bang.

...

Upon the first ray of the morning sun, a plane appeared on top of Ber. With the help of the guide, the personal plane landed smoothly.

A black Mercedes-Benz sedan stopped beside the airplane. A butler-looking old man walked out from inside and silently waited beside the car.

The gangway car drove beside the plane as the hatch door quickly opened, a European first stepped out of the car.

The old butler courteously bowed to Carmen, then he used German to greet him, "Welcome home, master Carmen."

"It's been a while, Mr.Cides. Is my father doing well?" Carmen said pleasantly.

"Very well. Old master has been drawn into sailing," the old butler said as he opened the door gracefully for him.

"Sailing? Let me guess, he is in Florence now?"

Florence is a coastal city in the Mediterranean. Carmen could vaguely recall they have family assets there.

"No, he is in Germany, at the manor located in Balv." The butler shook his head.

"Balv?"

[Is that place near the sea?] Carmen slightly raised his eyebrows.

"The old master wants you to take some time to visit home."

"Of course, I want to see him as well." Carmen sat in the back of the car with a smile.

Johnson walked forward and sat beside Carmen.

The butler only glanced at the bodyguard. He didn't say anything as he sat in the driver seat and served the duty of a driver.

"Did you take out the tracker from the USB?" Carmen whispered.

"Yes... It's hard to believe what technology that Han possesses," Johnson said in disbelief.

"Probably an advanced wireless blockage technology, who knows... Good thing they didn't find anything," Carmen said.

Carmen did not suspect this point at all. He could determine from their eyes whether the words were real or fake. Without the proper training in fabricating lies, it would definitely not escape his eyes.

The car arrived at the manor not soon after. The servers in the manor took Johnson to the guest room, and the old butler led Carmen to the backyard.

They followed the stone path through the grass field. Then in a small wooden hut beside the man-made lake, Carmen saw his own father.

Jocano Rothschild.

The giant the ruled the financial world and the person that led the Rothschild out of the gloom of the Second World War and reached the peak after the cold war. He wore a plain shirt and sat beside the lake sawing a piece of wood.

When his small son Carmen was born, he stepped down as the head of the family with his own brother taking over and began living his life in seclusion. Although he stopped asking about family affairs, no one in the family questioned his influence. Since the family that was hanging on the edge was dragged back from the abyss by him.

And because of this, to his father's request, Carmen would treat the family business seriously. After getting off the plane, he headed straight to the manor without wasting a single second.

But when he saw his father sawing wood, he was dumbfounded.

Chapter 351: Because I don't want to

Carmen looked at his old father sawing wood in front of the wooden hut. Then he walked up and looked at the stack of wood in confusion.

"My dear father, you are doing... what?"

"Building a vessel... A miniature version." Jacono wiped the sweat from his forehead as he stared at the yet to be assembled keel beside the lake.

"Building a vessel? What's the purpose of that?" Carmen looked at his father, puzzled.

"If the work that had conquered the Atlantic ocean has no purpose," Jacono said bluntly, "Then including us, including everything, all would be without purpose."

He said something with an ambiguous meaning. But Carmen seemed to be accustomed to his father saying things people didn't understand, so he didn't express his attitude as he only sighed in reply.

"... Okay, but do you know how to build a vessel?"

"I don't know." Jacono laughed delightfully; he pointed his saw at the keel starting to take shape. "Don't underestimate it because it's just a ship, there are a lot of tricks to be learned. Including how to treat the wood and how to connect the wood. To construct this keel, it took me an entire year. Although I failed many times, the process was surprisingly fun."

Carmen looked at his father in surprise, then he looked earnestly at the keel.

"Hard to imagine... Did no one help you?"

"Cides wanted to find me a boatman, but I rejected the proposal. I wanted to explore by myself on how the vessel worked." He flung

the saw in his hand to the side as Jacono picked up the bottle of water on the tree trunk and took a few big gulps.

Carmen looked at his father immersed in the activity; he was silent for two seconds before he said,

"I heard you needed to see me-"

"Give up on that prophecy. Jacono didn't look at him, but rather at the keel.

Carmen was shocked because of his father's abrupt words.

After a moment, he said with difficulty,

"Why?"

Jacono's sight returned as he looked at his son's eyes keenly.

"The infant would have to leave the parents one day and learn how to walk by himself. They told us a lot, but they can't tell us more. If we continue to follow this path, the future we face might be more upsetting than the situation they had gained."

"...But if we listen to the wise words of the intellect, wouldn't it save us the trouble of going through detours?"

"Who said detours are wrong?" Jacono asked back.

Carmen fell into silence.

Seeing that his son didn't speak, Jacono continued to speak about things with deeper meaning, "Humans should build on the intelligence of its ancestor and not depend on the future to further the future."

"Although history has changed, the trend will not change." The next twenty years belong to artificial intelligence; then a technological explosion led by breakthroughs in material science, and then-" unable to agree with his father's perspective, Carmen said softly.

"That might not be the case." Jacono scorned before he picked up

the saw on the ground. "Did you see this keel? If I told you how to build a vessel, how to build a steam vessel, if "I" died one day, would you be able to build an aircraft carrier?"

"That's the scientist's job," Carmen said with an indifferent voice.

"Science and capital were tied together from the very beginning. Technology determines the space human live in, and capital expands the space. That is the nature of the science and capital. Did you give back all your economic knowledge to your Harvard professor? I suggest you reread the Schumpeter function chapter."

The old father returned to working in front of the tree truck and ignored his son.

He stood beside the lake for a long time. It was not until the sky in the distance began to turn yellow did he finally turn around and leave the wooden hut of his father.

...

The next morning, Jiang Chen took a flight to Australia. Because of the combination of airport size and traffic, the airport located in Coro Island only had flights to nearby Australia and New Zealand. Therefore, to travel from Han to Xin, he would have to the first fly to Australia.

After a rather lengthy journey, Jiang Chen finally got out of the plane at Coro Island. It was midnight.

When he walked out of the airport, Ayesha was already waiting for him.

"Head to the presidential palace," Jiang Chen said directly after getting on the car.

Ayesha nodded and started the car.

"Do you not need to go home and rest? As she drove, she nonchalantly asked.

"There is no need. If they don't see me, someone might lose sleep

because of it," Jiang Chen mocked before leaning back in the seat with his eyes closed.

Ayesha grinned as she didn't speak for the remainder of the trip.

When they arrived at the presidential palace, he explained his identity, and the guard immediately let him pass through. With an attendant's reception, Jiang Chen arrived in Zhang Yapin's office.

After a few days apart, the guy was more haggard. It was clear that the troubles had gotten the better of him. When he saw Jiang Chen, he looked relived as he couldn't wait to greet him.

"You're finally back." Zhang Yapin smiled bitterly when he looked at Jiang Chen

"Don't ask me what to do yet, explain to me the situation first," Jiang Chen said concisely.

Zhang Yapin nodded and began to explain to Jiang Chen what has happened in the last few days.

First, after Ivan ordered to take out the fishing boats obstructing the construction of the military facility and led the force in a standoff with the country F coastal guards. The F coastal guards were first extremely aggressive and hostile, they didn't think the three Xin fast boats were competition.

Just as they were about to enter the Xin territory to demand people, Ivan took out the weapons without wavering.

They were dumbfounded. They didn't think Xin would have the courage to do this as they were without a plan. Although the coastal guards were equipped with light weapons, the coastal guards didn't dare make a decision that could cause a severe repercussion in their diplomatic relationship. Since once the first shot is fired, it would be a regional conflict. So they could only remain in a standoff, at the same time, reporting the message to their superior.

Finally, the F president Aquino came in contact with Zhang

Yapin. But Zhang Yapin didn't realize what had happened at New Moon Island since the national defense was the responsibility of Celestial Trade Company.

Zhang Yapin realized something was off immediately and got in touch with Ivan before he learned about the event.

Okay, he had to admit that when Ivan sunk the reckless fishing boats looking for trouble – Oh no, pirate boats – he too did curse in his mind. "This feels fu*king great." Although the relationship between the Pannu Islands and country F was not a generational feud, the grudge has been building among the public for a while.

But he was the Xin president, after all, he had to consider national interest above his personal emotions. After he calmed down, a drop of cold sweat rolled down his forehead.

Just the day before, Aquino notified him that if the recovery work could not be commenced within the next three days, country F retain the option of solving this through military means to ensure that the legitimate rights and interests of their citizen abroad are maintained.

But when Zhang Yapin said the last sentence, Jiang Chen was immediately unhappy.

"Fu*k the legitimate rights and interests," Jiang Chen cursed out, "Military means? Funny, I will teach them a lesson."

He hasn't cursed like this for a long time.

"Country F has an enlisted military of one hundred and twenty thousand people... We might not even beat a battalion of theirs," Zhang Yapin said in a small voice.

Jiang Chen glared at him and laughed.

"Who said we would fight them."

"But they are already threatening us like this," Zhang Yapin said with a bitter face.

"Country F always maintained an image of being a victim in sea territory disputes to garner the compassion of the international society. They would never send out their military force to start a war with us."

"But-"

Zhang Yapin was still not convinced, but Jiang Chen interrupted him.

"Also, the key is still Han and UA. Do you remember what I told you? Maintain neutrality and don't sway to either superpower. If country F decide to take military actions against us, it will force us to join Han as an ally, and Han would definitely not let go of an opportunity to break the first and second islands' chains and proactively provide us with assistance. The UA would be reluctant to see the Han gaining a military base in the western Pacific Ocean, so they must restrain its ally from being too reckless.

Culturally, Xin was more similar to Han, but ideologically, it was more aligned with UA. This situation resulted in both superpowers think the country would join forces with them.

"Because we haven't chosen a side yet, we are safe," Jiang Chen patted president Zhang on the shoulder as he said with sincere words.

Although Jiang Chen had his reasons, Zhang Yapin still thought it was a bit forced.

"But why don't we stand by the UA and continue the diplomatic strategy of the previous regime?" he asked in a low voice.

Jiang Chen's eyebrows raised.

"Because I don't fu*king want to."

Chapter 352: Refuse to Apologize

The private military contractor was the legal term for mercenary, it was also a term that gave all the head of the states a headache, but they were unable to part away from it.

They act ruthlessly and treat war like a business. To complete the mission, they could ignore international laws, disregard civilian casualties, toss aside any moral concerns, and complete the most challenging task using the lowest costing method. They have a despicable name, but their hirer would not need to burden their terrible reputation. They were more effective than an army.

Talking about the mercenary, the UA must be mentioned here. There is no other country that has a better understanding of mercenaries than them. Similar to how only thugs could understand gangsters.

From the Persian Gulf to Afghanistan, the reason why the black blood flowing among the steel parts could successfully move from Third World countries to the First World was that half the effort could be attributed to the lawless mercenaries.

Not only on a battlefield, but in any area with politically unstable conditions, the UA's mercenary could be seen. As long as there was a need, the private military contract company would appear in place of the Pentagon. When it was not appropriate or inconvenient for them to appear, the contractor would carry out the military and foreign diplomat missions for the UA military. Even if it failed, they could deny any connections with the government. It was indeed more convenient compared to the marines because sending out ground force to another country would be a war activity, but not when it was a mercenary force.

And the privatization of the military would bring serious implications to the world. It was an unrealistic hope to demand private mercenaries from following international law.

In 2006, the UA shooting Iraq civilians brought massive commotion to the internet. But it was proved that the perpetrators were two military contractors from Clover Jungle. As to the reasons for committing the crime, it was absurd to the point where it was daunting. A colleague of the perpetrator confirmed that he said he was going to kill someone because he didn't hit anyone in Iraq.

But regardless, the UA military dodged litigation with human rights group, because the killers were not enlisted soldiers.

Although for the UA military had a despicable reputation to begin with, it was not a big deal.

Right now, the international problem between Xin and F was the same.

Disregarding the fishing boats that trespassed into the military zone, disregarding Ivan's "one-minute warning", which fit the standards of "effective warning", it was still undetermined internationally if the military actions of mercenaries should be considered an act of war.

Then the problem arose. Xin hired private mercenaries for its national defense, and the private mercenary group executed according to the law and sunk the F country fishing boats disregarding the warning, is Xin really at wrong for this incident?

Any country has the right to shoot trespassers of its military facility, but only a few countries would execute this right. The most humanitarian way was to remove the trespassers, or capture and deport them to avoid international conflict.

Is there any country that executed this right? Of course, on July 11th of 2008, a South Korean tourist accidentally entered a military zone of North Korea and was shot on site by North Korean soldiers. Although North Korea was not wrong, unfortunately, the South Korean government immediately announced a restriction of all South Koreans from visiting North Korea.

But what Xin faced was much less severe, because it was the private military contractor that sunk the fishing boats, not the Xin army.

Zhang Yapin's newly formed cabinet must be praised for their work in handling emergency public relationship issues.

Jiang Chen only had an order, it was to "Never compromise on territorial issues, never give in to the question of sovereignty, and never apologize for the lack of mistakes". However, the politicians ended up being the defenders of the policy internationally.

Although Xin's defense minister had no troops to work with, he still offered constructive comments. For example, shifting the blame to solve the problem. Insisting that it was the Celestial Trade Company that sunk the ships and not the order of the department of national defense.

Therefore, the responsibilities were blamed continuously on the other party.

The situation dragged on for over half a month before Jiang Chen permitted the wreckage recovery process to begin.

Although they didn't permit country F boats from entering the territory to assist with the recovery process, Xin still invited some international media stations to participate to ensure the process was "just".

But what shocked everyone was that there were assault rifles found on the F country's fish boats.

As to why there were assault rifles on the fishing boats, the media teams all had varying opinions ranging from the fishermen being framed to they actually possessed those weapons. In the end, no consensus was formed.

At the same time, the reckless acts of F fishermen near New Moon Island were organized and published, including several acts of intentionally sinking Xin fishing boats. The 50-minute

documentary included a dictation from the son of the victim and documented records. It was published on a social media platform before Future 1.0's news platform transmitted the video to the world and attached to it a visible headline.

<Pirates or fishermen? The reckless acts of F country fishermen with the support of the government.>

The video was only published for a day before it surpassed ten million views. Other media stations all began to transmit the video as it caused massive controversy internationally. Almost all the opinions compassionate to country F turned into criticisms of country F's crimes.

The F government immediately jumped out and blamed Future International for the lack of truth and exaggeration in the video, as well as the lack of neutrality a media should possess. They should not have a bias just because they have a construction contract with Xin.

At the same time, the F country spokesperson demanded Future International immediately delete all associated comments and issue an apology.

Would country F apologize to a bunch of monkeys? The answer was of course not.

Future International issued a statement stating that the video did not represent the views of the company. Future 1.0 is only a platform and not the publisher of the video. Future International will not bear any responsibility. At the same time, Future International, with the justification of freedom of speech, refuse to delete the video and refuse to apologize.

Although the action caused strong discontent from country F, it certainly gained the support of other parties.

Because of this, Future International didn't suffer any losses but instead benefited from this dispute.

...

"You pigs!" Aquino cursed at the foreign minister of country F, "How many times do I have to say this, remain strong on the stance! Pressure their government! We have an army of one hundred and twenty thousand soldiers, that's more than six times their population!"

"But president... we are already aggressive in our statements, some of the statements could even be viewed as an act of aggression, but they don't seem to be afraid of us," the foreign affair minister said with a bitter smile.

Aquino paused for a moment.

"Looks like it is time to teach them a lesson. These monkeys in the Pacific don't know any better," the defense minister said wickedly.

"But the UA wants us to remain restrained on this issue. Excessive pressure may cause the neutral nation to lean towards Han," the foreign affair minister reminded.

"But if we don't do anything, our citizens will be unhappy," the defense minister argued back.

Aquino fell into deep thought as he debated the cabinet members' arguments.

Suddenly, a grimace look flashed through his eyes.

"Mercenaries... Mercenaries, right, excellent."

He already had an idea in his mind.

Chapter 353: Seaweed That Could Generate Electricity

In this month, Xin was indeed in a turbulence of problems. Because of too many headlines originating from there, a lot of the press decided to send a reporter to the station to acquire first-hand information.

Other than that, there were more tourists interested in exploring this not-yet-developed island out of curiosity. The streets of Coro Island were filled with tourists in backpacks.

A country with only nine islands and a government that didn't control its armies - some of the far-thinking organizations even expressed that this was a jewel of a true democracy... The expression on the puppet president's face would certainly be interesting when he heard these words.

The news was a form of advertisement -there weren't a lot of chances for the country to make headlines in the international section.

Before that, no one had ever heard of Pannu Islands in the Pacific Ocean but following the recent series of events as well as Future International's role in purposely stirring up the conversation, a lot more people began to have an impression of the small Pacific country.

Regardless if the impression was positive or not, it certainly paved the way for future marketing. Once the basic and tourism infrastructure completed development and the political situation stabilized, there certainly would be a crowd willing to come to the mystical island, enjoy the beauty of the west Pacific, and experience the unique culture.

With the current rate of construction, the soonest they could be ready was within half a year, slowest within a year.

The day wasn't far away.

...

While Zhang Yapin had a headache to deal with, the perpetrator of everything, Jiang Chen, was enjoying his life. Although he promised he would take care of this, he only left Zhang Yapin with one clear instruction of never apologizing before he abandoned the issue.

Then Jiang Chen headed to New Moon Island for a few days and who knows what he did on the island.

Regarding country F's potential impending revenge, he didn't seem to be concerned as the major shareholder. Zhang Yapin was unsure whether he was confident or just plain arrogant.

From the perspective of the Xin president, he obviously wanted him to be the former.

In the next few days, Jiang Chen spent his time on a boat around the islands. Of course, it wasn't for fun but rather, for business.

Because of the ten billion dollar project, he became the largest real estate owner of Pannu with 110 square kilometers on the main island, 70 square kilometers on the other island in addition to the sea territory near the equator becoming part of his assets. Whether he would develop his territory personally or sell it to other people would all be based on his discretion.

Of course, with this much land, he alone certainly wouldn't be able to develop it all. If left to its own devices, the land would only accumulate weeds. He toured all the land he owned in the past few days and decided how he should develop the land.

After completing all this, there was also good news from the apocalypse.

After half a month of research and experimentation, the improved recipe of nutrient supply was successfully developed. When he heard the news from Lin Lin, he immediately returned to

the apocalypse and took a helicopter to camp 27.

When he arrived underground, he found the director of the research team in the empty fallout shelter.

"I heard you finished it?" When Jiang Chen saw the slim middle-aged man, he hastily jumped to the topic.

Wang Fangpin looked at Jiang Chen in excitement as he quickly nodded his head.

"We finished it - yesterday, we completed the trial process. It's hard to believe we did it; we previously thought we were just improving on the recipe, but we somehow made a technological breakthrough in the live cell preparation field."

"Technological breakthrough?" Jiang Chen took a moment to digest this before his face turned to shock.

In the apocalypse covered in ruins, it was a feat to replicate the technology from before the war, let alone make any technological breakthroughs. But now, Wang Fangpin told him that the research team managed to do just that.

"That's right." Wang Fangpin nodded in excitement. "Following your requirements, to compress the production cost and improve the nutrient supply, we chose to use seaweed that has the most yield and shortest growth cycle. But when we were in the process of induced differentiation of the seaweed cells, surprisingly, we created a new type of seaweed."

"What is it?" Jiang Chen was drawn into it.

"A type of seaweed that can generate electricity!" Wang Fangpin said, ecstatic.

Jiang Chen was truly stunned.

Energy was always a critical priority in development, whether it was in the wasteland or the modern world. At the end of the 21st century of this world, biological power generation was the

research priority of the three countries before there was a miraculous breakthrough in nuclear fusion power generation and before the first space elevator was built. It was only then that Hydrogen-3 was continually transported back to the earth to create the relatively cheap nuclear fusion battery. It cooled down the investment in biological power generation.

One gram of hydrogen fusion generation created an equivalent power equal to the complete combustion of 11.2 tons of standard coal along with preserving the environment. Such a massive amount of energy was leagues ahead of other types of power generation techniques. Because of this, although other power generation methods all possessed the theoretical potential to develop further, no one conducted more research.

But whether it was in the wasteland or in the modern world, renewable clean energy dominated the large market! Just like in Pannu Islands, since the area was designated as a tourist area, the coal-fired generation plant with relatively high pollution would not be built on the island. The island could only use the high cost and low-efficiency tidal power generation combined with solar power to meet the energy needs of the islands.

But if this existed, the Pannu Islands' massive sea would provide Xin with an endless amount of energy! Xin would no longer need to worry about power.

It was certainly a pleasant surprise to make a breakthrough in biotechnology during the nutrient supply recipe development process. Jiang Chen was astonished.

"The seaweed cells during photosynthesis cause a special photographic effect, creating a trace amount of electricity within the content of the cell. Although the electricity of a single cell is negligible, it is substantial for an entire seaweed plant." Wang Fangpin began to explain the theory behind this type of seaweed. Although he explained it in simple terms, Jiang Chen was only interested in the last sentence.

"What's the power generation amount per area?" Jiang Chen couldn't help but ask.

"The current power generational efficiency is relatively low; it can only achieve 0.1 kilowatts per square meter. Most of the power is converted into heat, diffusing and increasing the temperature of the nearby water region, and there are also concerns about electricity diffusion under water. But with the prediction of the mathematical model, if all these problems are fixed, it would generate up to 1 kilowatt per square meter."

"1 kilowatt per square meter!" Jiang Chen was again stunned.

If it were solar generation, 10 kilowatts of energy would require 40 panels with an area approximately equivalent to 64 square meters. Therefore, the energy generation would equate to 0.15 kilowatt per square meter! The "biological generator" used solar energy, but its electricity generation was 6.6 times better than traditional solar panels!

With the stunned look on Jiang Chen's face, Wang Fangpin was relieved.

When they learned that there weren't a lot of nuclear fusion batteries on the surface and that the base primarily used solar panels for power generation, he immediately thought of the stagnated power generational technology at the end of the 21st century. He happened to be a scientist in biotechnology as his first idea was biological power generation.

While the technology was yet to be completed, it wasn't a hard task to create it standing on top of the giant. Just like a math problem that couldn't be done by an elementary student could easily be solved in high school.

Because of the disconnect between moon and earth, the outdated power generation technology again had its purpose.

To be honest, their research team had completed the nutrient

supply recipe five days ago. The reason why they chose to report their findings five days later was to research about seaweed power generation. It wasn't a coincidence that they discovered the cell, but rather the result of genetic modification. He was afraid of telling Jiang Chen because he feared this dictator would penalize them for using up excessive research resources and intentionally delaying the reporting of the research findings.

Now that Jiang Chen was pleased with their research, he felt relieved.

With this, because this topic gained the traction, there was hope to continue their research; they would no longer need to live back on the surface and suffer.

But their concern was excessive, Jiang Chen didn't mind them doing "personal work," since their research all belonged to him in the end anyway.

"You guys did a great job! Excellent, what rewards do you want?" Jiang Chen laughed as he patted Wang Fangpin on the shoulder.

"No need for rewards." Wang Fangpin shook his hands and smiled. "Just let us stay in the fallout shelter to continue our research. We have some achievements in the biological field."

"I must reward you for your contribution to the base." Jiang Chen thought for a moment before he had an idea.

"I have an idea. To reward you for your outstanding contribution to the base's energy problem, I will reward you five with the honor of "outstanding scholars," and a "knight emblem." From now on, you will be the knight class of the Fishbone base. Don't underestimate the outstanding scholar name; it would mean that you're permitted to freely enter and leave the fallout shelter without the permission of the camp leader. Even without working on this research project, you can live inside.

Wang Fangpin was ecstatic.

"Thank you, General!"

He had no interest in becoming part of the knight class. He never visited the Fishbone base before nor did he want to. His only wish was to stay in the safe and comfortable fallout shelter.

"No need to thank me now, I will only grant you the honor after you complete the project." Jiang Chen smiled.

"Count on us, we'll definitely complete this project!" Wang Fangpin promised.

"Then I will wait for your good news. Let's not talk about this anymore. Take me to see the improved nutrient supply."

Seeing the nutrient supply was the priority of Jiang Chen's trip. The faster it was produced, the sooner he could make money. He didn't forget that he had thirty billion in debt.

Chapter 354: Nutrient Supply Plant

Ange Island, located at the southern tip of Pannu Island near New Guinea, was the third largest island of Xin.

The island was shaped like a pear and the mountain sat at the east end of the island while south of the mountain was the cliffs. The island was covered in dense vegetation with only the plains on the north side settled with people. The population of the island was 5372 in the municipality Ange City, the second largest city of Pannu Islands.

Although it was the second largest city after Coro Island, the economy of the island was still comprised of mostly fisheries along with sugar cane, banana and coconut plantations as the secondary industry. Regarding the crops and meat, the island relied on shipments from Australia's Darwin port. The island didn't possess a deep water harbor, but it had a harbor capable of docking vessels with a smaller displacement.

For the residents of Ange Island, today marked the start of a new chapter.

Why? Because after a month of construction, Future International's subsidiary, Future Biology, completed construction of their pharmaceutical and seaweed growth plant. But for the people of Ange Island, they were focused on the plan to hire locals.

To Ange Island that had a history of a high unemployment rate, it was certainly great news.

<50 people with high school diplomas get a monthly salary of 1000 USD per month. 20 people with university degrees get a monthly salary of 1500 USD per month. The contract is signed for twenty years minimum. During this time, the employees must sign a confidentiality agreement and are not permitted to leave the job or the country. At the same time, employees will enjoy the luxury apartment provided by the company, along with a free medical

insurance and pension plan...>

When the hiring information was posted, the entire island erupted in cheers.

To the poor locals, the benefits of the job could be described as insane. They only made a max of 500 USD per month fishing, and the job was also tiring. Even if they didn't know what the job was like, it must be less tiring compared to fishing from morning to night.

Not permitted to leave the job or the country? A lot of people didn't even leave the island for their entire life, let alone the country. They wanted the job to be longer, maybe for their whole life.

Because of the high number of applicants, Future Biology added some additional requirements. For example, high school diploma holders had to know how to dive, drive a boat, be familiar with the sea product farming process, must be a local, and have a family. The first two requirements were a given since almost all the residents on the island lived alongside the sea for their entire life. Although the last two conditions were strange, they were certainly not unacceptable.

After a rigorous selection process, Future Biology quickly hired 70 employees. With Jiang Chen's organization, everyone arrived at New Moon Island for training. The training was just an instructional video recorded at camp 27 with an examination afterwards.

...

While the workers diligently studied the growing process they never learned before, Jiang Chen stood on the dock on the port at Ange Island as he waited for the boat in the distance to approach.

To the person who came down from the boat, Jiang Chen greeted him with a smile and extended his right hand.

"Hello, Doctor Zhan."

Zhan Shujie, 31 years old, Medical student at Tsinghua University life science department majoring in molecular cell biology. He published five papers in the SCI and also published in the famous academic journal "Nature" in the scientific community.

Of course, Jiang Chen never minded an extensive amount of talents. To the top student graduating from Hua' s top university, Jiang Chen generously offered a salary of half a million USD per year.

The young man wasn't tall and he wore a frameless glasses. Although he had a high academic profile as a doctor, he didn't have the "Confucius arrogance" typical of a lot of top students. He looked like someone easy to get along with.

"Hello, Mr. Jiang." Zhan Shujie smiled and warmly held onto Jiang Chen's hand.

Regarding the legendary individual who achieved a net asset of over ten billion by just the age of 23, Zhan Shujie had heard tales of him before. Previously, he thought this boss would be somewhat prideful, but he was actually easy to talk to which made him quite impressed.

"Haha, let's cut the flattering words. Do you need me to take to where you'll be living?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"No need, I want to first take a tour of the ... pharmaceutical plant, is that okay?"

When he talked about the pharmaceutical plant, his eyes were flashed with fervor.

"Of course, as you wish. This car will belong to you from now on, and this is the driver." Jiang Chen sat back into the car.

Celestial Trade's bodyguard was the driver and he was injected with E-grade genetic vaccine. Whether in armed combat or just close body combat, he met the standards of the special force. As the

driver of doctor Zhan Shujie, his job was to protect his safety and monitor him.

Since what Zhan Shujie would present to the world would shock the entire world, he already signed a confidentiality agreement, but just in case, it was better to be safe.

The car soon arrived at Future Biology's pharmaceutical plant. At the top of the structure inside the wall, Zhan Shujie saw the name of the plant.

<Future Biology Nutrient Supply Plant>

[Nutrient supply? That's an interesting name...] Zhan Shujie muttered to himself despite reading about the company before he came.

The two security guards on duty at the pharmaceutical plant were also from Celestial Trade. They wore carbon nano-injected bulletproof vests with Reaper Assault Rifles and tactical helmets.

"Is it not safe here?" Zhan Shujie anxiously looked at the two soldiers as he said, worried.

"Don't worry, it's extremely safe here. But just in case, I hired two security personnel to protect the safety of the employees and to also protect the security of the high tech equipment inside.

When they got off the car and walked into the plant, the soldiers at the door subconsciously wanted to salute to Jiang Chen, but Jiang Chen stopped them with a look.

They walked to the empty ground of the plant as Jiang Chen first pointed at the direction near the coast.

"The plant is a seaweed farm, used to breed our company-developed DH-type seaweed. This seaweed is derived from the induction of the differentiation of Sargassum, which can produce and accumulate a variety of animal proteins in seaweed cells-

"That's impossible!" Zhan Shujie was stunned as he looked at

Jiang Chen skeptically. "As far as I know, in the field of the preparation of plants for animal protein, Hokkaido University in Japan is currently at the forefront of the field. But they are only able to do it with the production of a plant to produce interfering hepatitis virus protein animal protein and they're only in the experimental stage. Also, I've never heard that someone could use a plant to produce a variety of animal protein! Also, seaweed cells aren't embryonic liver cells, so how could the orientation-induced technique work? In theory, this wouldn't work!"

Zhan Shujie blasted at Jiang Chen, while Jiang Chen tilted his head and shook his finger to show off.

"Nothing is impossible, especially in my company. If you don't believe me, just take a sample yourself."

Zhan Shujie looked at Jiang Chen still with skepticism and took a deep breath.

"Okay, I'll believe it once I see it. But I have another question: growing the new species with the open environment - would that affect the biological sphere of the nearby sea?"

"No." Jiang Chen shook his head. "Since it's induced differentiation, the genes of this DH seaweed still belong to Sargassum, so the spores produced by the progeny are also Sargassum. The telomeres of this DH-type seaweed are precisely targeted like cancer cells, which are theoretically infinite. The task of workers is to feed nutrients every day, then trim the 'leaves.'

This was what the researchers at the fallout shelter told him, and he didn't have the knowledge to explain much further, so Jiang Chen changed the topic and pointed at the structure the size of three basketball fields.

"The key equipment is inside. Your work is to coordinate the entire pharmaceutical plant's production, take samples to examine if the DH seaweed is thriving, and take samples to ensure the quality of the nutrient supply... Of course, all of the details are in

the work manual. I will give you a USB and the videos on it will teach you how to control the equipment inside the plant. If there are any problems you can't solve, please contact me."

As Jiang Chen spoke, he took Zhan Shujie inside the pharmaceutical plant and pointed at the machine in the center.

"This is it - the production line of nutrient supply, the core of the entire plant."

On the left was the organic converter with the shape of a cylinder; it could extract nutrients from the specially produced seaweed to process into the nutrient supply. On the right hand was an assembly for bottling as it would place the extract into coin-shaped plastic tubes before they were sealed.

Regarding this set of equipment, Zhan Shujie didn't seem to be too interested, but regarding the organic converter, it completely drew all his attention.

"The molecular filter from the legend is inside this machine?"

"Ahem, not from the legend. Our company's molecular orientation screening technology is mature. The molecular filter is only one of the parts of the organic converter - there are also other devices inside." Jiang Chen came up with an elaborate story.

"What else?" The fervent passion once again appeared on Zhan Shujie's face.

It was the zeal a scientist possessed when he wanted to learn about a technology he didn't know about.

"Trade secret," Jiang Chen said straightforwardly.

Zhan Shujie paused for a moment as he realized that he was overzealous, so he apologized, "Sorry, I got too excited."

"It's okay, I understand how you feel," Jiang Chen said gently.

Zhan Shujie walked in front of the organic converter as he put his hand on the cold steel. He exclaimed.

"Hard to believe... that this breakthrough technology will first be used in the civil field to produce a drink. This... this is a waste of God-given technology."

To be honest, two reasons drew him here. The half a million salary and the technology Future Biology said they possessed.

Plant cell orientation induced differentiation could produce a variety of animal protein algae. High-precision molecular screening technology - any of technology here - could contend for the Nobel prize.

But this guy wanted to use these to produce a drink?

Chapter 355: Trade Secret

"Ahem, let me clarify. This isn't a drink - it's a type of healthy food that can allow you to lose weight," Jiang Chen reminded Zhan Shujie.

It was disrespectful to call the era-breaking liquid food a drink. This was the standard military food in the 22nd century. Not only was it used in the military, the liquid food was also used extensively in the aerospace field. To bring as much food as possible within the allocated space, the nutrient supply was undoubtedly the first choice for all astronauts...

Of course, Jiang Chen didn't deny the ridicule of Zhan Shujie stating it was a waste of God-given technology. Regardless, right now, he only planned to sell this as weight loss medicine.

"Is there a difference?" Zhan Youjie stared at Jiang Chen emotionally. His persona as a non-talkative researcher faded as he almost spoke to Jiang Chen with a lecturing tone, "Let's disregard everything else. Just the seaweed cell directed differentiation technology - do you know how it would shake up the scientific field? Without any exaggeration, it would cause an earthquake in the biology academic world!"

Zhan Shujie let out a sigh. "And that molecular filter. While I'm not studying organic chemistry, I can't say much but I can be certain of one point - if our university lab had this, our ability to research in the chemistry field would increase substantially!"

"So?" Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

Zhan Shujie was dumbfounded before he realized.

Even though he said that much, so what?

It belonged to him, and if the Xin government permitted the technology to exist in a private establishment's hands, everyone could take the technology away from him.

"I'm only a businessman, and you are my employee. You just need to remember this point. Since this technology belongs to me, I have the rights to decide where I should use it," Jiang Chen said nonchalantly.

If the technology became public, it would undoubtedly cause unnecessary trouble. Therefore, in terms of production, Jiang Chen planned to keep the technology low-key. From the outside, the plant was only growing a type of Sargassum, and the pharmaceutical plant would process the Sargassum.

"Yes," Zhan Shujie said helplessly.

Considering how disappointed Zhan Shujie looked, Jiang Chen walked up and patted him on the shoulder.

"Don't be disappointed; if you work diligently, maybe I will permit you to learn more about the top technology."

"Hopefully, one day that will happen... If I want to study the structure of the DH seaweed cell, would you mind?" Zhan Shujie looked at Jiang Chen keenly.

"Of course not. I'll even sponsor you to build a lab here. Of course, this is on the condition that you follow the rules of the company and not take a single cell out of that door." Although he used a joking tone to say these words, he didn't look like he was joking at all.

The two soldiers at the door were there to prevent thieves, both inside and outside.

"Don't worry, I'm only curious about how plant cells produce animal proteins. I can guarantee with my morale that I won't disclose what I see to any third parties," Zhan Shujie said.

"I trust you."

Jiang Chen had no qualms about allowing Zhan Shujie to study it since it was impossible to reproduce it with current technological capabilities. Just like how no matter how much you observed the

cells inside you, you could not produce them at will.

"Thank you. If I can't understand how it works, I might even lose sleep at night." Zhan Shujie looked at Jiang Chen graciously.

"Don't worry, I hope you can sleep well at night... Also, don't research during work hours."

"I will do it outside of work."

Jiang Chen nodded, pleased. He hired people to work for him, not research the technology he possessed. Of course, if Doctor Zhan could achieve some inspiration from the research, it would still be beneficial to Jiang Chen. Since he signed the confidentiality agreement, Jiang Chen would not let him walk.

After he took Zhan Shujie to the seaside mansion he would be living in, Jiang Chen spoke a few more words before he left.

Currently, Future Biology was only an empty shell. Although the pharmaceutical plant was completed, the team responsible for marketing, strategy, and management had yet to be established. All this had to be finished. Although he could contract the work out to headhunters, he wanted to hire the individuals personally.

Of course, if he left the work to Xia Shiyu, he knew she would take it. But it wasn't nice, especially since she had a lot on her plate already with Future Technology. If he gave her something entirely unrelated to a tech company, he was afraid that she might be overworked.

He took his private boat back to Coro island and returned to the mansion that previously belonged to Johnny.

When he purchased the mansion from the auction, the blood on the wall was already cleaned. The furniture was also replaced and the daunting bullet holes were filled in. Just from the appearance alone, the signs of a violent battle previously fought there were non-existent.

Since it was a "haunted house" with people dead inside, out of

filial respect, Jiang Chen would not make his parents live inside. But as a non-spiritual believer, Jiang Chen didn't mind making this mansion his own. At least until the mansion on New Moon Island was finished, he would live here.

Then after the mansion on New Moon Island was completed... It wasn't a terrible decision to make this place into the "Xin Revolution Museum" and fool some tourists.

When Jiang Chen walked into the kitchen, Ayesha was cooking fish with an apron wrapped around her.

A smile appeared on Ayesha's usually expressionless face when she heard the footsteps from the door. Without turning her head, she said, "You're back."

With the delicious smell of the dishes, all his worries were swept away as he approached the pot, drooling.

"Looks like today is going to be a great meal."

"It'll be done soon." Ayesha stirred the flavorful, thick soup with a spoon. The tip of her mouth curved up as she said tenderly, "I learned this from aunt Li. She said you really like to drink fish soup, so I wanted to try to make it."

"I miss the taste." Jiang Chen looked at the white fog rising as he exclaimed.

He remembered when he was young, his father occasionally went fishing with his coworkers and his family would drink fish soup for two days. Now that he had money, he ate a lot of extravagant food, but this nostalgic feeling was hard to come by these days.

<The taste of freshwater fish and sea fish should be different... >
Jiang Chen stared at the pot of soup as his mind drifted off.

"If you like it, I can cook it for you every day," Ayesha said in a quiet voice.

"Ayesha..."

Touched by her gentleness, Jiang Chen hugged her from behind.

"Mhmm."

Ayesha closed her eyes as she felt the warmth on her back.

To be honest, Jiang Chen first just wanted to hug her, but he started to feel aroused as soon he touched her body.

Ayesha's face began to heat up as she felt the naughty hands wandering around her body. She turned around and rolled her eyes before she put down the spoon and set the heat to low.

Although she acted timidly on the outside, when it was just the two of them, her passion was no less than Sun Jiao's.

Just as Jiang Chen was prepared to investigate her body, the phone rang.

The intimate atmosphere suddenly cooled off.

Jiang Chen awkwardly took out his phone and prepared to pick up.

But Ayesha snatched the phone, threw it in the fruit basket then kissed Jiang Chen and pressed him against the fridge.

Just like a naughty sheep falling into the arms of the big bad wolf.

The temperature began to rise again.

The phone rang and rang...

Chapter 356: Unknown Militants

Right now, inside the New Moon Island command center, the light on the screen flashed while ten workers busily worked in front of the computer. On the big screen of the command center was a vessel with 400 tons of displacement. It had no flags and just a few people were on deck.

It was the image captured by the hummingbird drone.

Based on the analysis, the destination of the vessel was Xin's New Moon Island.

A month ago, Jiang Chen set up a Wide Range Life Signal Detector on the island to monitor the life signals within a 500 kilometer radius. The device was certainly useful in a sea territory. If it were set to the life signals of the fish, no fish would escape this device. The same would go for any human if it was set to detect humans.

Since the technology was already mature on the wasteland, it wasn't hard for the Fishbone workers to assemble an enhanced version. It was easy to censor one's signal as a chip inside the EP could do the job. However, in the modern world, no one would escape the eyes of this device.

Therefore, the technology widely used in the 22nd century for search and rescue became radar technology for Jiang Chen. As long as it wasn't drones, no living creature would escape its eyes.

Ten minutes ago, the radar station detected the information of this vessel. It was a transportation vessel, but they caught the signal of one hundred people onboard.

During this sensitive period of time, any of the vessels near their territory would be monitored.

When the vessel was still 50 kilometers away from the border, after confirming that the vessel wasn't traveling through a

standard international route, the soldiers at the command center first determined that the vessel may be smuggling goods, so they immediately contacted the patrol boat in the nearby territory and approached the ship.

Ten minutes later, the vessel entered Xin's border. Then it adjusted its course and headed straight to New Moon Island under the cover of darkness.

The patrol boat approached the vessel four kilometers away and attempted to enter the radio channel of the vessel. However, the vessel entered radio silence and ignored all communication attempts. The patrol boat, realizing the oddity of the situation, did not take the risk of approaching the boat but instead, released hummingbird drones.

Under the night's veil, the drones flew across the ocean surface, approached the vessel suspected of smuggling, and entered the vessel.

The image transmitted back shocked the entire command center!

The boat didn't contain smugglers, but instead, fully equipped soldiers! The disguised sailors on deck were all equipped with pistols and wore bulletproof vests.

There were a total of 100 unknown militants.

The vessel was also equipped with landing boats and other military equipment. Other than the lack of country identification, it was a force no inferior to an actual army.

Realizing the oddity of the situation, Ivan immediately ordered New Moon Island to enter combat ready state. All soldiers were fully equipped and gathered at the airway, waiting for the order.

Barkary put down the phone and looked anxiously at Ivan.

"Boss isn't picking up."

He couldn't reach Jiang Chen. With Jiang Chen's C-grade genetic

vaccine improved body, it would take at least one hour before he "finished."

Ivan silently looked at the screen in the command center. The vessel was approaching New Moon Island at high speeds. There was only two hundred kilometers of distance between the enemy and the island. It only took a moment before they were 80 kilometers inside the border.

Judging by the situation at hand, they came with not the friendliest intentions.

"The boss is purposely not picking up." Ivan seemed to have understood something as he told Barkary in an undertone.

"Purposely not picking up? Why?" The black young man was puzzled.

"Boss provided us with the most advanced equipment and told us how to handle the situation. If we cannot even handle this small problem and have to call him every time, then I am not fit for the job of a commander." Ivan adjusted his hat as his stare on the vessel in the screen became more determined.

...

The rumbling sound of helicopters breaking through the sea waves roared. Four black shadows forming into an arrow formation headed to the vessel trespassing illegally.

Four lights shined from afar and lit up the deck of the vessel. When they realized they were discovered, the crew on deck all hid behind containers.

With their reaction speed, their opponents were no ordinary men.

"No.0371 vessel. No.0371 vessel. We are the coastal guard of Celestial Trade. We suspect your vessel contains illegal goods. Please immediately stop and cooperate with the search. I repeat. Please immediately stop and cooperate with the search."

The four helicopters all opened the channel and broadcasted to the vessel.

But the vessel seemed like it didn't hear anything as they continued to maintain their course.

At the same time, inside the captain's room of the vessel:

"How is that possible? We closed all radio devices on board - how could they discover us 200 kilometers away?!" Captain Santos smashed the table.

Sitting across him was country F Lieutenant, Kluse. He remained silent.

Half a month ago, they retired from their previous positions with the direction of the defense minister to enter the disguised mercenary force. Their mission was to execute a secret military mission named "Revenge" to punish the criminals who sunk the fishing boats.

The political purpose of the mission was to demonstrate country F's firm stance to the public. They pretended to be mercenaries to avoid the possible foreign affair problem that could arise by sending the actual army of country F.

In theory, the mission should not be difficult. The opponent was only a privately held security company. There was no way their combat abilities could surpass the elite soldiers who participated in joint military exercises. Based on the satellite image, although artillery bases were built on the island, no advanced artilleries were installed.

Approach the island, stop the vessel, drop the landing boats, attack, retreat...

With their plan, before the sun rose, they would escape at the port of MLL Island and receive the recognition and praise from the defense minister.

"Someone leaked the mission details?" Kluse remained calm as he

looked at the four bright dots with eyes narrowed.

200 kilometers distance.

Even if the UA Aegis aircraft carrier used its array radar, it could only detect within a radius of 40 km without any blind spots. It wasn't a technical limitation, but due to the curvature of the earth, it was as difficult to detect a boat in the sea 200 kilometers away as pinpointing a piece of gold from the desert.

Early warning aircraft? That's even more impossible. No country would sell it, especially to a private security company.

"What do we do?" The captain remained cool.

"Leave it up to me."

Kluse picked up the assault rifle leaning on the table. With a wicked smile, he moved his neck and stretched his body before he headed out.

Chapter 357: Battle on the Vessel

As the captain of this interception mission, Wilson stared at the disobedient vessel as gloom shadowed his face.

"No response," The deputy command said concisely and closed the broadcast outside of the helicopter.

"Prepare to drop the seal team."

"Roger... Wait, what is that?"

A few sailor-looking people ran in front of a container, pushed down the metal plate of the container, dragged out an anti-air machine gun with a belt on the bottom.

"It's an anti-air machine gun! " The soldier sitting at the hatch of the Black Eagle yelled. At the same time, he raised the Reaper Assault Rifle and began to shoot at the deck. But because of the sea wind and far distance, it didn't hit anything.

"Stop! Disperse formation! Immediately!" Wilson roared into the radio.

"Roger."

The four Black Eagle helicopters immediately ascended up to stop the forward motion and dispersed their formation.

The two anti-air machine guns were set up and began to unleash its furious firepower at the four Black Eagles surrounding the vessel.

But because of Wilson preemptively adjusted distance, the furious firepower didn't cause any injury to Celestial Trade. The bullets flew over a thousand meters, losing its destructive power as it only left a trail of tiny dents on the Black Eagles. Its only purpose was to push the four helicopters three kilometers out.

"Weak!"

The country F soldiers cursed, dragged up the cartridge, and

inserted a new belt of bullets inside.

[Only a bunch of monkeys on the Pacific, and you dare to challenge us? Even Hua would have to respect us; you don't know your limit at all!]

The soldier spat on the deck as he looked at the four bright spots in the distance before he aimed the machine guns again.

Although they retreated, the target of the helicopters remained locked on the vessel. Immediately 12 figures from the four helicopters jumped into the ocean. Soldiers wearing the K1-b type kinetic skeleton dived into the sea, opened their thrust, and transformed into twelve arrays of white bubbles.

At the same time.

Under the veil of nightfall, no one noticed.

"Did they run away?" A country F soldier holding an assault rifle leaned against the container and grinned at his comrade.

"Haha, what would they do if they don't run? Be a target for us? Give me a cigarette..." While he said this, another soldier took out a pack of cigarette and handed him one.

"Feels wet." He cursed and lit up one for himself and one for his comrade.

At the same time, an unusual buzzing sound began to ring around the two.

"What is it-"

Tatata-!

The bullets left a trail of holes on the two's body.

The rifles dropped as four drones weaved through in the night. While they maintained their high speed, the machine gun underneath spat out bullets and unleashed its fury to the militants on deck.

"Area secured!"

"Board the vessel."

"Roger."

Hooks hooked onto the edge of the vessel. With the cover fire of the hummingbird drones, twelve soldiers in amphibious kinetic armor immediately boarded the vessel and quickly ran to the back of the containers to secure a corner of the vessel. They began exchanging fire with the militants on the other side.

"It's the seal team of Xin! Take them down!" A country F soldier disguised as a mercenary crawled behind cover. He shouted while firing back with his rifle.

"Fu*k! What is that-ahhh!"

The drones freely weaved on the deck as it blended into the night sky. It would dash out from any angle and reap the lives on deck.

"Dam*it, what are these things!" Kluse fired with his rifle; he gritted his teeth.

The light from the firing shined onto his distorted face. He didn't have the confidence he had before, only intense fear remained.

The plate-sized drones not only flew at the speed of a fly; it could also fire?! He had seen a lot of advanced technology from the joint military exercises, but he had never seen such terrifying drones. He swore, not even the UA possessed this.

It only took a while before ten something F soldiers fell down in pools of blood, but only two or three drones were shot down. They had never encountered such a lopsided battle.

"Push the machineguns onto the deck! Use heavy weapons!" Afraid of more seals boarding, Kluse yelled into the earpiece as the battle entered turmoil.

"Roger!" A soldier roared while he lowered his body and ran to the back.

Soon after, the anti-air machine guns were pushed onto the deck. The metal plate in the front blocked the incoming bullets. The machine gunner with a menacing laugh began firing at Xin soldiers in the distance.

The bullets shredded the metal containers and suppressed the Xin soldiers from moving forward. Their success was short-lived as a rocket flew up. Like an iron fist, it sent the anti-air machine gun into the sky. Along with it, was the unlucky machine gunner.

Kluse stared at the sky engulfed in flame, his eyes widened in disbelief.

These seals brought rocket launchers!

Kluse regained his attention from the shock and shouted into the radio... "Quick, move the machine guns back!"

But it was too late, another rocket blew the other machine gun into pieces.

Their anti-air power was destroyed. The four Black Eagles began to push forward.

The pitch black muzzles extended from the side of the helicopter. The arm-thick bullets fired from the side. The firepower from the sky revealed the militants hidden behind the containers as the F soldiers all dropped dead.

With cover fire, the twelve soldiers first boarded stood up behind cover while they maintained their shooting position and pushed forward. They would make sure the remaining militants were finished off. As to the bullets, most were blocked by the polyethylene board.

With the assistance of the drones, the militants had no fighting chance.

"Ahhh-! Fu*k, my hand!" Kluse rolled inside the boat. He covered his broken right hand with his left hand. He tumbled and retreated to the bottom of the vessel.

After confirming all enemy units were cleared on the deck, the soldiers entered the control room to stop the vessel. At the same time, the Black Eagles hovered above the deck as the ground force descended.

Thirty two Celestial soldiers quickly entered the vessel. Wilson entered the control room and used the broadcasting system to speak to the resisting militants.

Surrender or die.

The one-sided battle made all the F soldiers lose their courage to fight. When they reached 50% casualties, they finally collapsed and dropped the rifles in their hands and chose to surrender.

Everyone was tied up and sent back to the deck. They waited with guns pointed at them.

The vessel continued its journey to New Moon Island.

But this time, the F soldiers disguised as mercenaries no longer had their original arrogance, the only emotions left were fear and despair.

Chapter 358: Reparations

No secret can't be uncovered using a single truth-telling serum. If there was, then two truth-telling serums would suffice.

The F soldiers were also certainly not soft, especially Kluse who has lost one of his hand. He kept his mouth shut about this throughout, but with the truth-telling serum, mental fortitude was useless.

Celebrate the glory of technology.

41 F soldiers were captured, and 59 soldiers died in the crossfire. Ivan treated the execution of this mission carefully. Not only did he leave radio communication records, but he also recorded the entire duration of the second warning. Then the subsequent resist to cooperate, and the firing of anti-air machine guns was recorded by the cameras on the helicopters.

Jiang Chen was extremely pleased with the way Ivan handled the situation. He needed a commander that would make the "correct judgment" in critical moments like this, rather than a follower that required his direction with any small problems. Sinking the boat that ignored their warnings was the command Jiang Chen had ordered when the Life Signal Radar was established.

All in all, all the evidence were there.

Xin had the complete upper hand in the public's opinion.

There was media coverage on F soldiers pretending to be fishermen, but it was the first time they pretended to be mercenaries to conduct military action against other countries. What made it worse was that they were foolish enough to get caught.

The international community spurred drastic reactions, including Hua. Multiple governments all denounced country F for their unruly actions and the violation of international law. They

stated that they would continue to follow the event closely.

In the beginning, President Aquino and the defense minister continued to state that they were being framed by Xin. But following the release of 41 pleading guilty videos, along with the protest of the families from the 41 soldiers who had survived, the F government completely went mute.

The evidence was all out there, it was futile to defend themselves.

Followed by the tradition of the country, they just would not admit to their actions. But Xin had said that if country F does not give a satisfactory response, Xin will sentence all soldiers who had trespassed or made unlawful entrances into the country to over thirty years in prison.

This forced Aquino into a corner.

Continuing to not admit to being guilty, their soldiers definitely would not be able to return home which meant that their families would be unhappy. But to apologize and plead to the Xin government to release the soldiers, Aquino didn't want to lose his face.

The diplomatic relationship between the two countries entered a turmoil.

But regardless who looked at it, in this round of exchanges, Xin had the complete upper hand.

...

In the mansion on Coro Island, Zhang Yapin stood across from Jiang Chen on the sofa. Ayesha poured them water before leaving the living room.

Perhaps he was thirsty, Zhang Yapin took a sip of the water before he put the cup down.

"I have to thank you for making me so famous internationally."

"No worries." The oblivious Jiang Chen didn't grasp his sarcasm.

"No, no, no, I should worry about it. You killed 59 people this time. If they were not on the wrong side this time, I would be summoned to international court already."

"Haha, I realize you've become much more humorous." Jiang Chen laughed.

"Making the best out of a worse situation." Zhang Yapin revealed a helpless expression.

"Okay, don't pretend to be so overdramatic. This event is great for you," Jiang Chen said.

"In what way?" Zhang Yapin laughed.

"At least you don't have to worry about elections anymore." Jiang Chen crossed his legs as he sunk into the sofa. Then he yawned. "I don't understand much about politics, but after reading so many news articles, I have learned one rule."

"What's the rule?" Zhang Yapin ridiculed.

"To increase support, strong foreign policy is much better than economic growth."

"Isn't that obvious." Zhang Yapin grinned. He initially thought Jiang Chen had a differing perspective, but what he said was common sense.

'Oh? Looks like I accidentally discovered a principle in international relations?" Jiang Chen laughed proudly.

It was a bit tough on him to learn about managing a country as a mechanical engineer. To be honest, Jiang Chen has thought about becoming the president. But after careful consideration, he gave up on the idea.

If he was really to become the president, he had a feeling he would turn the modern world into another apocalypse.

The hidden figure was more suitable for him.

"It's still too early to say election, who knows what will happen in

five years."

"Don't worry, even if you don't have enough votes by that time, I will help you to become re-elected," Jiang Chen took a sip of his tea and said nonchalantly.

Zhang Yapin raised his eyebrows but didn't say anything. Although he personally despised these unlawful actions, they were beneficial for him after all. After feeling conflicted, he remained silent.

Jiang Chen glanced at the clock in the living room. When he saw it was getting late, he said, "Are you here to complain to me about this?"

"Of course not," Zhang Yapin took out a piece of folded paper from his pocket, "I am here to talk about compensation. A total of 976 families were effected totaling 2115 people. Among them, a fair number of people lost their only home. They are currently residing in their friends' or relatives' place.

Objectively speaking, president Zhang was unquestionably a great president. Even in a puppet regime, he still worked for the betterment of the citizens.

"10% of the people are affected? That's a big problem. Let me think..." Jiang Chen scratched his chin.

Zhang Yapin quietly looked at Jiang Chen. He gulped and waited for his response.

"How about this. Provide me with detailed information about the people registered to receive compensation. To the people that lost their home, every family will be compensated with an apartment the size of 120 square meters and the land will be compensated at 50 USD per square meter. For the people who lost their farming land, they will be compensated at 10 USD per square meter and be prioritized in the hiring process. What do you think about this compensation?"

Zhang Yapin's eyes widened, but he had to remind Jiang Chen.

"Every family will be compensated with an apartment 120 square meters? What if someone lived in a 90 square meters apartment?"

"Then they will thank me." Jiang Chen smiled.

Zhang Yapin was amazed by Jiang Chen's words.

He took a deep breath and expressed his gratitude sincerely.

"...Okay, allow me on behalf of Xin's citizens to thank you for your generosity."

"No need."

The reason why he was generous was not that he was a philanthropist, but he had other plans.

The distribution of the Pannu population was extremely uneven on the nine islands. Most of the people were concentrated in the relatively developed Coro and Ange City. The remaining seven islands had a large habitable area, but the population was extremely scarce. Ten square kilometers of land had less than one hundred people inhabiting it. A store couldn't even thrive, let alone boosting the economy. This move was to reallocate the population density. These new apartments will not be built on Coro and Ange Island.

As to the cost, it was not high to begin with.

With an eight-floor high apartment building and eight units per floor, there would be 64 units in the entire building. Even with 1000 families, only 16 buildings would need to be built. With the land price and tax being negligible, the average cost of each building would be one hundred thousand USD. It was nothing compared to Jiang Chen's assets.

Also, he would gain a good reputation because of it, so why not?

"Speaking of prioritizing the hiring process, does your company have any positions available?" Zhang Yapin continued.

"After the tourism facility is complete, it is expected to bring eighty thousand jobs here. Let alone lack of positions, I don't think the population here will be enough. Mhmm... Speaking of this, study the possibility of immigration and decide when to open the doors for that."

"Xin is currently politically unstable. No one would want to come here," Zhang Yapin said bitterly.

Jiang Chen only smiled.

"That might not be true. Trust me, in less than five years. This place will become a destination the world longs for. A new land directed by Xin."

"I have to remind you, this place is only a series of islands."

"Only for now."

Jiang Chen emphasized the word "now".

Chapter 359: Purchasing Ores

<Xin Government remains firm on their stance and denounce country F's shameless actions. Announcement states they will do everything to maintain the sovereignty and rights of the country> - Daily Post

<What's the source of audacity? How could the mysterious Celestial Trade defeat country F's special force? Private force stronger than government army, the safety of the world is in jeopardy> - Washington Post

<Rational negotiation remains the only viable option, country F's aggression causes international embarrassment> - Renren Newspaper

<The devil that cries war? Xin may be the disruptor of regional stability> - Economic News

...

There were at least ten newspapers on Jiang Chen's table, each displaying an interesting perspective. Especially the Economic News, they did a close up of Zhang Yapin's distorted face. Jiang Chen wondered what he would think when he saw the image.

As to the narratives... Some remain neutral, some turned the topic domestic, some favored a certain country while others disagreed. Of course, all the opinions were within Jiang Chen's expectation. Since something like this happened, country F would be more cautious. As to how this foreign relationship problem should be handled, and how they would use the international court platform as well as the 41 captives to scam country F, it was president Zhang's worry.

The door was knocked on gently.

"Come in," Jiang Chen said as he threw the newspapers into the corner.

Ayesha in a maid uniform walked in and put coffee in front of Jiang Chen's table. The white lace skirt, as well as the absolute territory hidden underneath the skirt, made Jiang Chen feel a bit thirsty.

The reason why she wore this was not because it was Jiang Chen's fetish, but purely because Ayesha wanted to.

That's right, it was her hobby.

Since they returned from Kane, Ayesha developed a keen passion for pretty clothes. But because of her traditional perspective, she was unwilling to wear revealing clothes in front of other people. So the five full closets became her "pajamas" and when there was no one home, Ayesha's choice of clothing became "odd".

The maid uniform was okay, but sometimes she would wear a bikini to do chores, and wear only an apron to cook...

"Thank you." Jiang Chen took the coffee.

Ayesha smiled back. Walking behind Jiang Chen, she gently massaged his shoulders.

"You're working every day, take a break once in a while."

"Once everything is on track, I will be free." Jiang Chen put the cup down after taking a sip of his coffee, closed his eyes, and enjoyed Ayesha's massage.

"Mhmm... Only if I could help you," Ayesha said with slight disappointment.

In her mind, she always thought women like Xia Shiyu was more ideal for Jiang Chen. Not only could she help him with his business, but her looks were also more suited to Asia's beauty standard. But her, other than the ability to kill as well as the apathy towards life, she had no other abilities.

This was the reason why she wanted to drag Xia Shiyu to Jiang Chen's pillow side...

"What are you saying? You have helped me a lot," Jiang Chen denied her statement without hesitation.

Ayesha didn't respond, but from her gentle smile, it looked like she was comforted.

"I am planning to head to Australia at noon, do you want to come along?"

When she heard that Jiang Chen planned on taking her with him during this trip, Ayesha happily curled up her lips.

"Of course. Let me go change."

She then turned around and left.

...

Steel is the foundation of the industrial industry, even in the highly advanced 22nd century.

To develop industrial capability, raw materials were necessary. But the limitation of the wasteland's industrial capability was precisely the scarcity of raw materials. Although they could obtain aluminum, copper, iron, as well as other rare metals through recycling, the highly processed nature of the raw materials was not only cumbersome but was also costly. It was for this reason that the power armors had such a high cost. The special plastic steel covering the T-3 power armor was not cheap.

When he was back in the country, it was unrealistic to purchase large quantities of metal as it was much riskier than purchasing food. But now there were fewer concerns. He could buy whatever amount he desired, and no one would investigate him.

The iron production of the world was controlled by three mega-companies. The first being Brazil's Vale S.A with 39% of total production, ranking second was Rio Tinto and third being BHP, who accounted for 38% of total production. The first one was too far away in South America; the two latter ones were all in Australia with only New Guinea in between. Based on the consideration of

cost, Jiang Chen chose BHP as his partner.

There was only one flight to Melbourne. While there was an increase in the number of tourists, tickets remained plentiful as Ayesha easily purchased them.

When they arrived, they checked in at the same hotel.

"Nice to meet you, Mr. Jiang." When he saw Jiang Chen, the Australian with a hooked nose extended his hand.

"Nice to meet you too." Jiang Chen gave him a warm handshake.

Oliver, one of the presidents of BHP. He was the acting executive director of the West Australia division.

Compared with the mega-company with a 210 billion market cap, Future International was just a small ant. Of course, no one would question the potential of the little ant, just like Microsoft in its early days.

After a brief introduction, they were quick to head into the main topic.

"One hundred thousand tons of iron, two hundred thousand tons of aluminum, one thousand tons of 45% purity molybdenum per month..." Oliver scanned through the contract Jiang Chen handed over repeatedly as his eyebrows began to raise.

"The iron and aluminum are okay. But the molybdenum is a rare metal and production remains low. All of its production per year has been reserved." Oliver showed an apologetic expression.

"I see." Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

Molybdenum has a low reserve on earth accounting for only 0.001% of the mass of the crust, but it had a wide range of applications. Such as microcomputers, microprocessors, offshore oil and gas pipelines, and even fertilizers.

But a significant use of this was yet to be discovered. Mainly the neural connection of the virtual reality equipment to the human

body must use this. Although they could acquire some through recycling in the apocalypse, to mass produce it, they would have to obtain it in the modern world.

"With molybdenum, I recommend you try your luck in Hua. Hua is the biggest producer of molybdenum right now. Iron and aluminum, our company can provide."

"I'll see. Let's put the molybdenum aside for now and discuss the price of iron and aluminum," Jiang Chen said reluctantly.

The Wang family would not let him purchase molybdenum easily. It was too easy to prevent him from buying the metal. From extraction to transportation, and customization. With the Wang family's power, a connection in any part of the system would easily stop him from doing business.

Where could molybdenum be easily acquired from? Potentially places like Antarctica and the Moon.

International treaty prohibited one of them, while the other one was unreachable by current technology.

He would have to search for other means... Jiang Chen deliberated.

Chapter 360: Sunny Melbourne

After an hour of negotiating contract prices and details, they finally reached an agreement.

Iron ore: 52.20 USD per ton, one hundred thousand tons per month with a total cost of 5.22 million USD.

Aluminum ore: 80 USD per ton, two hundred thousand tons per month with a total cost of 16 million USD.

The total contract amount was 21.22 billion USD. The shipment would arrive from Port Darwin to Port Ange at the beginning of every month for five years.

Although Ange Island currently has no deepwater port, Jiang Chen had already invested in its construction as two docks would be built by next month. The population base of Ange Island was relatively high and relatively far away from the other eight islands. Therefore, it was ideal to be built into an industrial island with manufacturing as the dominating industry. Hence, a deepwater port was necessary.

Oliver was ecstatic as he signed a multi-million dollar deal in one afternoon for the company. After signing the contract, Jiang Chen didn't immediately leave but instead started to chat with him about the mining industry.

To Jiang Chen's questions, Oliver did his best to answer. He told Jiang Chen the trend of the low volume of iron ore traded in 2016 and the decrease in price for rare metals. All the information could be found online, so it was not a secret.

"If you don't mind me asking this question, based on my knowledge, your company's primary business is in the tech industry, why would you need to purchase large quantities of iron ore?" Oliver asked.

"Your company has implications on what the buyer uses the ore

for?" Jiang Chen nonchalantly asked.

"Just a question I was personally curious about. Of course, if it is inconvenient to disclose, then it that is okay. This question doesn't affect our partnership." Oliver saw that Jiang Chen didn't plan to answer as he smiled to apologize for his rather blatant question.

"I do apologize, this is a trade secret, and I can't answer you... To express my apology, allow me to treat you to dinner," Jiang Chen said.

"Haha, it's my honor. I know a pretty good restaurant in Melbourne, take my car..." Oliver gladly accepted Jiang Chen's invitation.

It was time to get off work, they left the company and headed to a Brazilian Barbeque restaurant near Melbourne.

From the restaurant's aesthetics, it was no different than the street food stalls found in Han. The half-open system design with a distinctly-not-Brazilian owner roasting the golden slices of meat on the fire drew the passersby with its delicious aroma.

They sat at the bar, and it didn't take long before the plates arrived in front of them.

Two cold beers and four plates of meat later, Jiang Chen was thrilled by the food.

"Is the future of the mining industry not looking so good?"

"Not terrible, but it will get worse." When they spoke about work, Oliver let out a sigh.

"Because of the economic conditions?"

"It could be categorized as an economic issue, but ultimately it goes back to demand." Oliver took a big gulp of beer in satisfaction, the beer washed away the frustration that accumulated in his chest.

"Could you be more specific?" With the skewer in his hand, Jiang

Chen asked.

He had an interest in mining.

"For example, if you want to build a 5000 square meter building, it would require 30 tons of steel. But once the building is complete, the potential market of the steel would decrease by that 30 tons. Not only in infrastructure, but from vehicles to screws, they are all the same. Then, the steel plant would decrease production, the mining output would also decrease, and that's how the economy goes down the drain." Oliver laughed.

Jiang Chen didn't know what was funny.

"Is it okay to tell me this?"

"No problem. I'm off work," Oliver said with confidence, "Also, even if there are layoffs, I won't be cut."

"Therefore, the overall trend of iron is going down?"

"That's right. In 2008, per ton had a price of 2.1 USD. Now, it would be lucky to get 0.95 USD."

"With what you are saying, there is no hope in the mining industry?" Jiang Chen grinned.

"Not necessarily true. There is potential if there is a technological breakthrough." Oliver shook his beer glass half filled with beer.

"Technological breakthrough?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrow.

"That's right. Unless there is a major technological breakthrough, such as everyone throwing away their current vehicle, like how everyone gave up on the hand-operated machines or like how everyone abandoned the steam engine... If we were to stretch the example. Sigh, I am pretty envious of you."

"There are a lot of people envious of me."

"I am not talking about your money, but your industry. Don't you think that tech is the field that technological breakthroughs are most likely to occur in?" Oliver stuffed a skewer into his mouth

and then smiled.

"It is also the industry most likely to go bankrupted," Jiang Chen mocked.

Oliver took a moment to process this before he started to laugh hysterically. Maybe laughing was contagious for Jiang Chen also began to laugh along.

The two hysterical people made the rest of the restaurant turn their heads.

...

When Jiang Chen returned to the hotel somewhat drunk, it was already ten at night. That guy was surprisingly talkative and was very humorous as well. Jiang Chen and him talked about the culture of Australia, the barbequed fish, and even his hometown Hucheng. They got along so well that while that ate and drank, it was already deep into the night.

Before they left, Jiang Chen exchanged business cards with Oliver.

When Jiang Chen still drenched in the smell of alcohol, appeared in front of the door, Ayesha quickly helped him to the bathroom, took off his shirt, and wiped his body with a hot towel.

"Why did you drink so much?" Ayesha muttered to Jiang Chen in a small voice.

"I met an interesting person." Jiang Chen burped and laughed, then he leaned on Ayesha's chest.

Ayesha's pale skin instantly turned red. Just as she was about to help Jiang Chen stand up, snoring sounds resonating from the bathroom...

...

It felt terrible to be hung over, but with Jiang Chen's metabolic speed, he only felt awful for a short period the next day before he

fully recovered.

Because the contract negotiation went surprisingly smooth, he had a lot of free time the next day.

Since everything was done, based on Jiang Chen's promise to Ayesha, he took her to explore Melbourne.

Photos in front of landmarks, shopping in major malls...

It was tiring to shop with a woman. But with Ayesha's joyous expression in front of him, Jiang Chen felt all of his weariness wash away.

The last destination of the trip was St. Patrick's Cathedral. Although it was odd to view an religious building as someone of a different religion, Ayesha's amazement surveying the magnificent cross astonished Jiang Chen.

Not all religious people are stubborn.

And not all stubbornness cannot be forgiven.

At the peak of the modern day secularization, even an atheist can hold the hands of a believer and praise the glory of the art of the pagan church.

Seven hundred years ago, the Crusaders fought for the ownership of holy land through a bloodbath. Seventy years ago, the US and Soviet let the iron curtain drop due to differences in ideology.

Now looking back, nothing seems unforgivable nor unacceptable by the law of nature.

Just like the uncanny workmanship of the Suzhou Gardens and the vibrancy of the stained glass at the Notre Dame de Paris, the shape and color the world should possess were far more than what people would think.

If one day, the footstep of humans expanded to the edge of the galaxy, if they look back on the territory conflicts of today, and the ideology differences, would they mock themselves for their past

actions?

But by that time, what would civilization be bothered by...

... The path to evolution? Or other things?

Just as Jiang Chen thought about this, Ayesha gently pulled on his arm.

He recollected his thought and looked at her. "Hmm?"

"I want to go in... Is that okay?"

"Of course."

He threw his thoughts into the back of his head and nobly held onto Ayesha's tiny hand.

They both headed inside the St. Patrick Cathedral.

Chapter 361: Meeting an old friend

Rather than a church, it was more like a museum.

The church had religious text that could be read, but it had no souvenirs. Perhaps indicating it was a sacred place rather than a tourist attraction. But because today was not worship day, there was no one praying in the church.

Inscriptions on shrines told the vicissitudes history of the Catholic Church. Jiang Chen held Ayesha's hand while he briefly glanced around.

"Is this a gothic style building?" Ayesha with one finger on her lips looked up at the magnificent dome.

"Should be, I don't really know. Why?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Because... I often see gothic style clothing in the magazines," With the tip of her lips forming a curvature. "I think it's cute."

"Haha, but this building doesn't resemble cuteness." Jiang Chen forced a laugh and scanned his surrounding.

A priest stood under the altar with a couple standing in front of him. The white-haired priest drew a cross in front of his chest and blessed the two. Ayesha noticed that the couples had a joyous smile on their faces when they left.

"What are they doing?"

"Receiving the blessing of the holy light? The couple should be praying or marrying or something." Jiang Chen made something up.

The priest seemed to have noticed the two looking at him. He kindly smiled and walked to them.

"Do you need help with something?"

Considering Ayesha's religion, Jiang Chen wanted to refuse, but the girl blinked her eyes and looked at the elderly father with

white hair.

"Even as a pagan, is the blessing effective?"

The question was blatant, but the priest only paused for a moment before he spoke with an earnest expression.

"Of course. It all depends if you love him or not."

Ayesha's cold expression bloomed into a joyful smile.

"Mhmm. I love him dearly."

Jiang Chen felt teary.

Ayesha's honest but innocent confession made him feel a different emotion.

He never admitted that he was a good man. Not because he was greedy, he just never had a strong mental fortitude.

The priest looked at Jiang Chen, his eyes seemed to possess the ability to observe everything.

"Then, do you love her?"

"I love her," Jiang Chen said affirmatively.

Ayesha's eyes welled up with tears. She hugged Jiang Chen's arm and rubbed her face against it.

If he had one positive trait, it would be that he never lied about his emotions. Although there was the suspicion of being a quibble, Jiang Chen didn't plan to explain anything.

A smile appeared on the priest's face.

"May the Lord bless you, and you will be happy."

He drew the cross and blessed them.

...

When they came out of the church, Ayesha dangled her entire body weight on Jiang Chen's arm, and her expression was exuberant.

Among the trees, white roses blossomed along the path, but in front of her perfect smile, it paled in comparison.

It was rare for her to display such intimacy in public.

With how happy she looked, Jiang Chen couldn't resist kissing her tender face.

The face gradually turned red as he a spoiled smile surfaced on his face.

When night began to fall, Jiang Chen prepared to take Ayesha back to the hotel.

They still needed to catch tomorrow's plane, so they should sleep early.

That's right, sleep early.

But at the same moment, Jiang Chen heard a familiar voice in surprise.

"Feifei, marry me?" A man with roses kneeled in front of a gorgeous looking girl as he said with deep affection.

But the proposal in front of the church didn't seem to move the girl.

"Didn't we agree that once you settle, we'll then talk about marriage?"

Yang Yuan?

Jiang Chen followed the voice as he looked at the man beside the bench.

He didn't expect to encounter his university roommate here?!

After graduation, the four roommates all chose different paths. While they contacted each other initially for the few months, with the formulation of their new circles, the four rarely contacted each other. Even if Jiang Chen had made a name for himself, the three people still didn't contact him.

As to why, Jiang Chen made sense of it quickly; most likely because they didn't want to lose face.

Not speaking with people when they are down, and flattering them once they are successful, it didn't sound good. Especially since their relationship was not deep, to begin with, in addition to the lack of contact two years after graduation. Since the three all valued their face, they didn't contact Jiang Chen.

Without contact, at least they could brag to their friends and coworkers – "That guy, we lived in the same dorm. I was tight with him."

Jiang Chen still remembered Yang Yuan. Although they were not in the same major, they had a surprisingly good relationship. He was the study god of their dorm and had a good family background. Jiang Chen faintly recalled that after graduated he headed to a renowned university in Australia for a master program. Before he left, he told Jiang Chen to find him if he ever visited Australia and that he would treat him.

Of course, Jiang Chen knew it was just out of courtesy.

Now thinking back, two years passed by and his master should be completed. Since they didn't contact each other after he left, their relationship obviously began to fade. While it was not the first time Jiang Chen was in Australia, he didn't remember to go find him.

But today's encounter, the feeling of meeting an old friend in a different part of the world, was indescribable.

Jiang Chen just wasn't sure if it would be appropriate to say hi.

"Give me some more time, I will definitely find a job..." Yang Yuan was a bit anxious as he didn't know what to do.

"Did you consider my feelings? You said you were already settled here, so I quit my job in China to find you, but what now?" The girl said accusingly with her eyes turning red.

When he saw his old friend was in a tough situation, Jiang Chen let out a sigh and walked toward him in an attempt to make the situation less awkward.

"Yang Yuan?"

When he heard someone call his name, Yang Yuan first paused for a moment. When he saw who it was, he shouted in surprise.

"... Brother Chen! Haven't seen you in a while."

Due to astonishment, his voice cracked.

"Haven't seen you for a while." Jiang Chen smiled.

"This is... your significant other?" Yang Yuan looked at Ayesha.

"Mhmm."

"Ayesha," she briefly introduced herself.

"You... you still recognize me." The smile on Yang Yuan was a mixture of bitterness, excitement, and joy.

The person they didn't believe in now became a big boss and the person everyone thought highly upon now couldn't even find a job. The discrepancy made him feel a bit bitter, but the joyful news was, his old friend still recognized him.

Chapter 362: Future Mining

"Of course, I still remember I owe you two cup noodles," Jiang Chen recalled their past.

"Don't mention it." Yang Yuan rubbed his nose out of embarrassment, "I always said that I will treat you to lobster. Now that you are so well off, I'm so embarrassed to say it."

"You, you are Jiang Chen?"

Jiang Chen noticed that the girl beside Yang Yuan looked at him in excitement, stars were shining in her eyes.

Jiang Chen felt that he had seen her before, is it an illusion? Whatever.

"That's right." Jiang Chen laughed and turned to Yang Yuan, "Is this your significant other?"

Because Jiang Chen's generation is defined by the single child policy, during university, they casually referred to each other as brothers, while their girlfriend as brother's significant other.

"I am Su Fei, a fan of Little White," Su Fei said while blinking her eyes.

"Mhmm." Yang Yuan's expression was somewhat awkward.

Jiang Chen sensed that he didn't want to speak too much on this as he diverted the topic.

"It's rare to see you, how about I'll treat you to dinner."

"No, no, I said I would treat you."

"It's okay! I'm just repaying for the two cup noodles," Jiang Chen interrupted Yang Yuan.

He could see that Yang Yuan's economic situation was not too great. He only wanted to find a way for them to catch up, if he burdened his old friend, it would be against his original intention.

"Oh... Okay." Yang Yuan saw Jiang Chen's intention and nodded.

...

They arrived at a restaurant by the sea. From the exterior design, it was easy to see the luxury of this restaurant as well as the extravagance of the price. Yang Yuan's expression was unnatural when he looked at the servers in suits. But with how happy his girlfriend was, he didn't have the heart to tell Jiang Chen to change a place.

When he saw Jiang Chen didn't look "pained" or dissatisfied, he finally felt relieved.

He was worried that Jiang Chen would have the idea that "I haven't seen you for a long time and you want me to pay for a big meal," but the worry seemed extraneous. He also had a headache due to the wayward and extravagance of his girlfriend, but he couldn't bring out the courage to restrain her.

Yang Yuan was obviously facepalming. Jiang Chen was not stingy to the point where he wouldn't pay for a meal.

On the dinner table, other than Ayesha not speaking too much, the other three had a great conversation. Su Fei continually proposed a toast to Jiang Chen to demonstrate her energetic side, but at the same time subconsciously or consciously began asking about his private life. However, Jiang Chen managed to divert the questions smoothly.

Jiang Chen has seen too many similar situations.

Although he didn't know why his old friend would like a woman like this, he still had his own boundaries. Therefore, he maintained his distance with Su Fei. Seeing that her attempt to get close was unsuccessful, Su Fei put her attention on Ayesha and tried to befriend her. But to her warmness, Ayesha's was unmoved.

Yang Yuan seemed to be slow in this area as he didn't sense anything. After downing a few beers, he began chatting about

what happened after graduation.

Because he was drunk, Yang Yuan dragged him to the balcony of the restaurant. With the refreshing sea breeze sweeping across their face, they continued to chat.

It didn't take long before the conversation changed to "the start of the company". Jiang Chen selectively skipped the sensitive topics and summarized the process of creating Future 1.0 and only spoke about the details of when the company started to become successful.

"Damn! The prom queen of the business school, Xia Shiyu, you managed to date her! Wow, this Brother Chen title is certainly deserving." Yang Yuan exclaimed in a loud voice laced with drunkenness.

"What do you mean?" Jiang Chen joked, "She is the CEO of my company. But... our relationship might be a bit different."

There weren't as many concerns when men spoke to each other.

"But isn't that your S.O?"

Jiang Chen was a bit awkward, "Uh, she is too."

"... So corrupted." Yang Yuan took a long time to process his words before he punched Jiang Chen on the shoulder.

"Ahem, we like each other, it is not being corrupt. Let's not talk about this... Speaking of you, what's going on with Su Fei."

Yang Yuan let out a sigh.

"Nothing's going on. Just like this."

"I feel like I have seen her before."

"She is also a graduate of Wanghai University, two years younger than me. I only asked her to come abroad at the end of last year, you probably have seen her in school." Yang Yuan said nonchalantly.

"I see... Could be."

"I originally thought that I got a metal bowl (Referring to a stable job), but I didn't even take a scoop out of it before I lost the bowl. I should have just signed when PetroChina interviewed me." There was regret in Yang Yuan's words.

Although state-owned enterprises' salary was lower compared to foreign companies, the stability was undoubtedly a plus. Even if it were operating at a loss and heavily subsidized, the government would not allow the workers who worked diligently to contribute to the country to lose their job. Just from this point again, it was more virtuous than working for the capitalists.

["A metal bowl?"](#)

"Yes, in the first year of my masters in Australia, I already signed with Rio Tinto. But this year, the mining industry was not looking pleasant, combined with the oil price plunging, Rio Tinto immediately began laying off people. So I, unfortunately, became a casualty."

[Certainly unlucky...] Jiang Chen said in his mind.

"Does PetroChina not want you anymore?"

"Of course they do, why not? I am a master student who studied abroad majoring in resource exploration. With my family connection, I will be promoted in just two years." Yang Yuan was still confident with his own ability.

"Then why don't you go back?" Jiang Chen glanced at him.

A bitter smile surfaced at Yang Yuan's face.

"I want to go back, but..." As he spoke, Yang Yuan turned to look at Su Fei in the restaurant.

That girl was dissecting the lobster in excitement while chatting with Ayesha.

Jiang Chen instantly understood his bitterness.

"She didn't want me to go back. From her perspective, now that I finally acquired immigration status, it would be a waste if I let that go. Whenever I talk about going back, she would cry and threaten to break up with me..."

"Is it good like this?" Jiang Chen asked.

To be honest, Jiang Chen didn't like Su Fei's personality. He didn't know what was attractive about this type of girl. But since Yang Yuan likes her, he couldn't say anything.

"What could I do?" Yang Yuan's bitterness deepened.

"Do you love her?"

"Mhmm."

He didn't know that the engineer was such a devoted person. Back then, Jiang Chen just thought he was unexpressive, he didn't think he had this quality.

"... Then try to satisfy her, though it might be an endless pit."

Yang Yuan let out a sigh, "I know. I just want to wait until tomorrow, if the market picks up again, there will be demand for employment."

Jiang Chen fell into deep thought as he listened to Yang Yuan's words.

To be honest, he happened to be worried about molybdenum. Other than molybdenum, niobium ore, tungsten ore and even rare metals all have a big gap in the wasteland. But based on what Oliver said, those ores would be hard to obtain in any country, so Jiang Chen had the idea to extract them himself.

Pannu Islands' ocean resources were extremely vast and rich. While no oil and gas existed in its territory, the mining deposits underneath the sea were yet to be explored. It would be hard to believe if there were not a single bit of deposits in the vast ocean territory. Since iron and aluminum had a low cost, Jiang Chen

didn't mind paying. But for rarer metals, if he were to buy, it would certainly pain him.

As to how to extract the ores from the seafloor, Jiang Chen already had an idea in mind, though it still remained in the research phase...

Could the deposit distribution of the apocalypse be the same as the modern world?

Jiang Chen never thought about this before. Because the history of the two worlds was completely different, he selectively ignored the possibility of using the information from the future to his advantage.

Lottery? The amount and number might even be different. Suck up to future leaders? Pac never existed. Music? That's more absurd. Would India's pop music be popular in China? If not, then the music from PAC would be the same.

But mining resources were different! It would not change because of human activity. Therefore, the mining beds dug clean before the war may not have even been drilled or explored yet.

The more Jiang Chen thought about it, the more he wanted to hit himself for not thinking about this earlier. Selling ores and oil location would be much more profitable compared to gold! Just that it would be hard to explain the source...

"Speaking of this, I happen to have a job, are you interested?"

Yang Yuan shook his head.

"I don't know tech at all. Thank you, but I will not bother you."

Yang Yuan was an honest person, he knew he didn't have any ability in that area.

"Who said I wanted you to go to Future Technology? Asking an exploration major to do tech, it would be asking for trouble." Jiang Chen rolled his eyes. "I am talking about Future Mining, are you

interested?"

"Future Mining?" Yang Yuan was shocked.

"That's right," Jiang Chen said affirmatively.

Although he could just hire a headhunter to do it for him, he trusted the people he knew more. As to technology, the one thing he never lacked was technology.

"Are you being serious?" Yang Yuan put on a stern expression.

"Of course. But do you know anything about sea exploration?"

When he talked about his major, Yang Yuan immediately turned ecstatic.

"Yes, my professor at the university is researching sea exploration, whether it is space mining deposits or space oil deposits, I have studied both."

"Then let's do this, I will go back to Xin and register Future Mining... Mhmm, I will also register one in Australia." Jiang Chen nodded.

"What, you haven't registered that company yet?" Yang Yuan facepalmed.

Metal Bowl - A stable job from a state-owned enterprise.

Chapter 363: Return

Yang Yuan's contract was negotiated immediately after.

Although he was skeptical with Future International entering the mining sector, he didn't question the truth of Jiang Chen's words. It must be true - would a billionaire trick a poor guy just for fun? Yang Yuan accepted the job without a second thought.

He would get a monthly salary of ten thousand AUD with a bonus based on sales. Although Yang Yuan expressed that he didn't need that much, Jiang Chen still insisted on giving him a high salary. One reason being that he wanted to help his old friend, the other reason was to reinforce their relationship.

It was always the better deed to help someone in need rather than add on to their success. For example, it was far more meaningful to drag him up when his career and relationship were at their worst rather than giving him a raise when he had a salary of over one hundred thousand.

In the beginning, when Su Fei heard that Yang Yuan would work for Future International, she was naturally very excited. But when she heard the work was in a place called Pannu Islands beside New Guinea, her face immediately turned sour.

Then she heard she could live in a mansion by the beach with a salary of ten thousand AUD with flights back to Australia for vacation covered by the company. She became happy again, her mood changing as fast as a summer storm.

Jiang Chen didn't know what to say.

Since Yang Yuan liked her, he couldn't do anything about it.

The dinner cost 1000 AUD, which Jiang Chen paid before taking off. Yang Yuan would report to him at Coro Island five days later, so it was his job to register the company in Australia in the next five days.

Future Technology, Future Biology, Future Mining - the three subsidiaries meant that Future International finally had the umbra of an international conglomerate. In the future, Jiang Chen planned to establish Future Heavy Industrial, Future Communication and allow Future International to expand in all areas of human economic activity. Of course, he had to take it one step at a time.

"Did you have fun today?' On their way back, Jiang Chen tousled Ayesha's hair and asked.

"Very fun."

Whenever she recalled the blessing in the church and his "I love her," a curvature known as happiness would surface on Ayesha's lips.

"We'll head back tomorrow. Is there anything you want to do or any place you want to go? There's still some time before it gets completely dark."

"No need." With a blushing face, Ayesha moved her eyes into the distance. "Let's go back now."

[Is she tired?]

Jiang Chen initially didn't understand the meaning behind Ayesha's words. It was only when the door of the hotel room closed that he personally experienced the passion hidden underneath her coldness.

Only the soaked sheets told the intimacy of the night.

The next day, they boarded their returning flight to Xin and got off the plane on Coro Island.

After he settled down the weary Ayesha, Jiang Chen left the mansion and headed to the nutrient supply plant located on Ange Island.

It was the hottest time of the day, and the workers at the plant

were all on break, but Zhan Shujie still stayed in the lab and carefully examined DH seaweed cells under the microscope. He didn't even notice Jiang Chen standing behind him.

"Did you discover something meaningful?' Jiang Chen sighed with a helpless expression.

"No." Zhang Shujie shook his head in honesty.

He researched this for over half a month, yet he was still without any clue. He didn't know how the mechanism worked.

"It's normal for you to not make sense of it. If you could understand it in this short period of time, the technology would be worthless."

"The RNA transcribed from the single-stranded DNA doesn't match the DNA. A protein found in an animal cell divided in a plant cell. How does this work?" Zhan Shujie's eyes shined with frenetic flames as he asked Jiang Chen.

"Don't look at me like that; I'm only a merchant, it wasn't me who researched this technology." Jiang Chen shivered at the thought of a man watching him like that.

"Could I meet him?"

"No." Jiang Chen rejected it without any room for compromise.

To Jiang Chen's surprise, he thought Zhan Shujie would insist on meeting the scientist, but after being rejected, he only sighed.

"Okay... I thought I reached the boundaries of science, but it looks like I don't know anything after all. Such astonishing technology exists in this world. Did you know this is like an art?" Zhan Shujie took off the glass under the microscope as he praised its magnificence.

"Art? It's that valuable?" Considering what he said, Jiang Chen was afraid now.

[Nutrient supply is going to be sold to the masses. If people start

examining it with microscopes...]

But thinking about it more deeply, he rejected the possibility. Cells could not pass through the molecular filter, and that thing filtered at the particle level.

"Valuable?" Zhan Shujie shook his head. "It's not just valuable - do you know what it means to be able to produce animal protein from plant cells?"

"What does it mean?"

"It means that beef could grow from the ground."

Jiang Chen laughed. Even in the 22nd century, it was pure fiction to grow beef from the ground.

"Let's not talk about these irrelevant things, I'm just here to grab some samples," Jiang Chen interrupted him.

Although Zhan Shujie was displeased with Jiang Chen's choice of words, he knew his place - he was still his boss - so he went to the bench and picked up a nutrient supply pack containing ten tubes.

"This is it. It tastes weird - would people even want to drink this?" Zhan Shujie ridiculed.

Jiang Chen began laughing.

"You don't understand. You're underestimating women's determination to pursue beauty. They could starve themselves for a few days if necessary, so this is nothing, especially since this doesn't taste that bad."

After he left Zhan Shujie, Jiang Chen took a boat back to Coro Island.

He got off at the port as he headed straight to the Celestial Trade Corporation's warehouses near the port.

He calculated that he was away from the wasteland for two months already. While he did occasionally travel back to meet with Sun Jiao, visit Yao Yao, and tease Lin Lin, he never stayed for too

long.

He wanted to test the sample at the fallout shelter to see if there were any errors on the production side, but on the other hand, he needed to grow his force on the wasteland. Provided with the resources of the modern world, limitations on the apocalypse's industrial capabilities would be removed entirely.

He closed the door of the warehouse and put on the bracelet Lin Lin gave him. Jiang Chen took a deep breath, staring at the small mountain of food.

"Storage dimension activated."

Chapter 364: Return to the Apocalypse

Storing all the food, he didn't need to move an inch but the supply of food in the warehouse slowly depleted. With the interdimensional mass teleportation device, it was much easier to transport goods to the apocalypse. When he had to constantly travel back and forth, not only was it inefficient but it made him feel dizzy and it wasted more crystals too.

Now, it was a much easier process. After ten minutes past and 1000 crystals used, Jiang Chen emptied two warehouses full of supplies.

The capacity of the storage dimension seemed to have hit some bottleneck and stagnated at 30 cubic meters. Regardless of how many crystals Jiang Chen used now, he couldn't expand it by even a cubic millimeter.

Jiang Chen didn't mind since 30 cubic meters of space was plenty for him. Perhaps the bottleneck could be broken by a future opportunity, so he didn't worry.

He left the warehouse and called Ayesha.

Soon after, Ayesha drove to the warehouse with the Lamborghini. From the exhaustion on her face, she evidently had yet to recover from last night.

"Are you feeling bad?" Jiang Chen asked caringly as he sat in the car.

"Mhmm... Are you planning to head to that side?" Ayesha acutely saw through Jiang Chen's thoughts.

"I'm planning to take care of something on that side... Let's go back to the mansion."

"Be safe."

Jiang Chen paused before a smile emerged.

"Mhmm."

When he returned to the mansion, Jiang Chen changed his clothes. Just like his usual routine, he laid on the bed, closed his eyes, and commenced travel.

...

Behind his back was still the soft bed, but the oppressive radiation dust outside the window told him explicitly that he wasn't in the peaceful modern world anymore.

He stood up and before he managed to gain his balance, ferocious footsteps came from behind the door.

Sun Jiao pushed open the door, dove into Jiang Chen's chest and pushed him back onto the bed.

"I missed you!" She rubbed her face against Jiang Chen's shoulder.

"Honey, it's not like I haven't been back before."

Jiang Chen stroke her silky hair and hugged her.

Just like a cat, she escaped Jiang Chen's hug agilely. Sun Jiao sat on the chair and looked at Jiang Chen.

"How long do you plan to stay?"

"Probably for a while. Also, how did you know I was coming back?"

A proud smile appeared on Sun Jiao's face, "I heard sounds coming from the warehouse in the backyard and they continued for a while. When I checked it out, I saw a bunch of stuff appear, so I thought you must be preparing to come back."

"How have you been?"

"Very well, or rather, too well." With her chin against the back of the chair, Sun Jiao exclaimed.

To be able to live such a comfortable life was unimaginable

before. It was two months until an entire year passed after meeting Jiang Chen. This year was the happiest she'd been since she left the fallout shelter. Although a lot of things happened during the process, they managed to make it through intact.

Just like a miracle, the soil tainted by war welcomed order again.

After he said hi to Yao Yao, Lin Lin, and Sun Xiaorou, Jiang Chen headed to the warehouse in the backyard.

This place was previously the base's warehouse, and now it was modified into a building similar to a "transport array." Two old warehouses were bulldozed and built into a metal shed around 500 square meters big. Inside contained the magnified version of the "interdimensional mass transportation device" Lin Lin designed.

Right now, the warehouse was filled with containers of canned food, fresh vegetables, fruit, and meat. Jiang Chen sent Wang Qin a message on the EP, directing 15 workers from the logistics department to transport the food.

"Last quarter, we produced 2000 Reaper Assault Rifles, 400 Hummingbird Drones, 20 Type-50 Electromagnetic Pulse Cannons, 10 T-3 Power Armors, and 1 Sample T-4 Power Armor." Wang Qin pushed up her glasses as she reported to Jiang Chen the recent production figures.

"The T-4 Power Armor is finished?" Jiang Chen was surprised.

The defense ability of the T-3's armor was something Jiang Chen always criticized. While the front armor was enough to defend against light weapons, it was nowhere enough in a battle against the Death Claw. Jiang Chen demanded that the new model had to replace the plastic armor with the more durable C-type steel without sacrificing mobility.

Just like he expected, the problem that couldn't be solved by researchers at Sixth Street was no trouble for the scientists at the fallout shelter.

"The difficulties with the engine were solved by researchers at the fallout shelter; the improved crystal fuel rod increases energy efficiency by 20% and engine output by 15%. This solves the problem of lack of mobility. The weight of the armor was increased to 700 kilograms to reach the threshold for land-type power armor specs. The total defense increased by 50% while ammunition decreased by 10%.

"What about the attached weapon models?"

"It still has the revolving machine gun on the left arm as the primary weapon, but based on this, the researchers at the fallout shelter also added a five-round grenade launcher on the same side. The grenade is capable of heat-seeking."

It was a moving fortress.

[Insane, but I like it!] Jiang Chen thought to himself.

"What are the weaknesses compared to T-3?"

"While the front armor is reinforced more strongly, the armor in the back has been decreased. Also due to the weight of the armor, the acceleration provided by the engine is weaker compared to before - it can't perform the high mobility dodging maneuvers T-3 could. It may feel unresponsive when dodging anti-armor weapons, so our research added reactive nitrogen armor on four different sections of the T-4 power armor.

Improving its defense meant sacrificing its mobility, but it was a worthwhile sacrifice. Since not all people could perform the dodging action in less than 0.1 seconds, most of the soldiers in power armor would require the armor to take damage directly and act as a moving shield for the light infantry. It was the role power armor played in combat.

"What's the cost of producing a T-4?"

Wang Qin's finger pressed on the screen and a number appeared in the center.

"27130 crystals."

"That's so expensive." Jiang Chen was shocked by the figure.

It was almost three times the amount compared to T-3 armor.

But Wang Qin couldn't do anything about that fact.

"The price of iron and rare metal continues to climb at the Sixth Street to the point where there's a shortage. Based on the information provided by Chu Nan, although there's been an economic boom as well as other factors, there's also been an increase in the number of scavengers, so there's still a significant gap to meet industrial demands."

Chapter 365: Virtual Reality Online

Fishbone Base's metal resources primarily depended on imports from the Sixth Street. With the influence of the economic boom last fall as well as the formation of the bank at the year's end, countless factories emerged. The garbage dumps left unmanaged for many years were swept clean by all the major factories. After the hunters that hunted for crystals and mercenaries that protected trade routes, professional scavengers became the hottest profession at the Sixth Street.

This was unfathomable before because no one imagined that so many factories would emerge at the Sixth Street practically overnight.

"The current production capacity of the base is restricted by the lack of raw materials. A lot of scavenging teams already signed a contract with the factories. Although I suggested Chu Nan to forcefully purchase the resources that Fishbone Base requires at a premium, he rejected the proposal. He said that unless you made the decision, he wouldn't interfere with the contract between private companies and scavengers." Wang Qin sighed.

"What he did was right," Jiang Chen said.

Chu Nan was undoubtedly an interesting individual - although he was just a pilot, it was surprising that they shared a similar thought process. One trait that most survivors shared on the wasteland was that the moment they saw something nice, they would steal it. This was the reason why most people spent their life picking through garbage.

Of course, looking at the question from another perspective, the actions of the survivors were reasonable. Due to the scarcity of survival resources, they might not even be able to survive without robbing others.

Wang Qin looked at Jiang Chen, not understanding. From her

perspective, they were already nice enough to purchase the supplies at a premium - at least they weren't trying to rob them. Fishbone base was the controller of the Sixth Street, didn't they have the authority to do whatever they wanted?

"Only freedom and goodwill can inject the long-lasting energy needed for the Sixth Street's economic growth. We would only lose credibility if we attempted to interfere with the economy and its supporting industry. And to a regime like ours, the latter is obviously more important than the former."

She didn't understand what the boss said, but she thought it was deep... That was what Wang Qin's expression showed.

"Credibility... what's the purpose of that?"

"Too useful." Jiang Chen laughed. "Let's not talk about this. How much iron and aluminum are we missing? Just give me a list. These two resources will no longer be imported from the Sixth Street - I will solve the problem myself."

"You-you can obtain iron?" Wang Qin's eyes widened in disbelief as she couldn't hide her surprise.

But she was quick to realize her rudeness as she covered her mouth with her hands to express her remorse.

Jiang Chen didn't mind and answered with a casual voice.

"That's right, I can transport it starting next month. I can't solve the problem with the rare metals though, so see if you have any solutions."

She pushed up her glasses as the surface reflected a cunning spark.

"Let the scavengers of the base take care of it. We should give up on recycling iron and aluminum and shift our focus to electronic equipment and high precision devices - these things contain a higher amount of rare metal."

"Mhmm, I'll leave it up to you." Jiang Chen nodded.

Transportation of goods into the warehouse was almost complete, so Wang Qin saluted before she left.

As it was getting late, Jiang Chen took a big stretch before returning to the mansion.

He needed to bring the nutrient supply to the fallout shelter the next day and ask Han Junhua's opinion. Then he would visit the Sixth Street to examine Chu Nan's current work progress.

He pushed open the door to the living room to see Yao Yao and Lin Lin sitting at the table. The two small heads were both deep in thought as they engaged in a discussion about a blueprint.

"What are you looking at it?" Jiang Chen came closer out of curiosity.

"Ahh, big brother is back. Are you done for the day?" Yao Yao smiled gently at Jiang Chen as she turned her head.

Lin Lin proudly straightened her back and kept her chin high.

"We're currently researching a magnificent technology but since it requires some computer knowledge, I have to ask Yao Jiayu-"

Jiang Chen expected Lin Lin to boast, so he chose to ignore her and directed his gaze at the cute Yao Yao.

"Hello! Stop ignoring me!" Lin Lin protested.

"It's about a database converting brain waves to electronic signals, it's nothing special," Yao Yao timidly said.

"Database?" Jiang Chen was puzzled.

"Sorry for troubling you guys so much."

Sun Xiaorou walked out of the hallway dressed in a light purple floral dress. She lowered her eyes apologetically.

"Not at all, it's not troublesome. " Lin Lin felt awkward by Sun Xiaorou's sincerity as she scratched her face.

Although it was Tingting in her body who destroyed the chip causing Sun Xiaorou to become like this, she still bore some responsibility for not controlling the bug. Even if Sun Xiaorou never blamed her, she always felt guilty.

While Lin Lin had a big mouth and was somewhat arrogant, she was still a kind person deep inside.

"No problem at all, Yao Yao also hopes that sister can start walking soon." Yao Yao nodded her head earnestly.

"Thank you, everyone," Sun Xiaorou said emotionally.

Jiang Chen sensed they had a good relationship with each other - was it because they lived together for so long?

"Thank you too."

"Eh? Me?" Jiang Chen looked in surprise at Sun Xiaorou smiling at him.

"Mhmm. It was only because of you that I reunited with my sister and meet so many lovely friends and also...a cute brother-in-law."

Her eyes turned into two crescents. The smile was sweet, but Jiang Chen felt the smile gave a vibe similar to her sister.

The devil-like smile.

Jiang Chen gulped as he shivered uncontrollably.

[Fu*k, does that count as teasing me?]

...

After dinner, Jiang Chen and Sun Jiao went to the third-floor gym. Inside were two virtual reality training chambers.

Jiang Chen was told that the virtual reality MMORPG was finished. Of course, he couldn't wait to experience it as he dragged Sun Jiao along.

<Godly Land> was a name created by Du Yongkong. He didn't create the content himself because a lot of the data and models

were already available. All he needed to do was replicate the famous virtual reality MMORPG on the new engine.

Although it sounded easy, it was a large amount of work. To complete the project, Du Yongkong requested ten something people who previously worked in game design to assist him.

On the other hand, Jiang Chen also increased the difficulty of his work.

To better fit the culture of the modern world and people's spiritual needs, Jiang Chen downloaded a library of Xuanhuan web novels and made Du Yongkong read through them. He asked him to try his best to "recreate the passion" when he designed the game.

This troubled Du Yongkong greatly. While Jiang Chen enjoyed the novels, Yongkong didn't understand the fun of them at all since he was forced to read millions of words just to complete his assigned task.

Regardless, after half a year of work, the beta version of the game was finally finished. Whether it was fun or not, Jiang Chen was determined to figure that out himself.

Chapter 366: The Game Rating becoming weird

Although it was an MMORPG, aside from the NPC that possessed basic artificial intelligence, there were only two players. The two virtual reality chambers connected directly to the server which acted as a private server.

The game content was easy to understand and follow.

It involved two landmasses, four empires, the cultural infusion between the east and west, and a distinct otherworldly land that introduced the background of the world. The opening animation was exquisitely designed, but Jiang Chen didn't want to waste time and decided to skip it and went straight into the character creation interface.

There was a variety of classes and races that could be selected including most of the usual ones covered in MMORPG-type novels. Because it was a Game Master account, Jiang Chen could directly select the hidden race and class that would normally only open after thousands of special conditions were met.

Jiang Chen didn't want to spend too much time selecting his character, so he chose the most balanced human as well as the warrior profession with a balance of attack and defense abilities.

A few words flew in front of his eyes.

Chapter One: Medieval Era

The game would be permanently influenced by the actions of users in the game, pushing ahead of the current progression of the gaming world.

For example, if a player conquered thousands of hurdles to complete a hidden quest to reveal the "magic steam engine," the NPC would form the progressive party, and the conservative party would take the players who chose sides in an epic battle to

determine whether the world would progress to Chapter Two: Steam Era or remain in Chapter One: Medieval Era.

When an overly-curious player triggered a demigod or destructor to be summoned into the world and caused the "Endless hell" spell to be cast on the entire server, if they chose to "sacrifice their soul to Lucifer," then the game would return to Chapter One: Medieval Era.

The progression of the world meant that new classes and even new races would be born. Whether the steam era or the magical era appeared was based on the actions of the players in the world. The amount of freedom was almost identical to the real world as endless possibilities existed.

This level of detail was an impossible task for modern supercomputers because the number of variables and changes would be an astronomical number. But with the technology of the apocalypse, this level of detail was no problem at all.

No one would choose to miss the opportunity of experiencing a "second life."

Jiang Chen could already imagine the craze people would have when they purchased the virtual reality helmet.

...

White light illuminated the space and Jiang Chen appeared in the starting village, naked.

Another white light flashed and Sun Jiao also showed up naked beside Jiang Chen.

"Ahh! How-how come I don't have any clothes?!" Sun Jiao cried as she looked down to cover her private areas while she trembled with a red face.

"Eh? Do you like elves?"

Jiang Chen scratched his chin as he examined the character Sun

Jiao created.

Other than her voice, it was completely different compared to the real her.

The chin was too sharp to be considered humanly possible, and slim and elegant ears passed through the green strands of hair. It had a slender waist as well as a chest the size of soccer balls - it had the face of an angel but the figure of a devil.

As Jiang Chen looked, he nodded, pleased.

Mhmm, the face creation system must be nerfed since she doesn't look too different from her actual appearance. The idea of an ugly girl with a pretty face speaking sweetly to him gave him goosebumps.

Also, the gender has to be restricted! He discovered that during character creation, he could choose to create a female account. Is Du Yongkong dumb?

When he thought about a man with a female account interacting with him, a shiver went down his spine. At least create a separate server just for people like that...

"Is this the time to say that?! Clothes! Give me clothes!" Sun Jiao cried out in embarrassment.

It was rare to see Sun Jiao in such a panic.

Of course, appearing naked on the street would make anyone panic.

"It's okay, we're all NPC." Jiang Chen extended his finger and pressed into the air. "Also, with the existence of the control center, you can create clothes yourself."

A long dress dropped on the ground.

Sun Jiao, with a speed of lightning, snatched the clothes on the ground and covered her private areas. Then the benevolent elf smiled gruesomely at the shocked crowd and unleashed

thunderous strikes.

Her finger moved.

Thousands of flame trails dropped from the ground. The level 100 mage's forbidden spell "Endless Hell" burned the entire starting village to dust.

Typically speaking, it wasn't possible to kill people in the starting village, but Sun Jiao ruthlessly abused the infinite abilities of the NPC.

That was how GM played the game.

"You don't have to wipe everyone out, there were a few dwarf lolis there." The flames dropping on Jiang Chen displayed a bunch of "os" - the spell was useless on him.

"They're programs after all!" Sun Jiao gave Jiang Chen a dirty look as she bared her teeth to display her prowess.

She was indeed right since all these people were NPC. While they appeared shocked, embarrassed and even had sexual desires when they saw a naked body, behind the characters were just lines of code. All the personality programs were based on DnD's matrix and were determined based on random variables.

"Okay, you're right."

Jiang Chen scanned the scorched earth and collapsed buildings. The smell of burnt meat even drifted into his nose.

Mhmm... It wasn't good to be too realistic. If blood began to pour out with a single sword cut and a mere flame ball spell burned people, the game wouldn't operate for too long before the Radio and Television Ministry shut this down. Create a less violent version? Maybe they could automatically identify the age and nationality of the user and limit the graphic effects based on local laws of the user.

"What's fun about this game?" Sun Jiao scrolled with her finger

as she worked on her equipment.

Jiang Chen didn't need to ask as he knew she must've put the ten stars god weapon into her inventory.

A green light was cast out as godly equipment, the Armor of the Elf Queen, was donned by Sun Jiao.

This equipment perfectly demonstrated the idea of "saving clothes for the country." Only a few metal plates covered the private area and most of her skin was exposed under a thin veil.

Seeing that there was no one around, Sun Jiao didn't consider whether the equipment that resembled lingerie was embarrassing or not, but she teased Jiang Chen with her 36Gs.

Looking at the naughty Sun Jiao, Jiang Chen scanned the tightly wrapped clothes in front of her chest.

"Did you drag the chest size up to the max?"

Sun Jiao, who had her secret exposed, didn't even blush as she rolled her eyes.

"I don't believe you didn't drag your thing to the max."

To be honest, Jiang Chen hadn't even thought about it. He allowed the system to replicate his look when he created his character.

Sun Jiao reminded him that in the virtual world, he could be a bit bigger.

His finger drew in the air as the indescribable part began to bulk at an unbelievable speed. Jiang Chen had a smirk on his face.

"Why don't you test it out?"

Chapter 367: Recently at the Camp

The area inside the camp walls more than doubled and extended from outside the square to the bus stop. The four corners of the camp had patrol towers ten meters high. Each of the towers was equipped with four 20mm cannons. The large caliber stationary machinegun could not only easily rip Death Claw's armor, but it could even do damage to Roshan's high-density fat. Of course, the machinegun was primarily targeted towards the Roshan, since the Death Claw was limited in number and hard to hit, while the Roshan could bite with eyes closed.

Compared to when Jiang Chen left, the changes inside the base were also astonishing.

The tent area was messy as the ghetto was removed and replaced by rows of concrete apartment buildings. Because of the improvements in living conditions, the mood of the fallout shelter residents was more pleasant - at least few people had despair on their faces while walking on the streets.

Based on the directions Jiang Chen gave before he left, Xu Lu built another lab on the surface. However, due to lack of experimental equipment, the lab on the surface couldn't be put into service and most of the experiments were still conducted underground.

Jiang Chen didn't have to wait too long before Wang Zhaowu and Xu Lu came to greet him.

After some catching up, Jiang Chen began to ask about the status of the camp.

"... The number of stationed troops increased from 80 to 200. To adjust for the lack of personnel, a new drone control terminal was established in the camp with an attack fleet of 400 drones being deployed." Wang Zhaowu reported the defense status of the base.

"Have there been any security concerns?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

"The activity of the zombies from Wanghai is increasing. Also, mutants are becoming more active. Last month, there was an incident where a Death Claw attack caused 14 casualties..." Wang Zhaowu lowered his head in guilt.

An incident like this occurring was completely his fault. The Songjiang area didn't have any Death Claw nests, so no Death Claw should've been active in the area - this was almost common sense to the Wanghai survivors. It was enough of a coincidence that Jiang Chen encountered a Mother of Death Claw last time, but no one expected that another Death Claw would be active in the area.

"Raise your head, Death Claw attacks weren't your fault. Your responsibility is to react and handle this type of emergency situation. But from what I see, you are doing very well." Jiang Chen scanned the walls surrounding the base.

Wang Zhaowu raised his head and looked sincerely at Jiang Chen.

"Also, do you have any more intel from the last explosion at the camp?"

Jiang Chen had a sense that the death of the elder man and the Golden Apple might be connected somehow.

"Not for the time being, but we found a digitalized human body on the adjacent block. While there was no direct evidence linking him and the explosion, based on the time of destruction, the body was destroyed on the day of the explosion," Wang Zhaowu said.

[Digitalized human?]

A frown appeared on Jiang Chen's face.

"Do you have pictures?"

Wang Zhaowu nodded, brought out an image from his EP and

passed it to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's pupils gazed at the distinct figure.

[Lin Chaoen.]

Although the face was barely recognizable, from the remaining few facial traits, Jiang Chen could still recognize his identity.

"We also found a laser sword and a dagger nearby."

"Mhmm, I see." Jiang Chen nodded.

Regarding the mysterious digitalized human with ill-intentions, he currently had no solutions. Even with his body destroyed, he could very possibly revive at some unknown location. The bearded mercenary EP provided some clues, but because of their high firepower, the helicopter couldn't get any closer. While Cheng Weiguo did try to investigate the issue through drones, they were still intercepted.

"Let's put both issues aside. For now, focus on the defense of the camp and ensure the safety of the fallout shelter residents. They are highly-valued experts in different fields. That is all."

"Yes, Sir!" Wang Zhaowu saluted and left.

Then Jiang Chen looked at Xu Lu, "What about the internal affair?"

She smiled with confidence and said, "The research project team has increased from 10 to 17 members. The research results include four sub-projects related to T-4 power armor, 20mm transportable cannon, Tiger II, and improved nutrient supply."

"Tiger II is completed?" Jiang Chen was shocked.

"Mhmm. Since it was limited by the lack of raw materials, the test model could not be produced. But the researchers built a mathematical model to verify the combat ability of this Tiger model."

"Perfect! Where's the lead for this project?" Jiang Chen was

jubilant.

"Inside the fallout shelter. Do you want me to call him up?" Xu Lu said.

"No need, I have to go down anyways." Jiang Chen waved his hand.

"Anything else I can help you with?" Xu Lu said.

"N.... Hmm, take me to the basement."

"Roger," Xu Lu said respectfully.

It was already approaching June, but the basement was still cold and damp.

The guard opened the metal gate for Jiang Chen and he waited outside with Xu Lu.

Jiang Chen wavered in front of the door, but he still walked in.

Han Junhua raised her head and looked peacefully at Jiang Chen.

"... Are you going to surrender?"

No response.

With eyes as composed as still water, she made Jiang Chen frustrated.

How could one person be stubborn to this extent?

An evil thought flashed through his head, but he took a deep breath and restrained his desires. The longer he stayed in the apocalypse, the more blurry his boundaries became. Since he had just come back, however, rationality won this battle.

"I hope you seriously reconsider."

Jiang Chen gave her a long, meaningful look and left the basement.

With the closing of the metal door, Han Junhua felt relieved.

Although she didn't know why he didn't do anything this time, to

her, it was a relief.

Chapter 368: Tiger II

Jiang Chen took the elevator down to the fallout shelter. Just as he was about to send the nutrient supply sample to Wang Fangpin and look at the results of the Tiger II project team, he happened to encounter the two people he was looking for in front of the lab.

They seemed to be arguing over something.

"Bring in X1 bacteria inside the fallout shelter?! Are you crazy??" Tiger II's project lead Fang Wei shouted at Wang Fangpin.

X1 bacteria controlled the zombies.

"This is for experimentation, for science! And it's not like you haven't been injected with vaccines - why are you so scared?!" With spit droplets all over his face, Wang Fangpin roared.

The two were arguing furiously with each other. If it wasn't for someone bumping into them and the guard standing by, the two "educated" people might erupt into a brawl.

"And then? Create an X3 or X4 immune to the vaccine?" Fang Wei said mockingly.

"Any experiments are designed safely; I only need a small strand of DNA. This is the distrust and bias of life science!"

"X1 bacteria was detected on the touch screen of the quantum computer in the lab - do you think it's safe?" Fang Wei was enraged.

Due to the limited experimentation equipment inside the fallout shelter, there was only one quantum computer capable of handling experiment simulation. The computer was pivotal to research in the 22nd century as a lot of complicated calculation and data modeling could only be completed by it. Although Fishbone base offered a reward of fifty thousand crystals at Sixth Street for anyone who could find an experiment-level quantum computer, unfortunately to this day, no news was heard. Therefore, all 17

research projects had to use the single quantum computer in the fallout shelter.

"Oh my god, which dumb*ss didn't wash their hands before they touched the screen? I will investigate this, but-, ahh, boss." Just as he was about to erupt into another debate with his colleague, Wang Fangpin noticed Jiang Chen standing beside them and immediately shut his mouth.

The people in the hallway dispersed when they saw Jiang Chen.

"What's going on?"

Wang Fangpin cut in front of Fang Wei to explain: "This is what happened. Because the seaweed project has stagnated due to a bottleneck, I asked the guards to collect some cells from the zombies' neck to obtain X1 bacteria."

"X1 bacteria? What does that have to do with the power-generating seaweed?" Jiang Chen was puzzled.

"Because X1 bacteria have high photosynthesis efficiency. To increase the conversion of sunlight in the seaweed, one of my researchers proposed a possibility that from the X1 bacteria's nucleus, the DNA of the chloroplast could be implanted into the seaweed."

"What if the seaweed ends up displaying similar characteristics of X1 bacteria?" Fang Wei interrupted with a sneer.

[Fu*k, that's a big problem!]

Fang Wei's words made Jiang Chen jump. He first thought that what Wang Fangpin did was right - research must be done at all costs. But when he remembered that this must be grown in the modern world, he instantly became worried.

He didn't want "Resident Evil" occurring in the modern world.

"That's impossible, you don't understand genetic engineering." Wang Fangpin's face was red and steamy.

"But I understand the risk to technology." Fang Wei immediately countered Wang Fangpin's perspective.

"Enough, stop arguing." Jiang Chen stopped their argument out of annoyance.

The two of them both shut their mouths. But from the way they stared at each other, they were clearly still heated.

After a pause, Jiang Chen looked at Wang Fangpin. "Transplanting DNA strands from X1 bacteria must be stopped now. Just like what Fang Wei said, research must be carefully designed and executed within safe boundaries. Any DNA samples injected with X1 bacteria must be destroyed.

"... Yes," Wang Fangpin said reluctantly.

Seeing as he got the upper hand, the tips of Fang Wei's mouth curved up proudly.

Jiang Chen patted Wang Fangpin's shoulder and used an encouraging tone to comfort him: "It's great to take bold, innovative leaps, but the amount of risk can't be ignored. Also, here is a sample of the mass-produced improved nutrient supply. Take a look to see if it meets quality standards."

Since his research was discarded, it would be natural for him to feel defeated, but Wang Fangpin wasn't narrow-minded. After taking a deep breath, he bounced back from his negative emotions.

"Okay."

He took the nutrient supply from Jiang Chen and left.

Then Jiang Chen turned to Fang Wei.

"Report this type of incident to the camp and in the future, don't try to solve incidents like this privately. You're not a barbarian - what can arguments solve?"

"Yes," Fang Wei replied, abashed.

Internal conflicts could only be solved by remaining neutral.

Jiang Chen didn't know any other methods to resolve strained relationships between researchers.

"Let's not talk about this anymore. I heard the Tiger II's design is completed, so I'm here to take a look. Could you show me the model?"

"Of course! Please follow me." When he heard Jiang Chen ask about the research project, Fang Wei immediately became energetic and hastily walked to the computer room.

Jiang Chen followed him and saw the quantum computer.

The quantum computer was similar to the "gaming computer" he picked up at Fallout Shelter 005, but its computation power was clearly a level above the mixed algorithms supercomputer. The machine was the size of a van and connected by all kinds of wires and cords.

Just from its appearance, the quantum computer looked plain from the outside. But considering how carefully Fang Wei worked on it, it was easy to see how valuable this thing was.

Quickly, a blue light surfaced from the hologram device and formed a miniature model of Tiger II.

Different from the previous Tiger, the "Tiger II" was designed with a firing cannon. It had a length of 10.7 meters, a width of 4.1 meters, and the vehicle was rectangular in shape. The turret was located at the back of the vehicle with the barrel parallel to the front armor. It had a weight of 63 tons with the armor composed of A-type steel.

"The Tiger II battlefield positioning is a tank destroyer while also supporting the artillery. Its defense is mainly concentrated in the front and turret armor. In addition to the main cannon, on the top of the turret is a 10mm machine gun to attack targets in close proximity. Of course, words can't reflect its actual combat ability - let me show you."

After a brief explanation about the specifications of Tiger II, Fang Wei pressed another button on the control screen.

The hologram graphics began to change as a desert appeared underneath the Tiger II. Seven sets of weight-bearing wheels under the steel armor began to rotate as the Tiger moved at full speed in the desert. The environment then changed from desert to city, city to forest.

"This is the model we created based on simulating real physical environments - it realistically replicates the combat ability of the tank. I'll demonstrate the actual combat effectiveness of Tiger II."

With a stunned expression on Jiang Chen's face, Fang Wei proudly pressed a button on the screen.

Giant letters surfaced on the hologram.

[Battle Simulation]

The environment changed again as the Tiger II model reappeared in an empty desert. At the same time, four soldiers with "Python" anti-tank rocket launchers appeared in four different directions.

Four rockets launched simultaneously before they landed on the front, side, back, and turret of Tiger II. Flames engulfed the Tiger II, but when the smoke dispersed, only the back armor of the Tiger II received any kind of damage.

Jiang Chen had witnessed the destructive power of the Python before. The "chief" tank destroyed in the civil war had a massive hole blown in its front armor. Though he never personally experienced the war, he saw the image captured by drones from the rocket striking the target.

"Whether fighting against anti-tank weapons or weapons of other tanks, Tiger II is designed with survivability in mind. Of course, it's not meant to be a tank, so I don't recommend sending it to the front line to fight against the other tanks."

Then Fang Wei demonstrated Tiger II's survivability against

other pre-war tanks, and the results were impressive. Other than being unable to defend against the "Wanderer's" particle cannon, most of the tanks' blows could be absorbed by the front armor of the Tiger II.

As for the power of the type-50 electromagnetic cannon, Jiang Chen saw it many times already so Fang Wei didn't need to demonstrate it. Compared to the previous Tiger with its cannon on the truck, only the Tiger II's armor was improved -the cannon itself didn't change.

"What do you think? Are you pleased with the Tiger II?" Fang Wei already knew the answer from Jiang Chen's expression, but he still asked proudly.

Compared to Wang Fangpin's personality, Fang Wei was more extroverted. He had the pride of a scientist when he handled people and things. Although he restrained some of his personality in front of Jiang Chen, the dictator, his personality still subconsciously seeped through.

But Jiang Chen didn't mind. As long as people viewed these traits as a weakness, he could accept it.

"Haha, I'm very pleased. What's the cost?" Jiang Chen smiled in satisfaction.

"Everything is on this list." Fang Wei handed Jiang Chen a graphene card.

<101 tons of iron, 10 tons of aluminum, 2.1 tons of molybdenum...>

The first few were okay, but the long list of rare metals gave Jiang Chen a headache. The lack of supply of the rare metals must be solved. It was still too difficult to fill industrial need by simply recycling.

Chapter 369: The Rare Quantum Computer

When Jiang Chen returned to the surface, he immediately found Xu Lu and explained to her his idea of deepwater mining.

"Deepwater mining?"

Xu Lu looked at Jiang Chen, puzzled. All detectable mines on earth have been mined clean. Even if the mantle beneath the deep sea a few kilometers below still has undeveloped deposits, because of the high cost of mining and the severe damage to the geological environment, the operation would be impossible to conduct.

Also, the existence of space elevators significantly reduced the cost of space. 22nd century's mining operations were all focused on space mining. It was fair to say that deepwater mining was as outdated as coal power generation.

"That's right, deepwater mining technology, preferably an automated system. Is that possible? Jiang Chen asked.

"It is certainly possible since it is an outdated technology... But are there mining deposits along the coast of Wanghai?"

"You don't have to worry about that, as to where to mine, I have my plans." Jiang Chen laughed.

Since Jiang Chen has already spoken, Xu Lu nodded and agreed.

"Okay, I will establish another research team to focus on the replication of the deepwater mining technology. However, currently there is only one quantum computer, if there is an increase in the project's progression, it will slow down the research speed of other projects."

Jiang Chen was lost for a moment as he didn't know what research was currently being conducted and the reliance of the research on quantum computers in the 22nd century. A lot of people born after the war didn't understand either, but since Xu Lu came from before the war, she knew some elements of it.

Acutely, she read the confusion on Jiang Chen face as she concisely explained the reasoning.

Quantum computer's power calculation ability is precise enough to simulate the physical environment at quark level which would allow a lot of experiments to be simulated in a pure math state. It was not only easy to eliminate the possible interference in the experiment, but it could also simulate a chemical reaction that usually takes a few days to complete in less than a second. Of course, that's only one of its functions.

When Xu Lu explained this, Jiang Chen finally understood why all the countries in the modern world dumped endless amount of money in the bottomless pit known as the quantum computer. Once completed, without any exaggeration, the country's research speed would exponentially increase.

While a lot of organizations and countries all bragged about completing the initial stage of the quantum computer, with IBM and Google as the frontrunners, they were still far from the actual quantum computer. Also, although they are using quantum algorithm, the computer's computation speed can't even surpass traditional computers.

Before material science had its monumental breakthrough, any bragging of the development of the quantum computer was merely gloating. Just like without the invention of reinforced concrete, it was impossible for skyscrapers to be built.

"What's the ideal ratio of one quantum computer to project teams?" Jiang Chen gave it some thought and said in an undertone.

"From experience, the ideal ratio would be ten project teams to 1 quantum computer... But right now it is not feasible."

There was only one in the fallout shelter with 17 projects all using it. With an additional project in deepwater mining, crowding would be an understatement.

"Is there production technology for the quantum computer?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Yes, but we don't have the production capability," Xu Lu said with resignation.

It made sense.

Jiang Chen also revealed a smile with deep resignation.

"Okay, since another research team cannot be added, the people on the surface shouldn't do nothing. Although it is hard to complete research without the quantum computer, they can still easily handle wasteland technology retrieving and information gathering."

"Okay." Xu Lu nodded.

...

Rural area, north of Wanghai.

A man walked along the cracked concrete road.

A grey hood covered his face. However, from his torn clothes, he seemed to have experienced an intense battle not long ago.

Because of the war, infrastructure such as bridges was mostly destroyed by the blasts, the Binjiang Bridge that stretched across Long River was broken into several segments, but it didn't bother him.

While throwing a claw out of his right hand, he leaped over unimaginably and agilely swung across.

Both feet stomped onto the ground.

He gathered his balance and let out a breath. After he crossed the river, it would no longer be a part of Wanghai territory.

The screeching howl of Death Claw came from the distance not far behind his back, but it quickly faded.

He attached the claw back on his belt and took off his hood.

"Phew, of course, it won't chase."

The face, it was Lin Chaoen.

A hologram map appeared two inches in front of his eyes, the mechanical eyes slightly turned as he directed his vision to the west.

Wanghai rural area's zombie concentration was extremely scattered, but the density of mutants was relatively high. However, the mutants seemed to be different from the ones inside Wanghai; they didn't seem to demonstrate aggressiveness, at least not to the digitalized human.

A Death Claw was wandering among the shambles, hunting for food. When it passed by Lin Chaoen, it only sniffed its nose before he gave up on the prey made out of metal and silica gel.

A few survivors, hiding in the dark, fearfully looked at the Death Claw pass by Lin Chaoen. They were baffled at the fact that the Death Claw didn't attack this man.

His electronic eyes scanned the survivors, but he chose to ignore them and headed to his destination.

Aside from the two groups of bandits who wasted a few minutes of his time, he had a smooth journey.

He headed west for two hours before he stopped in front of a warehouse.

A man with a cigarette in his mouth walked out of the shadows. Along with him were a few soldiers holding rifles. From the symbol on their uniform, they were from the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce.

"You are late." The man with the cigarette blew out a ring of smoke.

"Got caught up along the way," Lin Chaoen apologized.

The man glanced at the blood yet to dry on his face. He didn't ask

for the reason as he took out his cigarette from his mouth.

"Then let's start."

Lin Chaoen didn't answer him. He walked around him to the door of the warehouse.

He put his finger on the circle on the warehouse panel.

"Fingerprint identification?" The cigarette man asked.

"Electric signal identification." Lin Chaoen corrected him concisely and backed away a few steps.

The door opened, exposing the items stored in the warehouse.

The man's pupils contracted.

A full warehouse stuffed with B-grade steel. By crude estimation, there were at least 1000 tons.

"It's hard to imagine how rich you are." Greed flashed across the man's eyes.

At the Sixth Street, the price of one ton of B-grade steel was already 100 crystals. 1000 tons would sell for one hundred thousand crystals!

But he thought about what his boss told him as the greed in his mind began to cool down.

"It's the wealth of my father, purchased before the war." He looked at the cigarette man as Lin Chaoen didn't seem to mind the expression change on his face. Then he said emotionally, "Like our agreement, half of the steel's usage will be determined by you. The other half, I need you to follow my demand and produce the parts I need."

After a pause, a noble smile appeared on Lin Chaoen's face.

"Of course, if I don't see what I want to see a month later, some unfortunate events may occur."

That smile was cruel.

Chapter 370: The Second Crusade

Jiang Chen currently had no better ideas in regards to the quantum computer. He could only do his best to collect more information.

Before he left, he said a few words to Xu Lu. He especially emphasized the research of military technology, the technology of the recovery of man-made islands, space elevator, and synchronous space station.

Jiang Chen headed to the Sixth Street by helicopter.

After about ten minutes of flying, the helicopter arrived above the Sixth Street.

With an aerial view, the Sixth Street was indeed different compared to before.

After Chu Nan became the acting general, he immediately tightened the control of the army and established strict rules. He also extended the free trade policy used by the Group of Ten. Even with a military dictatorship, the government didn't use any authority unlawfully. Compared to before, the military government led by him was fairer and more just.

The benefits of his action was evident.

Not only did the survivors from Wanghai city begin to migrate toward the Sixth Street, but even survivors in nearby cities also followed suit. While they increased the labor force, they also brought the technology necessary for the Sixth Street.

The skyscrapers in the Inner Circle and the buildings in the Outer Circle began to look more prosperous. Jiang Chen noticed while being in the air that the underground sewerage entrance was now a part of the newly built wall of the Outer Circle.

Other than that, small camps were surrounding the Sixth Street and scattered across the ruins. The camps were mostly built by

businessmen stationed at the Sixth Street. Due to the price of land gradually increasing in the Outer Circle, they built their factories and camps outside of the wall. They paid taxes to the military government, follow the Sixth Street's laws, and accepted protection from the patrolling team.

The small city was like a seed, spreading on to the barren land and bringing forth the birth of a new sprout known as civilization.

The guide on the ground waved his signal sticks, notifying the helicopter it was safe to land.

After coming to a complete stop, Jiang Chen jumped out of the helicopter and saw Chu Nan already waiting at the door.

When the helicopter first appeared on the radar, Chu Nan immediately rushed over.

"I haven't seen you in a while... How long has it been?" Jiang Chen exclaimed to his old friend.

"Half a year already. Do you want to check my place out?" Chu Nan laughed.

Compared to everyone else, he went through the most significant change. Jiang Chen recalled that when he first freed him from the basement, he still had naïveness on his face. But now, he was calm and reserved.

"Of course, it is convenient," Jiang Chen gladly accepted his invitation.

An ordinary looking car stopped in front of them. The driver saluted and opened the door for them.

It was a ten-minute drive before the car arrived at the council building. At the top of the council building was the offices of the military government, and two of the rooms were Chu Nan's home.

Chu Nan warmly invited Jiang Chen inside, and they sat on the sofa. Zhou Xiaoxia in casual clothes walked out to pour water for

them. Just by looking at her, the former lone traveler's mental state seemed to have recovered drastically. Although he didn't know if she has regained her memory, at least she didn't live in the misery of the Huizhong Mercenaries anymore.

The two chatted and began to discuss the development of the Sixth Street.

"Because of the influence of economic growth, the total population of the Sixth Street grew from 53,021 last quarter to 82,102 this quarter. The number of factories increased from 37 to 239; the number of registered merchants went up from 301 to 2000, and there are 29 new mercenaries, 105 hunting teams, and 421 scavenger groups."

"These are explosive numbers." Jiang Chen couldn't do anything but praise him.

Chu Nan nodded. "Economic growth primarily benefited from the crusade last fall. The population growth was attributable to economic growth and political stabilization."

"And your wise decisions," Jiang Chen mocked.

"Haha, it is your wise promotion," Chu Nan said humbly.

"Haha, don't give me that, your achievement is your achievement."

Chu Nan didn't reply, but the smile on his face indeed showed pride.

Chu Nan cleared his throat as he continued, "After the good news, there is the bad news."

"Oh? What's the bad news?"

"The survivors that escaped from Jia city to the Sixth Street brought information from the west. This spring, the mutated humans attacked the Defenders from the Seventh Area. With the funding of the Dusk Church, they captured Jia city. Because of

this, the number of trade routes decreased by 60% from Hang city, and the routes entering Wanghai from the southwest were practically blocked."

After he listened to Chu Nan's report, he raised his eyebrows.

Jia city lied in between Wanghai and Hang city. If the mutated humans captured this area, the merchants between Wanghai and Hang must be affected. Compared to the bandits without an organization, the organized mutated humans were obviously more concerning.

"And your opinion is?"

"Organize the second crusade with the goal of freeing Jia," Chu Nan said succinctly.

A rather aggressive proposal.

"The second crusade? What's there to take away from the mutated humans?" Jiang Chen was somewhat surprised by the proposal.

"Do you still remember their equipment?" Chu Nan with a smile looked at Jiang Chen.

Equipment?

Other than heavy machineguns, and the armor on their body...

D-grade steel!

Jiang Chen suddenly realized.

"There are ample amount of steel reserves in the mutated humans' head. There was enough to turn them into armors and treat them as moving fortresses. The last crusade for the source of bacteria brought crystals here and ignited the fire of industrialization. And this crusade will bring the steel that will be necessary to fuel the flame of industrialization.

Needless to say, it was an attractive proposal.

Although Jiang Chen could solve the problem of iron ores, C-grade steel required more than just iron; there was a high requirement for rare metals. The mutated humans' C-grade steel was there and available; it was undoubtedly a good choice.

"When are you planning to act?" Jiang Chen asked in an undertone.

"Departing in the fall, finishing by winter," He answered quickly.

This guy clearly has been planning this as he even had a strategy in place. Departing in the fall and finishing by winter, it would leave an ample amount of time to prepare while finishing the battle before the mutated humans gain the advantage during winter. It was also the perfect timing to eliminate the obstacles before the next spring for the trade routes.

Even excluding economic reasons, the mutated humans were a big concern. Even if the Sixth Street didn't send out a force in the fall, there was no guarantee that they would not invade during the winter.

But it was approaching June, was there enough time to prepare the crusade?

Jiang Chen began to deliberate this in his mind.

Chapter 371: Shell Grains

"If we do fight, what's our probability of winning?"

Jiang Chen thought Chu Nan would give him an accurate response, but he shook his head.

"Hard to say."

"Why?" Jiang Chen asked.

"From the current command structure, even if we mobilize more troops, it would still be hard to win." Chu Nan was straightforward.

"Changing the command structure... Do you have any recommendations?"

Before he headed back last time, Jiang Chen had been thinking about this problem, but he didn't really have an idea. He has established the administrative structure, but the military one... To be honest, other than knowing how to play a few strategy games, he was completely illiterate in military knowledge.

"I don't know too much about military command. Didn't you capture a Colonel? She probably knows more than all of us," Chu Nan said.

A glimpse of awkwardness flashed across Jiang Chen's face as his eyes drifted to the side.

"Ahem, she still hasn't given up her loyalty to the organization."

With a slight frown, Chu Nan pondered, "That shouldn't be possible, is there something wrong with the chip... Do you need me to help you?"

"No need, I can take care of it," Jiang Chen quickly rejected the proposal.

Chu Nan took a moment to process before he looked at Jiang Chen dubiously.

"Allow me to be honest, it is not wise to have compassion for the captive. Her knowledge is extremely critical to your cause, I hope general can consider seriously."

"I will." Jiang Chen gave a vague answer, "I will do my best to reform the command structure. Do you have a preparatory plan for the crusade?"

Seeing that Jiang Chen didn't want to continue on the topic, Chu Nan knew it was best to talk about something else, "Of course. First, is military resources. We can use the bank to distribute war bonds in order to fund the war. The payment will be the supplies obtained from the mutated humans. Then we will use the gathered funding to purchase from the major military factories for weapon and ammo, this will inject some life into the stagnate military industry. At the same time, the funding will be used to hire mercenaries and hunting teams, as well as pay for the salary of the soldiers reporting to duty."

"Not a bad plan." Jiang Chen praised.

A war that wouldn't cost a single cent, but would instead make money. Using the citizens' money to pay for the military bill of the Fishbone base, and using the orders to promote economic growth. It was a brilliant move.

"What about the soldiers? How many soldiers can we mobilize?" Jiang Chen continued to ask.

"Approximately 1000 soldiers."

A sufficient number, Jiang Chen nodded, pleased. Including the 1000 slaves Jiang Chen purchased, he will have 2000 soldiers. Once training is completed, the Fishbone base's military personnel will more than double.

"Then the preparation for the crusade will be up to you, if there is nothing else, I will head out now."

Jiang Chen stood up.

Seeing that Jiang Chen was about to leave, Chu Nan also stood up and walked him to the door.

...

Although he still needed to take care of some things, Jiang Chen was not in a rush. It has been more than a year; he wanted to see how developed the small city has become.

After exchanging departing words with Chu Nan, Jiang Chen strolled through the Inner Circle before he headed to the Outer Circle.

Compared to last year, this place did indeed become more prosperous.

The buildings along the side of the streets were all renovated, a lot of them were bulldozed down and rebuilt into three or four story high buildings. Just by standing here, ignoring the yellowish green radiation dust, it didn't feel like the wasteland at all.

Busy crowds; a variety of items. The lone travelers with rifles on their backs negotiated prices with the store owners while soldiers in carbon-nano combat suit maintained the order of the market. Other than the everyday clothes worn by the Wanghai survivors, there occasionally would be someone with drastically different looking clothes. Some were from Luzhou 400 kilometers away, some were from the Wu city, some were even from the North Alliance Area.

While they brought crystals and goods, they also brought missing technology. For example, a useful smart mechanical dog that could carry up to 100 kilograms of supplies in all terrains eased the scavengers from carrying all the garbage. Another example was the silk from a species of mutated spiders. The silk could be produced into the chemical adhesive and used as a replacement to the commonly used adhesive. A lot of private factories already absorbed such technologies and started to manufacture these new goods.

The former ghetto was already bulldozed down with apartment buildings being built. Most were private properties with a small portion owned by the military government as shelters. There were no more malnourished prostitutes. What replaced them were legally operated entertainment centers and sex workers dressed appropriately. There were no more refugees on the street waiting for their death. As long as the person was able-bodied, they could find a job in the Sixth Street.

The difference here compared to one year ago was the idea of civilization.

"Don't miss the opportunity! Fresh shell grains! Take a look!"

A merchant's shouting drew Jiang Chen's attention.

A not-so-spacious store was crowded with people. Two mercenary-looking workers were packaging the grains on the scale. The merchant in animal fur shouted while accepting payment from the customer and handing them the bags of shell grain.

"Shell grain?" Jiang Chen looked at the bags of grains in surprise.

He got closer and asked the merchant.

"How much is this?"

"One kilogram for three crystals, no haggling." The merchant didn't recognize Jiang Chen's face, so he must be an outsider.

[It is similar to the price of a bag of instant noodles; slightly cheaper than rice.] Jiang Chen thought.

"Where are these things being transported from?" Jiang Chen asked.

The merchant looked at Jiang Chen cautiously and didn't respond right away. He only said, "Are you going to buy it or not? If you are not, then move."

Jiang Chen didn't mind his rudeness as he took out three grain-

sized crystals and threw it in the merchant's hand.

"Give me one kilogram."

When the merchant saw the crystals, a smile quickly appeared on his face as he handed him a bag of shell grains with both of his hands.

With the bag of shell grains in his hand, Jiang Chen stood there for a while before he walked to the warehouse area.

When he arrived, Zhao Chenwu had been waiting at the door for a while. Beside him was another person, Hu Youde from the giant pit.

Hu Youde's eyes lit up when he saw Jiang Chen and quickly went up to greet him.

"Mr. Jiang, we meet again. I brought the slaves you wanted."

"Where are they?" Jiang Chen looked around. There was no one else in sight.

"Ahem, of course, it is not here. Slave business is usually done at the shelter outside of the wall. It is a rule set by you," Zhao Chenwu walked up and explained to Jiang Chen.

Could be a rule established by Chu Nan. Jiang Chen didn't know.

Chapter 372: Mining Resources Deposition Map

The three came to the slave trade area at the Outer Circle. After Jiang Chen paid the twenty thousand crystals, the one thousand slaves were transferred under his name. Escorted by Fishbone soldiers, the slaves in shredded clothes walked in the direction of the underground tunnel.

They will be brought to the Fishbone base and receive three months of military training. If they successfully pass, they will be promoted to lower citizen. For the people that can't pass, they will be transported to the colonies for production work.

Hu Youde gave an elaborative bow after he received the crystals from Jiang Chen and then left with his back hunched.

"I bought something from a store at the Sixth Street... Do you know where these came from?" After he dragged Zhao Chenwu to the side, Jiang Chen took out the bag of shell grains.

"Shell grains? I know about this. It was not until my trade fleet left the province of Suhang did I realize the wasteland was far bigger than we have imagined. In Jinchu land 600 kilometers away, the survivors there all grow these types of crops. Only recently did these crops arrive here." Zhao Chenwu stared at the bullet shell sized grains as he forced a smile.

"How's the production quantity of these?" Jiang Chen asked in an undertone.

"The production quantity is substantial, but there is a strict requirement for soil quality. Only soil with both radiation and contamination below 20 could be used. Thus no soil in Wanghai fits this condition. Even in Jinchu, there is not a lot of land that can produce this crop. Although the plantation tower can grow this, the cost would be high.

Zhao Chenwu paused and grabbed a few grains out of the bag.

"The starch of this type of shell grain possess a few types of special plant proteins because of its compact structure. If it were cooked into rice, usually the outside would be overcooked, but the inside would still be undercooked. Therefore, this type of shell grain would usually be used to make flour and then mixed with a special type of butter produced by mutant meat to make bread or cookie, or even alcohol. My trade fleet saw those in Wu city. Of course, when I saw that they could produce food... To be honest, I was surprised. I originally thought that only the Northern Area Alliance and some of the fallout shelters could produce food, but somehow people managed to discover an edible mutated crop."

Radiation brought too many surprises to this land. Similar to no one knowing what monsters would walk out from the nuclear pit, no one knows what treasures are hidden inside. When the plants from the old world could no longer grow on this piece of soil, new plants of the new world replaced them and prospered.

"Would this type of mutated plant not accumulate toxins?" Jiang Chen was confused.

In his impression, the reason why most of the plants on the wasteland land could not be used was due to the toxins in the soil accumulating in the plant itself. It was the reason why mutated fruits were not edible and could only be used as ingredients for nutrient supplies.

"The shell grain is unique. The toxins are accumulated in the shell of the grain so it can be edible without throwing it into the organic converter." Zhao Chenwu let out a sigh.

This was not good news. With the crop flowing into Wanghai, it would impact the monopoly that the Fishbone base and Zhao corporation have in the food business. Although the taste was nowhere comparable to rice, for the poor that could not afford rice, it was a good substitute.

Seeing that Jiang Chen was silent, Zhao Chenwu proposed.

"I recommended Chu Nan increase the tax on shell grains."

"Oh? His response was?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Free trade." Zhao Chenwu shrugged helplessly.

"He has the same idea as me."

"Okay, since this is your business." Zhao Chenwu saw that Jiang Chen was not moved, sighed, and didn't insist.

Protectionism was meaningless other than making the poor unable to afford the top grain, even if they didn't eat this, it was unlikely they would purchase the food they couldn't afford anyway.

Subjectively speaking, the shell grains existing in the Sixth Street would be helpful in boosting the population. Only with enough food could it feed more people. From a long-term perspective, its entry is more beneficial.

...

After he departed with Zhao Chenwu, it was getting late. Therefore, Jiang Chen decided to stay the night at Paradise Island hotel.

The next morning, Jiang Chen took the helicopter back to the Fishbone base.

One thousand slaves stood at the square in front of the community center, under the statue of the Mother of Death Claw. The slaves' clothes were all replaced with Fishbone's uniform. Although they were not at ease with what was happening, they didn't have room to resist with a rifle pointed towards them.

Cheng Weiguo was on top of the temporarily installed podium and was lecturing the new recruits. He then announced the rules of the Fishbone base as well as the training plan for the next three months.

Jiang Chen avoided the square and returned to the mansion before he went to Yao Yao's room.

The bedroom door was open when he walked in. The loli was working on a mechanical helmet.

"Ahh, big brother is back, is there something you need me for?" Yao Yao's eyes immediately lit up with stars when she noticed Jiang Chen. She took off her welding mask and turned around in joy.

Her thin legs dangled on the side of the chair as they matched perfectly with her pink dress.

"Mhmm, there is something. What is this?" Jiang Chen rubbed her head.

"A brainwave signal converter device. If sister Xiaorou could put it on, she could walk without a wheelchair," Yao Yao's large eyes as she said in happiness.

"Really? Then thank you Yao Yao."

With a shy blush on her face, Yao Yao smiled. "It is all Lin Lin's work, I only worked on the database and chip processing."

Lin Lin? He didn't think she would care so much for other people. Jiang Chen was delighted by the thought.

"Big brother has something that Yao Yao can help with?" Yao Yao blinked her crystal-like eyes as she scanned Jiang Chen's face.

"Mhmm. Sun Jiao copied the library's database to your place right? Could you search for me if there are mining resources deposition maps in there."

"Mining resources deposition maps? Let me look for them."

The white stocking covered feet was just long enough to reach the slippers on the floor. Yao Yao slid her chair to the other computer table as she rapidly typed on the screen. A blue loading bar appeared in the middle.

Half a minute later, 37 search results popped up.

Jiang Chen stood behind her as he confirmed map by map, but he didn't see anything he wanted.

"Why are these all production output data... No specific deposition information?" Jiang Chen forced a smile.

"... Sorry, I didn't manage to help you." Yao Yao lowered her head in disappointment.

"No, it is not Yao Yao's fault. Perhaps this geological information is too sensitive and not recorded in the city library's database," Jiang Chen comforted her.

It made sense. How would these key information appear in a library open to all everyone?

"...if it is not in the library, would it be at the Wanghai Geology Ministry?" Yao Yao suggested. She didn't want to just give up.

Ministry of? That's a good idea.

"Could your computer search for the location of it?"

The map on the EP was only an aerial map. It could only recognize stations, airports, hospital or other prominent landmarks.

"No problem, leave it up to Yao Yao! The library's database has city maps from before the war... Here it is." As she said this, Yao Yao already dragged out the map and presented it in front of Jiang Chen.

"On the outskirts of the city center?"

Jiang Chen with a frown stared at the red dot on the map.

Chapter 373: Airborne

The helicopter engine roared.

Sitting in the cabin, Jiang Chen conducted a final check of the equipment on him. He was wearing the new sample model of the T-4 power armor.

Pitch black painting and thick front armor. The armor renowned for its defense looked a lot more reliable than the T-3.

"Weapon system, functional, power system, functional..."

Lights flashed as Jiang Chen scanned each of the modules of the power armor. Although there were some differences to the operating system compared to the T-3, the look remained mostly the same.

The cursor in his field vision moved with the focal point of his pupils. After he confirmed that all systems were operational, Jiang Chen grinned at the T-3 across from him.

Of course, throw the metal box, he knew she couldn't see him.

"Are you a kid?" Sun Jiao mocked.

"Eh?"

"Remember to close your communication channel next time you chuckle like that," Sun Jiao, without any consideration of his dignity, continued to mock him.

Yao Yao beside Jiang Chen giggled discreetly while covering her mouth. She was not in a power armor but had an earphone attached to her mouth; she could obviously hear their conversation.

Zhao Gang in a carbon nano suit had a Ghost Sniper Rifle in his hand. He sat there without saying a word. From the not-so-expressive face, Jiang Chen couldn't determine if he had no reaction or was trying hard not to laugh.

As to the two other soldiers in power armor, Jiang Chen guessed they didn't dare to laugh.

"Yao Yao put on the protective suit," Sun Jiao reminded her.

They were about to enter the high radiation zone.

"Mhmm." Yao Yao obediently took out the full grey body protective suit and stepped inside.

The mission was simple, airdrop at the Ministry of Geology and retreat by helicopter.

Combat units: four power armors, one sniper, and one hacker.

To conduct a mission in the zombie concentrated city center, there was no use in having an advantage in numbers. Unless an army was sent, there was no way you could outnumber the zombies. Of course, there was no point to do that just for a resource deposition map.

Because the helicopter was equipped with the Type-50 electromagnetic cannon, not including the pilots, it could only transport a maximum of six power armors. Because the T-4s weighed nearly double the T-3s, they barely managed to squeeze in four people.

With the consideration that they could encounter a Death Claw or other problematic mutants, the people executing the mission must have strong combat ability.

However, while the Fishbone base had a lot of soldiers, most of them were slaves before. They did receive training, but their training was mostly just normal combat. Qingpu's survivors were all experienced hunters capable of hunting mutants, but Jiang Chen never allowed them to learn how to operate a power armor.

Based on the information security level of the Ministry of Geology, Yao Yao must follow them. She was young, but her gift in programming was not bad to begin with. After a year of extensive studying, no one had better skills than her in the entire base.

Sun Jiao disagreed with Jiang Chen coming along as she stated that she would protect Yao Yao, just like when they robbed the vault together. Nonetheless, Jiang Chen was still worried as it was near the city center. The danger level was nowhere comparable with the banks at Qingpu, so he insisted on going with them.

"Arriving at the target location," The pilot's voice sounded in the public channel.

"I am the first post."

Zhao Gang stood up, grabbed the descending jetpack on his back, and walked to the hatch.

The hatch opened as turbulence flooded in.

Yao Yao tightly held onto Jiang Chen's hand and narrowed her adorable eyes.

Zhang Gang bumped fist with the gunner inside the hatch and then jumped down without hesitation.

He landed on a skyscraper a thousand meter away from the Ministry of Geology to provide sniping support while guiding the cannon.

The hatch door didn't close; the helicopter moved forward another one thousand meters before it hovered over their destination.

"Prepare to depart," Jiang Chen spoke in the public channel, then squeezed Yao Yao's hand, and walked to the hatch.

"First time parachuting?" Sun Jiao spoke into the private channel.

"I have tried countless times in the virtual reality training chamber."

Jiang Chen grinned, and then followed the person in front of him, jumping from a thousand meters above ground.

The chilling wind swept across the surface of the armor, the

turbulence screeched beside his ears.

Different from the training inside the virtual reality chamber, there was no loading here, there was no opportunity to redo once failed.

"Height 900 meters." Sun Jiao's calm voice transmitted from the public channel.

"700 meters-"

"500 meters."

"Open the descending device."

At the same time, Jiang Chen activated the turbine engines behind him.

The eerie blue flame burst out as the drag force quickly halted the rapid downfall of the power armor. The scenery on the ground gradually increased in size. Through the helmet, Jiang Chen already saw the street tightly packed with zombies.

The airport was nearby, and before the war, it was a high traffic area. The dead bodies not cleaned up were the culture of X1 bacteria.

The engine output was at its maximum. Jiang Chen adjusted his landing position with both feet directed at the ground.

Boom!

Concrete dust scattered everywhere as two giant pits appeared on the concrete ground.

The zombies' blank stares moved in their direction as their eyes began to turn a bloodthirsty red. The daytime was not its home field, but this didn't mean they will let the living creature beside their mouths escape.

Without stopping, Jiang Chen immediately raised his left leg and swept away the zombies leaping at him like a hammer.

The trident revolving machine guns rotated as bullets splashed out like raindrops. It took down a giant area of zombies.

At the same time, the other power armors all landed.

"Enter the Ministry of Geology," as soon as she gained footing, Sun Jiao immediately ordered.

"Understood."

Three replies echoed as the four quickly moved towards the building.

Because it was located at the outskirts of the city center, they were uncertain about the stability of the building. The power armor's landing location, therefore, couldn't be chosen on the roof of the building. The threat of a thrower and an acid bug that possessed long-range threat meant that the helicopters couldn't be too close to the ground, so the four could only drop onto the street.

They dashed into the door. Jiang Chen who was responsible for the securing the backend kicked a few zombies dashing at him to the other side of the street. Then he fired his machine gun at the waves of zombies.

At the same time, a thousand meter away.

Zhao Gang crawled onto the roof with the crosshairs at the zombies flooding towards the Ministry of Geology.

In the scope, a three meters high thrower waved its feeble legs, and giant stomach stumbled towards the door before it threw the infant zombie in its hand.

The infant sized zombie was aimed directly at Jiang Chen, but it was dissected into several parts by a bullet.

"Distance 1100 meters."

Zhao Gang took a deep breath and pressed the trigger.

Bang-!

Over 1100 meters in the distance, the sniper rifle bullet penetrated the neck of the thrower without any doubt.

The black blood splattered everywhere, and the thrower immediately died. At the same time, its stomach blew up as a bunch of zombie infants crawled out and let out terrifying screams.

It was the monster that was the most difficult to deal with in the city center. The infant zombies would expand rapidly when it approached its target. Then, it would blow up and emit highly concentrated zombie bacteria. Although these type of attacks were ineffective against the power armor that defended against nuclear, biological, and chemical weapons, it was the most difficult to deal with to the rather slow infantries.

Not far away in the distance, a few more throwers were moving towards the Ministry of Geology. Even two Roshans were slowly moving in their direction.

"Should be ready?"

When he saw Jiang Chen's hand signal, Zhao Gang understood. He aimed the crosshair at the waves of zombies as he flipped open the laser mark switch.

"10 kilograms mass bomb loaded."

"Fire-"

Followed by the rumble that broke through the sound barrier, one bomb landed from the sky and smashed into the middle of the zombies.

Boom-!

The shells scattered as it completely swept the area.

When the dust faded, Jiang Chen and the team already retreated into the building.

The zombies who had lost the target roared for a moment longer

before they returned to their slowness.

"Direct hit, nice shot." Zhao Gang grinned and closed the laser marker.

Just like the plan, this mission was not difficult.

Chapter 374: Underground Data Center

Using the stairs, Jiang Chen headed up to the roof and placed the airdrop marker on a relatively flat piece of ground.

After about fifteen minutes, Yao Yao drifted down from the air with the descending jetpack in a trail of blue flames.

It was her first time parachuting. When the girl landed, her body was still tensed up. Not until Jiang Chen took off her jetpack did her pale face gain back some life.

Sun Jiao observed the zombies returning to peace on the street. "Ok, all is ready, prepare for action," she ordered in the public channel as she took out her tactical rifle.

"Roger."

Including Jiang Chen, the three all took out their weapons, locked and loaded.

"Don't be afraid, follow me." Jiang Chen comforted the girl in the private channel.

"Mhmm!"

Yao Yao's face turned slightly red as she followed behind Jiang Chen.

The excessive protection and the happiness it brought almost made her dizzy. Although it was not the first time she was out executing a mission, it was her first time with Jiang Chen.

The space inside the Ministry of Geology was spacious, and the transparent rotating stairs headed deep into the ground. From the design of the stairs alone, Jiang Chen felt the deep ill intention of the designer. It was a statement against people who feared height. But what he didn't know was that these stairs were made mostly for decoration purposes. In the highly digitalized 22nd century, rarely did people choose such an outdated method to move.

The building design extending down was standard in the 22nd century. To stuff in the ten billion people in PAC while retaining arable land, it was a must choice for history to expand downwards. The wealthy people lived in the skyscrapers, and the poor lived at the base of it. This was the culture before the war.

Yao Yao without combat ability stayed in the middle with Jiang Chen while a T-4 soldier in front scouted for any dangers in the dark building.

"Why are there no zombies inside this type of building?" Jiang Chen asked Sun Jiao in the private channel.

Since they were in the office area, there should be a lot of bodies here.

"Two possibilities. The people here before the war evacuated on time, or it may be a mutant nest." Sun Jiao scanned the dark zone with her tactical flashlight.

"Which possibility do you lean towards?"

"Nobody, should be the first?" Jiang Chen was unsure.

"Why a questioning tone?"

"Because there is no absolute in the wasteland. After being peaceful for so long... I feel like my instinct is a bit dull." Sun Jiao sighed.

Jiang Chen didn't respond as he was even more alert than before. The mechanical crosshair moved to every corner where danger could arise.

For some reason, the underground without a bottom made him feel unsettled.

15th floor underground.

When they stepped down the last stair, the five finally came to the bottom. Jiang Chen opened the map to confirm the location of the data center before he walked to the hallway near the wall.

"Dam*it, what is this?" A soldier poked the egg on the wall with his muzzle as he cursed in a small voice.

"Don't touch anything!"

Sun Jiao shouted in the public channel as the soldier immediately moved back.

"What is that?" Directing a flashlight towards it, Jiang Chen stopped as he looked at the watermelon-sized eggs along the wall.

Sun Jiao went up and examined it carefully.

"I don't know... I have never seen this before. The database in the EP doesn't show anything yet. Should we collect some for sampling?"

Jiang Chen scanned the disgusting eggs that gave him goosebumps.

"Do it when we leave." If the eggs are connected to the mother somehow, damaging it would create unnecessary uncertainties.

Yao Yao looked around anxiously. For some reason, she had an ominous feeling.

Feeling Yao Yao's unease, Jiang Chen comforted her in a soft voice.

"Don't be afraid, I will protect you."

"Mhmm... I heard a weird voice."

"Voice?"

Jiang Chen frowned, he didn't hear anything.

Yao Yao said in a low voice, "It's a weird kind of noise. Perhaps it's just my illusion, don't worry."

Illusion?

Jiang Chen hesitantly looked down the hall. Since they were already there, it was not his style to return empty-handed.

The five people continued to move, with Jiang Chen leading. After the discovery of the eggs of an unknown creature, no one let their guard down anymore as they used 200% of their focus and cautiously looked out for any potential threats.

Yao Yao still tightly followed behind Jiang Chen.

Although the cold armor didn't feel like his warm temperature, the close distance made her feel more at ease.

"Fu*k, the eggs are everywhere." A soldier cursed out as his rifle pointed at the glass down the hall. The flashlight light up the entire room as the eggs filled the space.

"Try not to alert them, finish as soon as we can," Jiang Chen ordered.

"Yes!"

After they passed through the last door, they finally reached the data center.

Inside the circular room was four screens that pointed in each direction. On the outskirts of the room were computers that stopped functioning. Along the arc-shaped dome, light filtered through. Paper documents and broken touchscreen were scattered everywhere on the floor. Together with the dust, it made a crunching sound when stepped on.

Yao Yao walked into the room as she gently put her hand on her left chest.

The sound was getting closer.

For some reason, the faint static noise made her feel comfortable.

She wanted to say something, but she clenched her teeth and resisted the temptation. Although she enjoyed Jiang Chen's care for her, subconsciously she didn't want him to treat her as a child that must be protected.

Two soldiers guarded the door, Jiang Chen and Sun Jiao brought

Yao Yao forward.

Sun Jiao took out the backup crystal fuel rod and inserted it into the backup power slot of the server. The faint sound of electricity flowing appeared. After many years, the servers finally flashed the light green indicator light.

"Start." Jiang Chen encouragingly looked at Yao Yao.

Yao Yao nodded and walked to the computer.

But at that time, the screens lit up.

A familiar face appeared in the middle of the screens.

"That's surprising, we meet again."

Looking at the completely shocked Jiang Chen, Lin Chaoen sneered.

Chapter 375: We meet again

Yao Yao blankly stared at the person on the screen.

Jiang Chen subtly raised his muzzle, but Lin Chaoen raised his hands, surrendering.

"Don't overreact, are you not going to wait for me to finish?"

"Instinct tells me that it is not words I want to hear." Maintaining his shooting position, Jiang Chen locked right onto him.

Lin Chaoen?

Why would this guy appear here?

"Who is he?" Sun Jiao looked at Lin Chaoen with a frown.

"A robot that always causes trouble for me. Whether it is intentional or not," Jiang Chen said.

"No, no, no, you may have mistaken." Lin Chaoen waved his hands and smiled, "I don't have any intention to cause anyone trouble, or rather, I am your only destination."

"Destination?" Jiang Chen had a dubious smile.

"That's right, nothing is more adaptable than a metallic body in this miserable world. Join us, we'll grant you the perfect body. A body that will never age, and never die." His smile was noble, but it shined the same way as a demon's.

"Just like you?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows and laughed.

"Stronger than me." Lin Chaoen's smile was bright.

[Looks like it didn't take much to convince him. Therefore, the Sixth Street will be part of supreme's territory.]

"In your dreams." Jiang Chen laughed.

The smile froze on Lin Chaoen's face.

"Then that's disappointing." Lin Chaoen sighed.

As an intermediate artificial intelligence, he didn't have anger as an emotion. Or rather, even his smile was fake.

As his words died down, a sharp screech came out of the datacenter. Immediately followed by the sound of bubbles bursting.

"What happened!" Sun Jiao's became alerted as she aimed for the door.

The two soldiers raised the revolving machinegun on their left arm and anxiously aimed at the empty hallway.

"Poison teeth spider, an interesting bug."

The door to the side of the hallway opened.

The dense sound of the floor being scratched diffused through. Under the light of the flashlight, spiders the size of a shepherd moved its furry legs and flooded the room to the data center at the end of the hallway.

"Fire!" Sun Jiao shouted and first pressed the trigger.

Tatata-!

The sparks from the bullets wavered in the hall and shredded the spiders into pieces. Flesh could not stand the test of machineguns, but machineguns could not sever the flow of the water. The endless amount of spiders like turbulent floods flowed forward, crushing the dead bodies before them.

Dam*mit! Too many!

Sun Jiao gritted her teeth; her finger locked on the trigger.

At the same time, a grenade was launched, and fire exploded inside the hallway.

Dark green blood and severed corpses splattered onto the two soldiers' faces.

Four more grenades were launched as flame filled up the

enclosed space.

After the flame dispersed, the burning smell of flesh filled up the entire hallway. Traces of unextinguished flames still remained on the ground, but not a simple, complete Poison Teeth Spider could be found.

Burning grenade, the terminator of all carbon-based creatures.

"When did robots learn how to breed bugs?' Jiang Chen put down the gun and looked at Lin Chaoen in disgust.

Although he knew that with the mask of the power armor, Lin Chaoen could not see his disgust.

"I only closed the subwoofer suppresser that prevented these little things from breaking their egg. If you have time, why don't you give the disgusting but cute pets a new name? Since as intermediate artificial intelligence, I don't have any creativity," Lin Chaoen said courteously.

"Voice... disappeared." Yao Yao released her hand pressed to her chest and stared at the person on the screen.

Because she spent a lot of time on electronic devices, she was sensitive to this type of noise.

"That's right, disappeared." Lin Chaoen gently smiled, "Therefore, it should come out too."

The ground began to tremble as a series of sharp glass shattering noises came from the room across the hallway, but then quickly faded.

"What is it?" Jiang Chen was concerned.

Shining a light in that direction resulted in emptiness.

"Are you really not going to consider surrendering? If you are willing to receive the salvation of the supreme, I may consider sparing you." Lin Chaoen smiled.

"I'm willing." Jiang Chen's face never blushed when he lied.

"There is a special medicine on the table at the corner. Although it is not prepared for you, drink it-"

"In your dreams." Jiang Chen lifted the rifle and unleashed the bullets.

The screens shattered.

"Yao Yao, extract the data." Jiang Chen ordered calmly.

"Ah, ah! Okay." Yao Yao recovered from the shock as she returned to the screen and her fingers rapidly moved between the keys.

"Sun Jiao, deploy the drones."

"Okay!"

The hummingbird drones were released from the back storage into the hallway.

After it stabilized its position in the air, the drone flew to the hallway across from them as it shared the image from its camera to the team.

But the instant the drone crossed the door, Jiang Chen saw an angry face.

The deathly silk covered every inch of the ceiling as the giant body filled up the entire room. Its terrifying teeth were like manes as they densely filled the mouth.

A giant spider.

The thick hair and teeth gave Jiang Chen a daunting chill down his spine.

Although he didn't know how to read the expression of a spider, it must be furious right now since he probably just saw them kill all of its children. He then recollected the subwoofer suppressor that Lin Chaoen mentioned as he tried to figure out the relationship between Lin Chaoen and the spider.

For some reason, Lin Chaoen bred these spider eggs and then used the subwoofer suppressor to suppress the mother spider at a specific location. While Jiang Chen didn't know why he bred these spiders, it must not be for a friendly purpose.

The drone suddenly stopped.

Like a mosquito stuck in a spider web, it was glued tight.

Then a black shadow cut through before the picture turned into a static white.

"What are we going to do?" Sun Jiao asked on the private channel.

[With this type of monster, the power armor is probably not enough.]

Jiang Chen looked at Yao Yao.

The girl was completely calm. Her fingers rapidly moved between the screens, hacking the security software.

"The data is extracted!" It was a young but affirmative voice.

"Could the subwoofer suppressor be activated?" Jiang Chen asked.

"... No, it's already deleted." Yao Yao desperately tried to recover the deleted the program, but the opponent completely removed any traces of it.

"Take the USB and get ready to leave," Jiang Chen reloaded and ordered.

"But the outside-" Sun Jiao reminded him.

"Helicopter, fire at the Ministry of Geology!" He connected himself to the pilot channel and immediately ordered.

Chapter 376: Retreat

Fire at the Ministry of Geology?

But aren't they inside?

The helicopter crew only hesitated for two seconds before they executed the mission.

As knights of the Fishbone base, the leader's order is absolute.

"Target locked."

"Fire."

The gunner pressed the trigger.

Buzz-!

The 10 kilograms bomb penetrated through the three-floor high dome. The shattered concrete crumbled like an avalanche and dropped to the lower underground level. The explosion exposed the deep underground structure underneath.

Rocks and debris rained down and penetrated the web and hit the giant spider on the back. Unfortunately, the slightly off-target bomb got stuck on the wall of the B12 level and didn't directly hit the giant spider, the collapsed concrete debris still destroyed the spider web and pinned the massive beast to the bottom floor.

"Siiiiiiii!"

The pained screech came from across the hall. The hurt spider moved its fearsome legs in an attempt to stand up.

"Are you crazy, if this building collapses, we might-" Sun Jiao shouted.

Jiang Chen continued to order, "Continue to fire."

Boom-!

The dust caused by the explosion covered the entire hallway. Jiang Chen covered Yao Yao with his arms. At the same time, the

rumbling dust swept through the hallway and inside the data center. The falling rocks made a series of clanking sound on the power armor of the two soldiers.

There was no more noise from the other side; the spider died.

Sun Jiao dusted off the rifle and gave Jiang Chen a hard stare.

"You almost buried us."

"I didn't, did I?" Jiang Chen shrugged innocently.

Yao Yao hidden behind Jiang Chen peeked her head out, quivering.

"It's okay now," Jiang Chen rubbed Yao Yao's head as he said lightly.

"Woooo-" But the loli docked down covering her head.

"Fool, your hands are full of dust," Sun Jiao mocked in the private channel.

Jiang Chen had to retract his hand awkwardly.

[This girl is getting more naughty, I'll teach her a lesson when we go back.]

Jiang Chen stared back at Sun Jiao.

Though with the mask in between, they couldn't see each other's expression.

...

He ordered the soldiers to take samples of the giant spider as well as the remaining spider eggs, then Jiang Chen ordered the retreat.

Although the majority of the structure of the surface had collapsed, fortunately, the collapsed concrete blocks didn't completely drop underground to bury the team alive.

The rotating stair was destroyed, Sun Jiao hugged Yao Yao, and the four power armors started to ascend with the blue trail of flames.

It incident didn't alert the zombies, but the four giant metal suits attracted the attention of the throwers. This type of mutated zombie has an acute vision and a natural anti-air unit. It dragged their infant zombies and threw it at Sun Jiao near the shambles.

Jiang Chen saw this and took out his tactical rifle instantly. With his right hand holding the barrel, he swung the rifle like a baseball bat at the infant zombie.

Follow by a stuffed sound; the barrel hit the zombie infant back into the air.

It exploded back to where the zombies were.

"Wow, this thing's explosive damage is high." Jiang Chen was caught off guard.

"Thanks." Sun Jiao held the quivering Yao Yao as she playfully gave him a flirty look that he couldn't see.

"Thank me when we go back." Jiang Chen was aiming at the frightening thrower.

Bang-!

A sniper bullet flew by and crushed its neck and managed to secure the kill before Jiang Chen could.

Then a few more shots flew from the distance and broke the neck of the throwers that were threatening the team of five.

Realizing what just happened, Jiang Chen gave a thumbs up to the far distance.

The four power armors cut straight through the ruins. After ascending for 300 meters, they boarded the helicopter before taking off to the skyscraper one thousand meters away.

After Zhao Gang boarded, the pilot closed the hatch and returned.

Jiang Chen opened his helmet when they flew out of the high radiation zone and let out a breath.

"Did you bring the USB?"

"Mhmm." Yao Yao nodded.

"Could you transfer the information to my EP?"

"Of course."

The power armor opened from the back as Jiang Chen squeezed out. He attached the nylon hook to the armor, extended his right arm, and put the EP in front of her.

The loli took out the hologram computer and transferred the USB information inside before attaching the cord to Jiang Chen's EP.

Jiang Chen then realized he performed an unnecessary action. If he knew that Yao Yao brought the hologram computer, it would be more convenient to view the data with that. To strive for stability, the screen of the EP was not only small but also without the hologram function. Looking at the world map was inconvenient.

As the major economic city of PAC, the Ministry of Geology at Wanghai had a comprehensive set of information. Not only did it include the global mining deposition map, it even included the discovered deposition on the moon and Mars.

Jiang Chen called out the stats with the hologram computer as he found the location of Pannu Islands in this world.

He filtered the earthquake information and other stats he didn't understand as he selected the mining deposition option.

When he saw the series of dense red dots, Jiang Chen's expression instantly turned joyful.

Like what he expected, there had to be mining depositions under the vast ocean territory of Pannu Islands.

East of Ange Island, the area near New Guinea, happened to be a rich deposition. Specifically in the Pacific Ring of Fire. Extending northeast, about two hundred thousand square kilometers deep of

ocean territory contained 17 rich, rare earth depositions. The expected rare metal reserve was 9.8 million tons, which was 1.5 times the amount discovered by Japan in South Bird Island.

Other than rare metals, iron, aluminum, molybdenum, copper, and gold also had an insane amount of depositions.

It could not be described merely as a treasure; it was money raining from the sky.

Jiang Chen wanted to go back now to make Yang Yuan start the preparation of mining to solve the rare metal problem that has been giving him headaches.

Underwater mining was a difficult task with technology level of the 21st century, but it was not a big deal for Jiang Chen. He trusted that the scientists of the 22nd century at the fallout shelter could solve a small problem like this.

Of course, he obviously could not return now.

If he did travel back while being one thousand meters in the sky, he would have to experience freefall the next time he returned.

...

Arrived at the Fishbone base, Jiang Chen calmed down from the excitement.

The underwater mining technology was yet to be finished, so there was no use going back now.

He parked the T-4 power armor in the armory and went to find Wang Qin.

He handed the giant spider and spider egg sample to her as he asked her to send it to camp 27 as soon as possible for testing.

Then, Jiang Chen stopped in front of the community center for a while as a wicked smile appeared on his face.

[Lin Chaoen, playing with me? You really think I can't teach you a lesson?]

Chapter 377: Bombardment

Inside Liuding's radar station, twenty workers in old PAC marine uniforms stared at the screen anxiously.

The middle-aged man with a cap on gravely watched the red dot on the radar as a trace of the same anxious expression appeared between his eyebrows.

"Did it launch?"

"Launch confirmed." A drop of cold sweat rolled down his forehead as the worker closest to the general typed on the screen with shaking fingers as it confirmed the reliability of the signal.

[What did that bit*h Tang Miya do, didn't she say she reached an agreement with that lunatic dictator?] With eyes locked on the red dot ascending, the general cursed the person countless times already.

"The missile is approaching the Troposphere."

The general cursed and took out the phone from his waist.

"Attention Cannon one crew, raise the electromagnetic cannon."

"Roger."

Since the failed mission last year, the heavy electromagnetic pulse cannon were not used for a long time. However, because of the Fishbone base's dangerous act, the cannon was reactivated.

But everyone knew that if a war were to erupt, Liuding would be the eventual loser. Once the Fishbone tank bulldozed the feeble allies and approached the Bohai aircraft carrier, it would only be a matter of time before they sink Liuding.

"The missile reached the stratosphere and had started to turn."

"Landing spot confirmed, the target is Songjiang near the outskirts of the city center."

"Alarm deactivated."

In two short seconds, there was a comical turn of events.

Alarm deactivated? Not target towards Liuding?

The general was shocked.

He thought that the dictator at the west of Wanghai finally couldn't sit around any longer as it was prepared to flash its evil fangs at Liuding. But he didn't expect that the ballistic missile's target was not Liuding or Liuding's allies, instead of an unknown force located in the city center?"

The general processed this for a minute before he ordered.

"... Attention air division, send a helicopter to investigate the target area."

"Roger."

...

Dongfeng-76 (Mimic) ballistic missile was developed and constructed by Jiang Lin from the aerospace department. It first displayed its massive destructibility in the war between humans and the mutated humans. With the help of the fallout shelter, Jiang Lin made further improvements to its design, such as replacing the engine, fuel, and modules, to finally complete the Dongfeng-76 (Mimic) ballistic missile.

The Fishbone base manufactured a total of five and deployed them at low grounds near the rural area to replace the not-so-reliable giant firecracker. Using them to deter the threat of Liuding's massive electromagnetic cannon.

Right now, in front of the launch pad at the Shenxiang colony, southwest of Wanghai, a few missile maintenance workers were conducting the last launching check.

The number five launch pad deployed at Shenxiang received the order from the base leader Jiang Chen and immediately initiated

the launch program.

The green indicator light turned on as the target coordinate was inputted into the central control program of the rocket.

"Target coordinate locked."

"Engine ignited."

"Launchpad separated."

"Launch!"

The thick white smoke blew across the street. The six meters high ballistic missile separated with the launch pad and flew towards the sky filled with radiation dust.

The all grey ballistic missile pierced the cloud like a sharp sword.

Then, like a thunderous fireball, it smashed into the ground.

It was the coordinate Jiang Chen obtained from the bearded mercenary, because of their high defense power, Jiang Chen never confirmed if this place had a connection with Lin Chaoen.

But it didn't matter anymore, Lin Chaoen completely and utterly pissed off Jiang Chen.

[Robot? Digitalized human? Whatever your hidden secrets are, go to hell! I will use your base to test my weapon!]

The radar on the apartment detected the ballistic missile, but before the sentry gun could point at the sky, the missile smashed down like a meteor right through the roof and blew in the middle of the apartment building.

The high temperature even melted the concrete. The heat wave mixed with the scattered metal shards and concrete debris exploded the apartment into pieces.

The shockwave of the explosion destroyed the structure of the apartment building.

Five minutes later, two nearby apartment buildings also

collapsed.

...

Standing inside the camp 27 command center, Jiang Chen watched the ruins on the screen.

The shockwave of the explosion even made the drone five kilometers away shake.

"Send a ground force to search the area."

"Yes!" Wang Zhaowu saluted and left the office.

Just as Wang Zhaowu left, Xu Lu walked in.

With a smile on her face, Xu Lu opened the tablet in her hand and reported to Jiang Chen, "The sample results are back. The toxin inside the spider egg has a hallucination agent which could cause people to display symptoms such as madness and foaming at the mouth.

"Hallucination agent?' Jiang Chen said with a frown.

Xu Lu nodded and continued.

"Also, based on pharmacological analysis, the toxin's organic components have many similarities to the drug <Happy Time> sold by the merchant with an unknown identity... Based on initial deductions, the spider eggs are the primary ingredient to produce <Happy Time> Happy time...

[The robot wouldn't need this type of medicine so it would be used for humans. Selling drugs to obtain crystals? Doesn't feel right... Lin Chaoen didn't seem like a merchant.]

And the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, they seemed to have a special relationship with Lin Chaoen.

Supreme?

Jiang Chen leaned against the chair and fell into deep thought with his eyes closed.

If possible, he didn't want to start a war against forces with no conflict of interest. In the apocalypse, people have a lot of ideas. Including the Dusk practicing the escapist ideology, the PLA attempting to restore the 20th-century power, and the supposedly descendent of PAC – The Northern Alliance Area, as well as the force behind Lin Chaoen that represent supreme... From a pure interest perspective, Fishbone had no direct conflict with them.

For some reason, he suddenly recalled the conversation with Academician Qin.

"The rebirth of civilization must be accompanied by bloody brutality." Jiang Chen muttered his words.

Xu Lu, standing not so far away from the desk, silently awaited his instructions.

At the same time, the phone on the table rang and interrupted Jiang Chen's thoughts.

He picked up as a soldier's face surfaced onto the screen. He saluted to Jiang Chen and reported.

"Liuding helicopter entered the target area."

"Liuding?" Jiang Chen scratched his chin.

One of the reasons for launching the missile was revenge. The other reason being a deterrence for Liuding. Since the Dongfeng-76 was not cheap, using it simply for revenge against the force behind Lin Chaoen was too wasteful.

"Don't mind them, continue to search the target area," Jiang Chen ordered.

"Yes!" The soldier saluted again and ended the communication.

Chapter 378: Mental Commissar

The search result came out soon after and Wang Zhaowu was summarizing and reporting the result to Jiang Chen.

The search team comprised of 30 soldiers along with an armored vehicle and two modified trucks mobilized to the destroyed apartment building at the outskirts of the city center. After two hours of thorough investigation, the search team managed to obtain some valuable information.

From the shambles of the explosion, they found the remains of 20 sentry guns and two radars. The actual number would be much higher, but only those could be confirmed.

Other than that, there was some special production equipment that seemed to be for the production of a particular type of parts. But due to the severity of the damage, the search team could not identify the purpose of the parts. From the mutated fruits used to produce nutrient supply, there were human activities there.

There was another surprise that came out of the investigation. In a collapsed corner, they managed to find a half-damaged quantum computer. From the specification, the quantum computer appeared to be the experiment model. Although they didn't know if they would be able to fix it or not, they still hauled it onto the truck.

The helicopter for Liuding didn't interfere with Fishbone's search, it only hovered from afar and didn't even send anyone down.

The only thing that interfered with the research was the group of zombies that gathered because of the noise as well as a Roshan that happened to wander by.

But just as they were about to retreat, the fleet was attacked by a group of militants with an unknown identity.

The militants mostly used laser weapons and launched a sudden attack on the fleet when they were retreating. But the captain of the search team reacted quickly as he ordered the troops to take cover and fire back.

The crossfire lasted for five minutes. Under the high caliber machine gun's unleashed fire, the search team's firepower was clearly at an advantage. After the militants lost ten something bodies, they quickly dispersed and fled away.

When Jiang Chen heard that the search team managed to find a quantum computer among the ruins, Jiang Chen immediately meet with the team's captain Zhu Zheng. He personally granted him the knight emblem to honor his contribution to the base.

After sending the clearly astonished new knight away, Jiang Chen then looked for Xu Lu and used her to find the experts in quantum computers at the base to conduct an assessment of the destroyed quantum computer.

Luckily, based on what the expert said, while the hard drive of the quantum computer received severe damage, the most critical processor damage was still within the limit of being fixable. Even with the current technology in the fallout shelter, they could fix the quantum computer.

When he heard the good news, Jiang Chen immediately ordered Xu Lu to gather all resources and prioritize the repair of the quantum computer. For the research teams of the fallout shelter, it had more significant value to them.

Especially the experiment level quantum computer, it was a God-sent gift on the wasteland.

He didn't know Lin Chaoen's base would have this, but regardless, the treasure now belonged to him.

After he delegated the work, Xu Lu took the elder quantum computer expert and left.

Jiang Chen sunk into his chair again and faced the empty office. He took a deep breath and took out the restructure order he had half completed.

"Ahhh... This is more troublesome than I thought."

He threw the document on the table as he rubbed his head out of frustration.

With law experts at the Fishbone base recommending suggestions combined with the political sense he developed during university while being part of controversial forums, he had already organized the rules and laws. It took him three months of work to develop a set of rules that was not too difficult and fitted the society in the apocalypse.

The only tricky thing was a reorganization of the command structure.

Jiang Chen swept the pile of documents to the side and picked up the tablet at the corner.

His finger slid on the tablet before a list of data showed up in front of him.

"1517 soldiers, 1000 recruits, 323 knights... Eh? I already knighted this many person?" Jiang Chen muttered to himself as his finger continued to scroll.

The logistic department leader Wang Qin recorded all the arms' information on this list.

He had no clue at all.

He sighed, got up, and left the office.

...

Jiang Chen pushed open the basement door as he met the defeated female Colonel.

Han Junhua's face was free of expression. Just like a marble sculpture, he could read the defined edge, but he couldn't read any

emotional colors.

With the emotionless face in front of him, Jiang Chen lost the ability to speak. What made him feel powerless was not the lack of conversational starters, but the lack of hatred on her face.

That's right, hatred.

Without the ability to hate, there would be no fear. If fear didn't exist, then there would be no compromise.

Jiang Chen began to regret the pointless actions he committed.

In the bright and silent basement, time quietly ticked by.

"Are you just here to see me?" Han Junhua was the first to break the silence.

"I... I just don't know what to say." Jiang Chen used an uncertain voice.

Han Junhua didn't respond, she looked away and seemingly lost interest.

If she had any interest.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen seemed to have understood something.

"I can somewhat feel what you feel."

"Normal people can't." Han Junhua's response was fast.

"The normal state can't." Jiang Chen paused. "Have you heard of genetic vaccines? You must have, people who are injected with it have a chance of developing a special kind of mutation."

"The strand of DNA usually unexpressed?"

"That's right! Hidden genetic code." Jiang Chen finally remembered the name.

"So?" Han Junhua quietly looked at Jiang Chen.

"... Without emotion, it feels hard right?" Jiang Chen asked with a gentle voice.

After he activated his abilities, it was the emptiness of completely removing his emotion from the body. He only experienced it twice, but the feeling would make him feel chilled every time he recalled it.

Han Junhua looked at Jiang Chen in the eyes. "Rather than hard, empty is probably the better word."

"Because PAC doesn't exist anymore, right?"

Not because of her loyalty to PAC, not because of her responsibility, those things vanished the moment she was no longer the leader of the fallout shelter, those things faded away with her duty.

But because that was the entirety of her life.

Not until now did Jiang Chen finally realize this point.

Han Junhua didn't respond directly, but she asked back, "Have you heard of the Mental Commissar project?"

Jiang Chen shook his head.

"Engrave ideology with electricity, and write the doctrine into the soul," Han Junhua continued.

"No. The Mental Commissar project is targeted at humans, it is known as commander mass production project in the army. To put it in simple terms, it is writing the ideology into the brain like a program. The commander that passed through this project had the absolute right ideology and would not make an error in judgment because of personal emotions in any situation; it would also not bear the burden of responsibility because of the outcome. Normally, we would be used to execute some of the mission that can't be revealed to the world. For example, suppressing separatist, taking out protestors," Han Junhua said in a quiet voice.

Jiang Chen was stunned. He held his breath.

He saw people who wanted to convert computers into human brains, now he has witnessed making the human brain into a computer.

"This is..." He didn't know what word he could use to describe this.

Evil?

No, there is nothing eviler than the nuclear weapon. The instant war erupted, all morale and boundary became complete jokes. In the digitalized weapon, history may not be written by the victor, but only the victor had the right to judge history.

He was born in a peaceful era, he couldn't experience the need for decisiveness people faced.

"There is no need to have sympathy for me, all the people participating in the Mental Commissar project were self-voluntary."

There was no regret on her face, only her eyes began to be covered in loneliness.

"Just, after I completed the last mission, I don't know what to do anymore."

Jiang Chen was silent, looking at the emotionless Colonel.

He had made a mistake about her persistence.

"Let's make a deal."

Han Junhua looked at Jiang Chen with questions in her eyes.

"Emotions, although I am not a scientist, I trust that science will solve this problem. Help me achieve my ambition, and I will help you find what you have lost. How about that?" Jiang Chen looked at her eyes earnestly.

"A new Mental Commissar in the brain? I don't think I want that."

"No, it's regaining the emotion of a normal person." Jiang Chen shook his head.

Han Junhua fell into a brief silence.

"How can I trust you?"

"Even if you don't trust, there are no better choices right?"

"I want to ask, how can I trust that you can do it."

"Is it hard to do?"

"When I accepted the surgery, my commander told me clearly that I will become a being more closer to a machine than a digitalized human. Even if we win the war after everyone welcomed a happy ending, I still couldn't accept comfort other than honor."

"Even with the most advanced technology before the war, it cannot deactivate the Mental Commissar?"

Han Junhua shook her head.

"Then you have more reasons to choose me." Jiang Chen snapped his fingers with a grin.

Han Junhua looked at him.

"I will return order to this piece of land. The technological research structure will be restored. Even if the 22nd century cannot solve your problem, I believe that in the distant 23rd, 24th, or even 25th century, your problem will be solved. Once everything is completed, I will arrange for you to enter the hibernation chamber in the future," Jiang Chen stared into her eyes and said with seriousness.

She closed her eyes and gave it a long thought.

After a long silence, she opened her eyes.

"You convinced me."

Chapter 379: New Asia Corporation

After a week of preparation, the internal reorganization of the military government began.

In the morning, under the statue of the Mother of Death Claw, Jiang Chen read the reorganization plan to all the survivors of the Fishbone base.

First was the political structure.

The reorganization plan clearly defined the Fishbone base as a military organization. The sole military government will control all jurisdiction and divide the territories into two administrative zones.

One is the economic zone, open to all survivors. It will be stationed with a military government force, established at "election" policy with a parliament. The parliament possesses a degree of rights to create laws, but the military government has the right to veto any laws based on national interest. At the same time, the military government would send out directors to oversee the economic zone. Just like the current structure of the Sixth Street.

The other is the military zone, closed to non-military personnel, following a militarized management system, and execute the slave to knight citizen structure. Everyone must swear their allegiance to the supreme leader and absolutely obey his command. Other than slaves, all citizens and knights will receive vacations of varying length, and they have the option to live at the economic zone during this time. But within the military zone, there is only order and obedience. The military zones were the Fishbone base, Shenxiang colony, and Camp 27.

This model divided the hoe and sword but kept them dependant on each other. The tax revenue and source of soldiers would provide the necessity for the military zones, in turn, the factories

at the military zones would form an independent company to export the excessive production capacity to the economic zone's market. Therefore, while it maintained the economics at the Sixth Street, it also retained the combat ability of the military zone.

Also, to ensure this model operated with stability, while Jiang Chen announced this decision, he also provided another benefit policy to the survivors at the military zone which was a salary model. Other than the slave class, all other classes will receive a salary per month. The citizens would receive 10-20, the knights 50, and based on the functionality of the roles, the number would increase.

Before the Fishbone base only provided food and not salary, but following the economic growth of the neighboring Sixth Street, continuing their tradition would cause the soldiers at the bottom to have other thoughts. So Jiang Chen used this opportunity to introduce this policy. Although it meant that the military government would have a salary expense of hundred thousands of crystals per month, but compared to the food business and the tax from the Sixth Street, Jiang Chen could afford to pay this.

To the people loyal to him, he didn't mind that they lived a great life.

Then, it was the arrangement in management.

The highest position in the military government was general, and Jiang Chen would be taking the role. The highest administration unit position was the office of the general with Jiang Chen personally nominating people to form it. The office of the general's primary duties was to oversee the operation of other departments as well as the adjustment, promotion, and termination of all governors of each zone.

The cumbersome departments were all rearranged with the newly reestablished administration department to manage all administrative and construction tasks in the base, while the

logistics department was responsible for the production and distribution of all supplies. The administration department was appointed to the previous construction leader Lu Huasheng, and Wang Qin remained as the leader in the logistics department. The two leaders directly report to the general.

Then it was the reorganization of the command structure.

To avoid confusion in military command, Jiang Chen formed three corps as well as the relatively independent hunter corp and the soldiers in the base.

The first corp commander was Cheng Weiguo, the second corp commander was Wang Zhiwu, and the third corp any commander was Zhao Gang. The number of soldiers per corp was set to 1000 for now and was formed with soldiers and armor units.

The hunter corp commander was Ma Zhongchen, and he will be leading 200 soldiers. The units were primarily comprised of scouts and snipers. They were primarily assigned to special missions as well as supporting the other three company's operations during combat time. The soldiers were mostly lone travelers or Qingpu survivors from before. Their ability to survive alone was higher compared to regular soldiers. Working alone would maximize their value, and hence a separate corp was formed.

As to Tiger, power armor, as well as other heavy armories, they were distributed to the three companies based on needs. The helicopter was assigned to the hunter corp to increase its mobility.

Out of the 323 knights, the ones with a military position were distributed to each as lower level commanders. They were all injected with honorary chips.

As to the specifics of the corps construction, Han Junhua meticulously completed it for him as she created a command structure from top to bottom. Jiang Chen left everything for her to complete by trusting her ability, and she did not disappoint.

Therefore, the soldiers would never be in a situation of not knowing what command to listen to.

At the same time, as to the name of the military government, the reorganization plan also clarified further.

Since it resembled a country being formed, Jiang Chen could no longer use a canned food name as the name of the military government. Therefore, based on the opinion of senior officials and Han Junhua, he chose the name New Asia Corporation as the name of the military government, or in short, NAC.

From the name alone it was enough to demonstrate a corner of Jiang Chen's ambition.

These were all contents of the reorganization plan.

In the era where civilization existed, the aggressive and invasive political body would obviously not form. But on the wasteland without any human rights and morale, there were no problems.

Everyone was thirsty for a strong voice to create laws that must be followed on the wasteland. Even if it was flawed, at least it could bring the stability people desired.

But needless to say, the majority of survivors were unwilling to be restrained. They long for stability, but they may not be willing to give up freedom because of it.

As to how to balance freedom and order between the survivors, only time will tell.

...

"Since the command structure is refined, I can start preparing for recruitment," Chu Nan standing in front of Jiang Chen's office said.

Because of the significance of this reorganization, as the acting general of the Sixth Street, he would have to personally make a trip back. Of course, his position now was the governor of the

Sixth Street, but other than the name, his duties didn't change.

"How many people do you think we can recruit?" Jiang Chen asked.

"It would have to depend on the price we are willing to pay and the number of people," Chu Nan said.

"Plan to recruit 3000 people with five-year contracts. All recruits would automatically receive lower citizen status and enjoy a salary of ten crystals per month. After the six months of training, all recruits that pass the test will officially receive the status of NAC soldier and be promoted into an upper citizen with a salary increase to 20 crystals. Try to complete this before mid-June. Is it doable?" Standing beside Jiang Chen, Han Junhua said concisely.

It was the salary level of the regular soldiers at the three companies. Although the salary could not attract people with the ability to join, it would be attractive enough for people with low income to join. Especially once promoted to the upper citizen, there would be no restriction on supplies, even people with medium level income would be tempted.

Chu Nan deliberated in his mind before he nodded.

"It's possible."

"Also, to the lone travelers, mercenaries, or hunters with outstanding abilities, if they are willing to join the hunter corp, NAC will offer them a salary of no less than 50 crystals. The contract will be for five years as well. Are there any questions?"

Chu Nan shook his head. "Not regarding recruitment, but I do about the defense at the Sixth Street."

"The defense of the Sixth Street will be the responsibility of the third corp."

"What about the other two companies?"

"The first corp will be stationed in Shenxiang town, responsible

for border defense. At the same, Cheng Weiguo will be responsible for training the new recruits."

Chu Nan agreed. Cheng Weiguo has trained new soldiers before. It would be best for him to continue.

"The second corp is responsible for the defense of camp 27 and Fishbone base; hunter corp will await orders at the Fishbone base."

"Also, I have another proposal." Han Junhua looked at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen nodded as she had discussed this with him a few days prior, it was not a bad time to bring it out.

When she received the acknowledgment from Jiang Chen, Han Junhua continued.

"The current militia at the Sixth Street is uncontrolled by the military government, I think they should be controlled."

"That's impossible." Chu Nan forced a smile. "Mercenaries, hunters, and scavengers have already become an inseparable part of the Sixth Street's economy. Not even accounting for that, we don't have the ability to incorporate them."

"Not incorporating," Han Junhua crossed her arms and said emotionlessly, "Just better management. For example, use the military government's name to establish the mercenary association, record the information of all mercenaries, hunters, and scavengers on file, and rank them based on their credibility and mission completion record. For these mercenaries, they would have easier access to the missions and no longer need to worry about the delay in payments. For businesspeople, they would also no longer need to be concerned with questionable helpers. For us, we would obtain the sense of them belonging to the entire Sixth Street civil force."

Therefore, to retain their credibility, the mercenaries with questionable backgrounds would act less reckless. The capitalists

that bully and trick the scavengers would be more prudent with the existence of the mercenary association.

Without considering the security aspect, just from a purely economic aspect, the proposal had many positive implications.

Also, if it was necessary, he could charge a commission for all missions. Jiang Chen added that in his mind.

Chu Nan was silent for a long time.

He then looked at Jiang Chen, exclaimed and congratulated him.

"Looks like you found a great advisor."

Jiang Chen revealed a bright smile.

"I think so too."

Chapter 380: The Mercenary Association

It was deep into the night. Most of the people were already asleep.

But the Fake Leg Bar located on the business street was crowded.

The mercenaries and the hunters sat together and drank the three crystals beer made with shell grains. They played poker, and they gloated about their rewards. The scavengers scattered at the corners chatted about the good looting spots they found. The females in revealing clothes leaned sluggishly against the bar counter while they waited for their prey.

Zhou Guoping as the bartender stood at the counter and wiped the glass cups. He would occasionally chat with the familiar females. This boss/bartender was renowned among the people that lived on the knife's edge. To the people that caused trouble in the bar, none of them had a happy ending.

Everyone tried to guess his identity. Some people even gave him a street name "The Bald Bartender".

Of course, no one would have guessed that his real identity was a spy planted by the actual controller of the Sixth Street.

"Old Li, you just returned from Liuding, did you have fun there?" A mercenary in mutant fur asked his old friend while burping.

"Same old. It was so boring that it made people want to sleep." The mercenary with a buzz cut took a gulp of his beer and waved his hand.

Compared with the prosperity of the Sixth Street, Liuding's glory gradually began to fade.

"Is that so? Haha, what about your goddess at the Screw Bar? I remember she was your crush." The mercenary on the side patted Old Li on the shoulder and laughed.

"I haven't seen her. Probably not around the Wanghai area anymore," the mercenary known as Old Li said with frustration.

"Hopefully she has not been captured by some bandits and is being used as a sex toy." Someone blew a whistle.

"If you don't want to have a drink of toilet water, I recommend you close your d*mn mouth." Old Li stood up with a gloomy expression.

The other mercenary didn't back down, but rather he blew a whistle to provoke him.

"F*ck. Old Li, he is only joking, just let him go like a fart." The mercenary on the side immediately dragged him down and discreetly pointed at Zhou Guoping who had stopped cleaning the glasses.

While the Old Li still looked pissed, he sat down. He followed his friend's finger. The mercenary with a foul mouth also retracted his neck and sat back down.

Anyone that fight here probably doesn't want to live anymore.

Zhou Guoping glared at them as they settled down. He then continued to wipe the glass in his hand but mocked them in his mind

[Dumb*ss, your goddess probably has been played in so many different positions by a rich and powerful.]

It was certainly a dramatic story. Chu Nan had already worked his way up to become a governor of the Sixth Street, and he still was the boss of the bar. He didn't even accept the notification to attend the reorganization plan.

Although among the small characters, the name "The Bald Bartender" was renowned among the circle. But only he knew the exacts, as even compared with Zhao Chenwu, who surrendered to Jiang Chen, he was one class lower.

To be honest, he was afraid of encountering Chu Nan. Since he did touch Zhou Xiaoxia when he was a bandit in the Huizhong Mercenaries. While Chu Nan didn't seem to mind, Zhou Guoping knew well that he was probably worth less than a tenth of what Chu Nan is worth in the boss's heart, it would be easy for Chu Nan to take him out.

Once the Fishbone base controlled the Sixth Street, the presence of the bar meant to collect intelligence became less and less important.

Just as he was zoning out, the messenger he put below the bar buzzed.

Like the usual, Zhou Guoping put the towel and glass aside and glanced at the messenger. When he saw the words on the screen, he took a moment to process it before an ecstatic expression appeared on his face.

<Messenger: Jiang Chen.

Content: Come back.>

Half a year later, the boss finally remembered him.

Zhuo Guoping left the job to the other workers as he put on a coat and left the bar without wasting a second.

...

To be honest, to the people with blemished morals, Jiang Chen didn't want to give them important duties. But after careful deliberation, the only subordinate that has worked with the mercenaries on a regular basis was Zhuo Guoping.

So the position of the mercenary association leader was best fitted for him.

Currently, Zhuo Guoping stood in front of Jiang Chen's table as he waited for instructions with his head lowered.

"You are pretty fast." Jiang Chen laughed.

"Of course, I can't make you wait, I came immediately after I received the message," Zhou Guoping said while trying to flatter Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen took out a document and put it on the table.

"Don't be nervous, it is something good. Take a look at this document."

Zhuo Guoping laughed obsequiously as he took over the document. He scanned through a few lines before he stopped.

"Mercenary association?"

"That's right. The leader of the mercenary association, I want you to take the position." With hands cupped together on the table, Jiang Chen smiled.

"Thank you bo-, Thank you, General!" Zhuo Guoping was so ecstatic that he almost called out the wrong name as the flattering action was only missing him kneeling down.

"Okay, save the obsequiousness for later. This is your job. I already assigned the building of the association, it will be built across from the Sixth Street bank. Your job will be to establish it. I want to see results in a week's time."

"I will complete the task!" Zhuo Guoping promised while pumping his chest.

"Then go."

Zhuo Guoping bowed and turned around. But when he reached the door, he stopped as if he had remembered something.

"Also, that Fake Leg Bar-"

"I will find someone to take your position. Your primary responsibility will be the mercenary association."

"Yes."

Zhuo Guoping exited the door courteously.

Half a minute later, Jiang Chen leaned in his chair and smiled at Han Junhua who was observing everything.

"What do you think about giving his position to someone like this?"

She only used two seconds to think.

"Just by ability, he is the best candidate."

Reputation among the mercenaries has more appeal compared to an unknown character. If it were Cheng Weiguo or Zhang Gang that acted as the leader, it would be hard to even form the association.

"What other aspects?"

"If I could read people's mind, I wouldn't have lost to you," Han Junhua answered honestly.

Jiang Chen didn't disagree.

"Then lady luck is on my side."

Chapter 381: Are you being serious?

Han Junhua's home was in a separate apartment building.

Jiang Chen satisfied her demands and placed her living quarters as far away from crowds as possible.

When he asked the reason behind her request, her response was simple.

"Because I prefer a place that's quiet."

"Is that so? That's a unique preference," Jiang Chen said nonchalantly.

When they finished the work, Han Junhua and Jiang Chen walked out of the community center together. It was the last task in the reorganization plan, so work the next day would be much easier.

"I always wanted to ask - is this Death Claw?" Han Junhua stopped in front of the Mother of Death Claw statue and examined the monster.

"The Mother of Death Claw. Normal Death Claw is not so big and not so difficult to deal with."

When he recalled the intense fight at the Like mall, Jiang Chen had mixed feelings. Although the actual killer of the Mother of Death Claw was the type-50 electromagnetic cannon, considering how quickly news spread, it quickly became his trophy.

"Did you kill it?"

Jiang Chen looked at her with a perplexed expression, but he still answered with a casual conversational tone, "To be precise, we were even. The actual killer was the type-50 electromagnetic cannon."

"Is this the strongest mutant in the wasteland?" Han Junhua continued to ask.

"Probably."

Perhaps stronger mutants existed, but Jiang Chen hadn't seen any.

Han Junhua didn't say anything else as she crossed her arms and fell silent.

They didn't speak anymore along the way. Jiang Chen walked with her for a bit longer before leaving and returning to the mansion.

Along the quiet trail, Jiang Chen pushed open the mansion door and hung his coat on the hanger by the door.

"You're back?" Sun Xiaorou, in a long dress, stood at the door and smiled at him.

"Mhmm.... Eh? Your wheelchair-"

"Neural bridge. By utilizing a bridge, it circled the damaged brain area and allowed information exchange between the spine and the brain on a circuit board." She turned around and gently lifted her hair covering her neck and exposed a device similar to the neck cover in addition to the whiteness of her skin.

She was wearing a dress with her back exposed.

He didn't know where to put his eyes, so he looked away and said: "Technology is a magnificent thing."

"It's compassion that's magnificent. I have to thank Yao Yao and Lin Lin; if it wasn't for them, I wouldn't have the opportunity to leave the wheelchair."

Sun Xiaorou approached Jiang Chen as she put her hand out and adjusted his collar.

Jiang Chen subconsciously wanted to move back, but because of the space limitations, her hand managed to reach his collar.

Such an intimate motion made him feel slightly awkward. Faced with the eyes that contained the universe, he didn't know what to

say.

"Where's your sister?" Jiang Chen scanned the stairs to the second floor reflexively.

"In the virtual reality gaming chamber in the gym." Sun Xiaorou adjusted his slightly untidy collar, but her hands didn't leave Jiang Chen's shoulder. She just dangled them there and watched his eyes cheerfully.

"Is that so? She said it wasn't fun, but she's actually enjoying it?" Jiang Chen changed the topic awkwardly.

"That's right. Aren't we all like this?" With her arms moving slightly, Sun Xiaorou closed the distance between her and Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen leaned back on the door.

Watching her eyes full of passion, Jiang Chen inhaled deeply.

"Are you being serious?"

"We made a promise when we were young that we would marry the same person." Sun Xiaorou stared at Jiang Chen's eyes as she smiled like a little devil and teasingly leaned her body closer.

"Is that so? But if your sister found out that the first thing you remembered was this promise, she might not be so happy." Jiang Chen raised his hands, wanting to stop her, but his hands hovered in the air not knowing where to place them before he had to lower them again.

"No, she won't mind because she's my sister."

With her arms around Jiang Chen's neck, the tip of Sun Xiaorou's mouth curled up slightly as her lips got closer.

The distance was so close that he could even feel her warm breath on his lips.

Time froze in an instant. Jiang Chen held his breath.

But to his surprise, Sun Xiaorou didn't kiss him.

She turned her head slightly and kissed Jiang Chen's cheek.

"You didn't push me away."

In an instant, the soft figure agilely escaped away from Jiang Chen.

"Time to shave, brother-in-law."

She winked at him playfully and breezed away like the wind.

[This girl.]

Watching her skipping away, Jiang Chen touched the wetness on his face and the non-existent beard.

He slowly let out a breath.

It took a while before his restless head cooled down.

...

"Was it fun?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"Mhmm... So so. Speak your mind, what do you need me for?" Sun Jiao sat up from the gaming chamber and tidied her hair. Even in the way they flipped their hair, the two sisters were extremely similar.

"It's time to eat - what did you think?" Jiang Chen facepalmed.

[It wasn't just "so-so" by her look.] But he was certainly pleased with how addictive <The Godly Land> was. With even half of the 3.2 billion netizens playing this game, he'd become the richest man in the world.

"Eh? It's already 6?" Sun Jiao checked the time on her EP as her face turned red.

She was exploring the forbidden territory of the City of Elves. When Jiang Chen called her, she was fighting a boss. Although she was by herself, the NPC's intelligence was high enough that it was still surprisingly fun to play in single-player story mode.

When Jiang Chen heard that the "naughty" function was unavailable, he immediately lost interest in the game, so it was Sun Jiao alone who explored the secrets of this MMORPG.

"That's right, addicted girl, time to eat," Jiang Chen mocked.

"What addicted girl? I'm testing the game for you, thank me!" Sun Jiao rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen, displeased.

She stretched her body.

The curvature of her body, exaggerated by the stretch, was even more seductive.

Jiang Chen put his hand around her waist, smirking.

"What are the test results?"

Sun Jiao, leaning on Jiang Chen's body, asked sluggishly.

"Not bad... Eh? There's a familiar smell on your body."

"Smell?" Jiang Chen paused.

He didn't even get a chance to react before Sun Jiao opened her eyes and turned around to sniff Jiang Chen's chest.

"Xiaorou?" Sun Jiao looked at Jiang Chen with suspicion.

Jiang Chen's expression immediately turned awkward.

[How should I explain?]

Chapter 382: Aerospace Technology Research Institute

To be honest, he didn't know how to deal with Sun Xiaorou's provocations.

But if he acted like he didn't know anything, it would only worsen the situation. Under Sun Jiao's questioning eyes, Jiang Chen took a deep breath and confessed what happened that day.

"Was Sun Xiaorou the provocative one? You sure you didn't threaten her?" Sun Jiao looked at Jiang Chen skeptically.

"Am I that type of person?!" Jiang Chen didn't know whether he should laugh or cry.

But as soon as the words came out, he realized it wasn't convincing at all. He took away Sun Xiaorou's first time, although he didn't know at the time that it was her first time.

"Then how are you going to treat Xiaorou?" Sun Jiao looked at Jiang Chen with a grin.

"I... I don't know." Jiang Chen said, embarrassed.

Sun Jiao seemed to have expected Jiang Chen's reply as she let out a sigh.

"If you want me to reject her, I can-"

"No, you're misunderstanding me." Sun Jiao shook her head unexpectedly.

"Mhmm?" Jiang Chen stared at her with a perplexed expression.

"If she..." Sun Jiao bit her lips with words stuck in her throat.

"If?" Because he couldn't make out her voice, Jiang Chen pulled his ear closer.

"Whatever, ahhh! This is definitely too weird!" Sun Jiao covered her suddenly burning face and hastily left the completely confused

Jiang Chen there.

At the dinner table, Lin Lin was as noisy as always while she chewed her food with her mouth full while bantering with Sun Jiao. Sun Xiaorou's seat was right across from Jiang Chen. It was her first time tasting such delicious food, so she praised Yao Yao's excellent cooking skills. Yao Yao timidly smiled like always at being praised, her feet dangling under the table joyfully.

Jiang Chen was worried that the kiss at the door would cause some awkwardness between him and Sun Xiaorou, but it seemed like he worried too much.

Except, the moment their eyes met, Jiang Chen perceived a long and dubious message from her eyes.

...

After dinner, Jiang Chen went to Jiang Lin's lab.

He knocked at the door, and seeing as it was open, Jiang Chen waited for a moment before he took out the EP.

"At the rocket testing site?" He looked at the red dot on the map as Jiang Chen muttered to himself.

Because of the locating function of the chip, he possessed the exact coordinate of every knight. Of course, out of respect for personal privacy, he rarely used this function unless it was necessary.

He turned around and headed to the location.

Rocket testing site.

While the name sounded sophisticated, it was just an empty plot of land circled by concrete walls. There were two tables there with one covered in electronic parts while the other had chemical solutions. Aside from the two tables, there was also mechanical equipment he brought back from the Fake Leg Specialty Store as well as the old parts Jiang Chen funded.

Jiang Chen promised Jiang Lin that as long as he finished the work assigned to him, he would fund his dream to develop a warp drive engine for him. Now that the K1 kinetic skeleton production line was optimized and the mimicked version of the Dongfeng-76 ballistic missile was completed, he obviously had the time to work on his own dream.

"This is the warp drive engine?" Jiang Chen mocked him as he looked at the large turbine engine Jiang Lin was working on.

Without turning his head, Jiang Lin flipped a wrench in his hand, wiped off the sweat from his head and grinned.

"Not even close. This is only a simple propulsion engine - nowhere close to a warp drive. It's not even remotely close to the RF resonant cavity thruster."

"I thought you created it already," Jiang Chen said.

"I thought I almost created it." Jiang Lin sighed.

When Jiang Chen first captured Fallout Shelter no.27, Jiang Lin proposed a research project to Wang Qin. No, precisely, it wasn't a research project - he only provided the theoretical design of the "warp drive" to an aerospace expert to confirm the validity of his proposal.

But the answer he received was depressing - the expert criticized his design using all fields of knowledge and theory. Jiang Lin didn't give up; he even personally went to Camp 27 to debate with that expert.

The result was the same. The aerospace expert saw that Jiang Lin didn't believe him, so he personally simulated the design with the quantum computer, comically showing the errors he made in the warp drive design.

It was analogous to a junior high student thinking he discovered the truth behind the perpetual motion machine who used his knowledge to draw a blueprint he thought was flawless and

presented it in front of a physics teacher with a university degree.

Needless to say, the spirit of daring to try was worth praising. But in the name of science, only the truth stood.

After he heard Jiang Lin's story, Jiang Chen was silent for a moment before he comforted him in a soft voice.

"At least you proved that method doesn't work."

"But it wasn't me who disproved it - back in 2091, someone showed the error in my design philosophy. And in the next 80 years, people showed hundreds of incorrect design principles, but I wasn't aware of this at all." He laughed contemptuously at himself, threw the wrench in the toolbox, and took out a welding gun.

"Do you feel sad?" With sparks flashing, Jiang Chen asked.

"No, otherwise I wouldn't be working on this." Jiang Lin grinned as he stood up and patted the thing he had been working for a week.

Jiang Chen walked beside him and examined the metal, three-person tall object.

"This is?"

"RM-320 rocket engine... mimicked plus miniature version." Jiang Lin had a proud expression looking at the art he created himself. "Although it's technology from the end of the 21st century, don't you think it's like a piece of art?"

"Technology from the 21st century?"

"That's right. Based on the explanation of the aerospace expert, the propulsion rocket technology had been abandoned by the end of the 21st century. Space elevators could conveniently send spaceships into orbit from the ground. Spaceship arriving in orbit would then use the RF resonant cavity thruster to boost itself to the moon, or Mars, or someplace even further." Jiang Lin grinned.

"Are you planning to start from the fundamentals?"

But this was certainly useful for Jiang Chen. Propulsion or not, it was technology lightyears ahead of the modern world. Or it could still be a great booster for the ballistic missile in the apocalypse.

"What's the cost of this rocket engine?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Plus the cost of solid fuel, twenty thousand crystals."

"Damn, this rocket booster would eat the salary of 1000 people," Jiang Chen cursed.

Seeing that Jiang Chen didn't look pained, Jiang Lin smiled along and didn't respond.

After a moment, Jiang Chen examined the rocket engine again and abruptly said:

"I plan to establish the Aerospace Technology Research Institute with you acting as the director. Do you have any suggestions?"

Chapter 383: Start with collecting garbage

"Aerospace Technology Research Institute?" Jiang Lin was stunned.

From the shape of his lips, Jiang Chen could tell that he was asking in shock: Why me?

"Because I believe in you." Jiang Chen was direct.

"But-"

Jiang Lin wanted to say that compared to scientists before the war, his abilities paled in comparison, but Jiang Chen interrupted him.

"I know what you want to say, but I want a response now."

Jiang Lin held his breath.

"... Okay."

"Excellent, your response is what I wanted to hear." Jiang Chen smiled.

Seeing as his expression was still perplexed, Jiang Chen paused to explain to him.

"The director of the research institute doesn't have to be the one who has the best research skills - even if your knowledge level is nowhere close to the old experts, I still believe that you will be the one who leads a group of people with the ability to achieve important results. Such as the miniature rocket I saw at your store last time - I still have a vivid impression of it."

Not just a vivid expression - it was stunning.

In Jiang Chen's understanding, a rocket would have to be massive like a chimney, but Jiang Lin's observation satellite completely altered his understanding of near-orbital rockets.

"If you wanted that small thing, you didn't need to start a

research institute." Jiang Lin showed a troubled smile.

"You're misunderstanding me." Jiang Chen shook his head. "It's the imagination that counts."

"Imagination?" Jiang Lin raised his eyebrows.

"That's right." Jiang Chen took out a piece of crystal from his pocket. "Look at this, do you know what it is?"

"A crystal?"

"Correct." Jiang Chen smiled and threw this crystal in Jiang Lin's hand. "But before I told the blue skins, they didn't know what it was."

Jiang Lin looked at the green crystal in his hand as thoughts began to emerge in his head.

"The entire Wanghai City, or the entire wasteland... The world is no longer the world we were used to. Past ways of thinking wouldn't be adaptable on this wasteland, whether survival or research. I need you to use your creative imagination, your extraordinary vision to develop aerospace technology suitable for this wasteland.

Jiang Chen stared into Jiang Lin's eyes as he spoke with seriousness.

It was far more challenging to build a space elevator on the wasteland compared to the modern world. Just in terms of the dangers of the ocean, there was a vast difference between the two. Although he'd never been to the coast before, Jiang Chen heard some stories from Chu Nan.

Liuding Town was on the better side because it was close to land, so sea mutants were uncommon. But once in the deep ocean, the dangerous level of mutants would rise exponentially. Regarding the battle on earth, only a small portion of the total launched nuclear, biological and chemical weapons actually struck the land. Where did the rest go? It didn't disappear but was intercepted by

the ocean.

With the influence of bacteria, viruses, and radiation, the mutation of the sea creatures was far more unpredictable than the land creatures. But the foundation of the space elevator had to be built on the ocean surface near the equator.

Other than that, the space garbage around the near earth orbit and synchronous orbit almost formed a small planetary ring. These factors had undoubtedly increased the difficulty of aerospace exploration.

"Extraordinary vision? You gave me a hard problem." Jiang Lin smiled, troubled again.

"If it wasn't hard, why would I need you?" Jiang Chen glared at him.

After a moment of silence, Jiang Lin inhaled deeply.

"Could you give me a general direction? The NAC or space technology you require is leaning toward which area?"

Jiang Chen thought momentarily.

"Start with collecting the garbage."

"What?" Jiang Lin looked at Jiang Chen dumbfounded; he didn't know the meaning of this sentence.

Jiang Chen pointed up in the sky.

"Design a rocket that can be sent to the near earth orbit or the synchronous orbit... Whatever you do, I need you to bring the stuff in space down, fix it, and send it up again."

"This... is rather an unscrupulous thought." Jiang Lin showed his third troubled smile that day.

"It is possible from a technology point of view, right?"

"Yes. But no one would want to bring the satellite down to the surface; they'd rather fix it in the space station or just launch a new

one..."

"I said, don't look at the present problem with the past ways of thinking." Jiang Chen waved his hand in disagreement. "Do we have a space station?"

He patted Jiang Lin on the shoulder.

"I believe you can do it. But first, I need you to create something small for me. Should be really easy for you - just a dumb small missile that can be launched. I need you to create four for me to send communication satellites up... Space junk? No, you don't need to consider that, just design it based on the 'most ideal conditions'...."

...

Just as Jiang Chen and Jiang Lin were discussing the Aerospace Technology Research Institute, there was also a negotiation in the mansion.

It was a discussion about life.

"Xiaorou, can I ask you a question?" Sun Jiao squeezed the body wash in her hand and evenly rubbed it over her sister's back.

When her sister was paralyzed, she was responsible for bathing her. Although Sun Xiaorou could wash now, she was still worried. What if that thing malfunctioned or came off, wouldn't that be terrible? Imagining her sister being stuck lying in the water - Sun Jiao only gave it a quick thought before her hands turned cold at the idea.

She finally found the only family she had in this world; she didn't want to lose her again.

The cold but soft sensation on her back made Xiaorou narrow her eyes in comfort.

"Mhmm?"

Sun Jiao gently bit her own lip, but she still asked.

"Do... Do you like Jiang Chen?"

Xiaorou took a second to process it then she turned around with a smile.

"Of course, he's a great brother-in-law."

"No, I'm talking about from a relationship point of view." Looking at the smile on her sister's face, Sun Jiao asked with seriousness.

The smile was gradually replaced with a hint of melancholy. Finally, Sun Xiaorou let out a sigh.

"Did brother-in-law... tell you?"

Sun Jiao knew what her sister referred to - what happened a few days ago at the door.

Sun Xiaorou thought Sun Jiao was asking about what happened that day in her bedroom.

The two coincidentally misunderstood each other.

"Mhmm." Sun Jiao nodded.

"... Are you planning to blame me?" Like a kid that did something wrong, Sun Xiaorou buried her head.

The bubbles in the bathtub reflected her sad face as well as her gorgeous figure.

"No, I just wanted to know your opinion." Sun Jiao hugged her sister from behind, closed her eyes, and whispered.

Felling the warm hug of her sister, Sun Xiaorou suddenly felt like she was selfish. She couldn't tell if she actually liked Jiang Chen or if she just liked the person her sister liked. Her heartbeat pumped insanely because of the gray moral territory that made her do things she shouldn't have done...

But just as she thought, a sour feeling emerged from the bottom of her heart.

[It was him that took my first time, why do I have to bear the guilt?]

Perhaps driven by some kind of emotion, she spoke out without processing the emotions in her head.

"Even if they're rather fickle?"

"Mhmm." Sun Jiao put her chin on her sister's shoulder and whispered into her ear.

Sun Xiaorou leaned forward, turned around, and faced her sister.

She lowered her head while she gently bit her lip.

Suddenly, she got closer to her sister's ear and spilled the emotions in her heart...

Chapter 384: War Bond Issuance

In the morning, a bustling crowd gathered in front of the bank.

Merchants, mercenaries, hunters, even scavengers - everyone surrounded the bank. People's emotions were heightened with excitement evident on their faces. Under the ushering of the security forces in first division uniforms, people formed a long line as they waited for the Sixth Street bank to open at eight.

The reason why people were so excited was because of an inspiring speech yesterday.

"... Everyone, in the past 21 years, we used our hands to prove our prosperity." Zhao Chenwu stood at the podium in front of the council building as he used a passionate voice to speak to the crowd gathered.

"From being abandoned by the PAC to facing the mutant waves alone, to the bacteria that swept across the city, to the despairing betrayal..." He gradually lowered his tone.

"But we won against all odds!" He tightly clenched his fists and raised his voice again as he used a compelling voice, "We used the new order we established to give the middle finger to the old authorities. We used our high walls and cannons to fend off zombies and mutants. We used our tanks to eradicate the bacteria source that affected our entire city. And we used the laws of the council to punish the traitors!"

"And we welcomed radiance." He slowed down again as he looked at the crowd with a stern but proud gaze.

The listeners all held their breaths.

"But just as we were about to celebrate our prosperity, an unfortunate and remorseful event occurred."

"As most of you already heard, our friends in Jia city, the warriors who fought against the mutant humans' invasion, have

fallen."

"And right now, the barbarians in the west are swinging their clubs and challenging us: 'look, we caught your little neighbor and cut off his di*k. Are you afraid? Haha, we'll be doing the same thing to you soon!' Right now, tell me, could you all accept this kind of humiliation! Could you?"

There was no response below the podium, but Zhao Chenwu discerned from the faces of the crowd that they couldn't.

He took a deep breath as he spoke again.

"It's small compared to the size of the entire wasteland; it couldn't even be considered a grain. But we must protect its growth and care for it so it can radiate its brightness to places even farther. That's right, it is the radiance we see, a radiance known as order! And the first step to reach this great cause is to lubricate the road of our tank with the organs of those bastards! Then, we will free our friends!" His voice changed from deep and somber to high and enthusiastic, completely igniting passion in all the bystanders.

"Long live the Sixth Street!" people shouted and roared.

"Long live the NAC!"

"Kill those di*kless bastards!"

"..."

He raised his hand to signal the crowd to settle down as he flipped his script to the next page.

"Right now, I'm announcing the decision on the council's behalf. The Sixth Street will declare war on the mutated humans in the Seventh Area.

While he said that he looked at Chu Nan by the side. As the governor, Chu Nan represented the military government.

According to the constitution of the Sixth Street, the military government had a veto right for motions passed by the council. Of

course, it was just ceremonial since the impassioned speech was arranged by the military government.

Chu Nan stood up and looked solemnly at the crowd below the podium.

"Granted."

Thunderous applause erupted.

With unified public opinion, Zhao Chenwu took the opportunity to announce the war bond and recruitment motions.

This show went far more smoothly than he imagined.

...

The crowd outside the window formed a long line from the bank to the council building.

The bank was located beside the building.

Chu Nan and Zhao Chenwu sat at the table. There were color printed newspapers on the table and on the cover page was the impassioned speech.

The newspaper only became popular recently. People loved to gossip, and in an era without the internet, the newspaper could meet the needs of the people. Other than occasional announcements of Sixth Street council decisions, the newspaper published stories of survivors, experiences of hunting mutants, job postings or advertisements.

"Five minutes before the bank opens." Zhao Chenwu narrowed his eyes to look at the clock on the wall before he glanced out the window again.

He didn't need to line up with ordinary people. As a big capitalist on Sixth Street, before bonds were publicly sold, he already purchased the portion that belonged to him.

"Looks like people are passionate about the war that will happen four months from now." Chu Nan smiled.

It was eight o'clock. The employees of the council building brought a plate of steamy buns and two cups of freshly made soy milk.

"No one is interested in the war, but people will never say no to shining crystals. Mmm, delicious breakfast." Zhao Chenwu grabbed a bun and took a hard bite.

He spent 20 years living there already; he knew exactly why people cheered yesterday. It wasn't to free their friends but they cheered for the mercenary contracts, military contracts, and employment opportunities brought by the upcoming war...

"That's right." Chu Nan nodded as he reached for the plate as well.

Breakfast at the council building was provided by the military government for free. The food there was always the best in all of Sixth Street. The fresh meat buns and hot soy milk were delicacies of the wasteland.

"How did you think to use the steel of the mutated humans to create war bonds?" Zhao Chenwu swallowed the food in his mouth. He looked at the crowd flooding into the bank and asked curiously.

"I got inspired by the crusade dividend model then made some small changes in the process. For example, using the steel that the Sixth Street's currently lacking as collateral." Chu Nan slowly chewed on the food as he casually responded.

The crystals from the last crusade ignited the boiler for production, now this crusade would bring the raw resources needed for production.

"How much steel do the mutant humans have?"

"Based on the information provided by the intelligence team, they have an estimated reserve of more than two hundred thousand tons of C-type steel."

"What the fu*k, are they living on top of a mine?" Zhao Chenwu

couldn't help but curse.

It was completed C-type steel, not iron ore that still needed to be produced.

"Not a mine; based on reliable information, it's an underground resources warehouse. PAC's strategic storage somehow landed in the hands of the monsters. But whatever, by fall of this year, the steel will belong to us."

Outside the window, the line was slowly moving. The bank opened its doors. People, with their personal identity cards, all charged at the bank employees.

He looked at Chu Nan again.

"Why's he not making the crystals himself? Don't tell me he's lacking money right now."

Zhao Chenwu referred to Jiang Chen.

The food trade brought in over a million crystals of profit per month. As the biggest shareholder of the food business, Zhao Chenwu would rather think that the bank would go bankrupt than Jiang Chen lacked crystals.

"He's not really lacking money, but council member Zhao must know the saying that in order to collect the grain, the grain must be planted first?" Chu Nan laughed.

Zhao Chenwu took a moment to process that before he started laughing too.

"A general with this foresight, it's my honor to be in your presence."

"My honor too." Chu Nan held up the soy milk cup in a toast.

Chapter 385: Fixed Wing Aircraft

Inside the hologram conference room, Chu Nan's projected hologram stood at the end of the long table and reported to Jiang Chen on the first-day sale numbers of war bonds.

"... Including the presale portion, war bonds worth two million crystals were sold on the first day. Also, the recruitment work is 30% completed; it's expected to be completed within a week."

"It's almost like picking up money from the ground!" Jiang Chen was amazed.

"Our credibility worked - all the citizens wanted a bond."

"No, no, no, credibility only relates to the fact that people believe we will pay. But what made people buy the war bonds wasn't credibility but it's because they supported the war." Sinking into the chair, Jiang Chen smiled.

"Because there are things to be gained?" Chu Nan said mockingly.

"Partially."

Chu Nan didn't bother asking about the other reason; he merely smiled and flipped through the documents in his hand.

"Was this the only thing you needed to report to me?"

"No, there's another piece of good news," Chu Nan said.

"Oh?"

"Do you remember that Hua Weijie? The order you sent him - he completed it."

When he first occupied the Sixth Street, Jiang Chen promised various benefits to the five council members that surrendered. Zhao Chenwu's food business, Lu Yun's Horizon Corporation's Inner Circle rebuilt project, Hua Weijie's Galactic Technology Company's pre-war technology collection and the development of the Type-51 Transportation Helicopter project.

"Completed already?" Jiang Chen looked at Chu Nan, surprised by the speed.

On his expected timeline, the research should've taken at least one year, but they completed the project already.

"Yes, they completed it." Chu Nan nodded.

"Direct their technicians to transfer the production process to our factory until the helicopter is successfully built, and send the remaining one hundred and twenty thousand crystals to them," Jiang Chen immediately said with an uncontrollable smile on his face.

The development of the Type-51 Transportation Helicopter meant that the NAC would possess the ability to manufacture helicopters and completely disrupt Liuding Town's domination of the air force. With NAC's production abilities, it wouldn't take long before they exceeded Liuding just on one platform.

"Okay. Hua Weijie also asked me if there were any new projects for him." Chu Nan nodded.

"Of course, ask him if he's interested in a joint research project. If he is, talk to him about the development of fighter jets."

Chu Nan paused for a moment then repeated to confirm.

"Fight jets?"

"Yes. Fixed-wing aircraft, the type that could drop a 200-kilogram bomb on the enemy's heads."

"Let me be honest, the research for fixed-wing aircraft is far more complex than helicopters. And regarding combat effectiveness on the wasteland, fighter jets are no stronger than helicopters." Chu Nan tried to convince Jiang Chen, erring on the side of caution.

Since the helicopter research was just completed, the production line hadn't even started, so when would research on fighter jets begin? Chu Nan thought it was better to continue building on the

helicopter research with the current model as the prototype while continually improving on its design.

Fighter jets? The maximum combat radius of NAC was at most fifty kilometers - were fighter jets even necessary?

But what Chu Nan didn't know was that Jiang Chen planned to bring fighter jets to the modern world.

"Look further, the enemies in front of us aren't just the mutated humans. The Northern Alliance Area has always been plotting against Wanghai City. Let's look even further at all of Pan-Asia, even the continent on the other side of the Atlantic; no one knows what's there, no one knows what they think over there. We'll have to face them eventually. I don't want to be completely unprepared at that time. Now, do you think it's unnecessary to research fixed-wing aircraft?"

"You're right, general," Chu Nan immediately responded.

Regardless if he was right or not, it was foolish to argue.

Jiang Chen nodded. "Perfect, then that's that."

He ended the communication session with Chu Nan and stretched on his chair.

"Ah... This is tiring. Miss Advisor, could you massage my shoulders for me?"

"Let me be frank, that's an assistant's work." Han Junhua, standing in the corner of the room, crossed her arms coldly.

"Isn't the advisor also the assistant to the general?" Jiang Chen said with a joking voice.

"Your perspective is quite interesting, but allow me to disagree."

"That's disappointing then."

Jiang Chen exaggeratedly made a disappointed face, stood up, and walked out of the conference room in a good mood.

"If you want to equip the army with fighter jets, I recommend you build an air force independent of the land units," Han Junhua said in a calm voice.

"It's still too early - the scientists didn't even create the 'toy' model for me yet."

Jiang Chen laughed with his voice echoing down the hallway.

As the general, he didn't need to wait in the office for information. He only needed to appear in front of people when it was necessary. As for troublesome tasks, they were perfect for the advisor to take care of... This was what Jiang Chen told himself about his job requirements instead of dealing with his laziness.

He sat in the office with nothing to do for half an hour before Jiang Chen instructed Han Junhua "let me know if anything comes up."

It was already early June.

Estimating that he could return in a few days, Jiang Chen wanted to spend more time with the people he cared for now.

Jiang Chen passed by the square in front of the community center. The training grounds were two hundred meters north of it. There was a row of parked trucks at the door as well as the Tiger, still active in service. The women waited for their husbands here because they would be heading to the front lines soon.

When Jiang Chen passed by the door, he saw the training grounds packed with people.

The First Division was about to depart, so Cheng Weiguo was making his last speech to the soldiers. Once that was done, they would board the trucks and head for the front lines.

Just yesterday, the general office approved the request for war from the Sixth Street council. The entire NAC entered a state of war. Although the mutant humans undoubtedly didn't receive the information, there was nothing wrong with deploying their

soldiers to the front lines.

In the crowd, Jiang Chen saw a familiar face.

It was Zhou Jiexi, the wife of Cheng Weiguo. She was the chef of the cafeteria before, but after the cafeteria was reorganized under the logistics department, she began working in that department. Jiang Chen had a faint memory of her - in the beginning, she cooked for the original thirty-something people at the base.

Now, he noticed a difference from how she looked before - it was her stomach...

Zhou Jiexi noticed Jiang Chen and smiled.

"Mr. General."

"Long time no see." Jiang Chen smiled back as he looked surprised at her bulging abdomen. "How many months?"

"Already three." Her face was filled with happiness when she talked about her child.

"Three months already... That guy, he didn't even tell me he's about to become a father," Jiang Chen said.

"You're the general - how could we disturb you with that?" Zhou Jiexi said humbly.

Jiang Chen took a second to process it but managed to recollect his thoughts quickly and smiled at her.

[True...]

After a pause, Jiang Chen said, "Take care of yourself, also... say hi to Old Cheng for me."

"Mhmm, I will."

To a leader, it was indeed valuable to gain the respect and awe of his subordinates. But some distance created by awe was inevitable since the people he promoted, other than Zhou Guoping, weren't naturally servile people.

[So I need someone who can flatter me?]

With that sudden thought in his mind, Jiang Chen laughed. Things would be boring with that type of person around.

[Am I missing a friend? Or a good brother?]

Jiang Chen was silent.

The troops began to move as the soldiers started to board the trucks and wave goodbye to the soldiers at the door.

At the same time, cradled inside a woman's arm, Jiang Chen saw an infant.

The ignorant sleepy face and the smile on the mother's face formed a memorable picture in Jiang Chen's eyes.

And it was because of that smile that Jiang Chen felt some comfort.

Jiang Chen turned around and left.

Chapter 386: The Night

It was late in the night.

Jiang Chen leaned in front of the window with a wine glass in his hand. He stared blankly at the swaying tree branches out the window. The orange liquid swirled in his cup and reflected an unclear face as well as a murky moon.

"What are you looking at it?"

He didn't know how long Sun Jiao had been there behind him.

"I don't know... maybe it's our backyard." Jiang Chen didn't turn around but he just gazed at the buds that would never sprout on the tree branches.

In the backyard was a trail formed among the short woods; further back was a pool he used to store gold. Of course, the pool was covered by an egg-shaped dome, compliments of Lin Lin's work. He still remembered that he once enjoyed a sun-tanning session there simulated by high tech.

"Are you tired?"

Her rare caring side peeked through as Sun Jiao gently hugged Jiang Chen from behind and leaned her face on his broad shoulder.

Feeling the softness behind his back, Jiang Chen smiled wearily and drunk all the remaining alcohol in his glass.

"Sometimes." Jiang Chen poured himself another cup as he gave an answer that didn't seem to match her question.

But Sun Jiao seemed to understand his answer as she whispered to him: "Running back and forth between two worlds... must be tiring."

"A bit."

The wine glass was filled again and Jiang Chen swirled the transparent liquid. Through the orange color, he gazed at the

beautiful face as he muttered to himself.

"Different environment, different people, different ways of thinking, different values... I feel like I'm living two lives. Although this ability brought me an endless amount of wealth and dragged me out of a pit in my life... I have no right to complain, but I don't know whether this was a stroke of good fortune or not. Until a few hours ago, I suddenly realized that I don't have any friends here."

In the beginning, before he established a relationship with Sun Jiao, he didn't think of bringing order to this place. Regardless of how chaotic this place was, he could live a wealthy life on this side... No, he could even be living a more pleasant life.

He was slightly intoxicated as a cold breeze swept by and roused him from his thoughts.

"Aside from you," Jiang Chen added.

"I'm not your friend, I'm your wife." Sun Jiao bit Jiang Chen's ear, displeased.

"Ahem, sorry, I'm a bit tipsy." He put the wine glass down. With one hand on the window, he used the other to wipe his face.

"Yao Yao is also not."

"I... I know."

"Then why don't you eat her?" Sun Jiao's teeth let go of Jiang Chen's ears as she mocked him.

Although he had so many opportunities when he almost ate that cute rabbit, he didn't end up doing it. Perhaps because she looked too young? It wasn't the primary reason though. Sun Jiao was his first woman, so he cared how she felt.

Jiang Chen didn't respond as he simply put his right hand on the hand around his waist.

"Because of me?"

"Mhmm," Jiang Chen responded lightly.

"I already said I don't mind. Also, it's not like you haven't been eating out secretly." Sun Jiao rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's expression turned awkward.

"Uh, you knew?"

"Han Junhua right?" Sun Jiao pouted.

"Mhmm? Why did you think it was her?" Jiang Chen was puzzled.

He originally thought she was referring to the diplomat from Liuding Town. He swore that Han Junhua was still a virgin. He didn't discuss any deeper problems with her. Although it wasn't something to brag about, compared to other people in a similar position, the number of people he had sex with could easily be counted.

"Because one time, I happened to see how she gazed at your back. My instincts told me it wasn't as simple as a subordinate looking at her superior."

Jiang Chen laughed and let out a sigh. "You're thinking too much; she has no emotions. It's hard to explain - she's something called a mind secretary."

"Just like when your second ability got activated?" Sun Jiao remembered that Jiang Chen mentioned the ability he gained after he opened the second level of hidden genetic code.

"That's right, it's similar to that." Jiang Chen nodded.

"Then when you open your second ability, do you have feelings for me?" Sun Jiao asked.

Jiang Chen paused.

He carefully recalled the first time he had Invictus activated in the battle with the lead mutated human. If he really had no emotions, wouldn't the best choice have been to ditch Sun Jiao and

retreat? With the speed of the mutant humans, there was no way they could catch up to the T-3 power armor.

"Perhaps," Jiang Chen answered with uncertainty, but he quickly laughed and tried to change the topic: "Ahem, why are we talking about-"

Sun Jiao closed her eyes and spoke into Jiang Chen's ear, "For me, the only fortunate thing that happened in my entire life was meeting you here that day."

Jiang Chen was slightly astonished.

She then continued, "Sometimes I'm terrified, afraid that one day you'll feel tired and won't return to this side."

"I... Sorry for worrying you."

Sun Jiao's finger gently covered Jiang Chen's lips as she smiled. "No need to apologize."

Jiang Chen grabbed her tender hand and fell into silence.

He stood there for a long time before he turned around and wrapped his arms around her.

"Do you still remember when we first met?"

"Were you referring to me tying you up on the chair, or how we fu*ked from the kitchen to the bedroom?" Sun Jiao put her arms around Jiang Chen's neck seductively.

"I'm talking about when you licked the cans," Jiang Chen jokingly said.

"Pshhh!"

Sun Jiao burst out laughing and rolled her eyes.

"It's getting cold," Jiang Chen whispered.

Although it was June, on the land covered by radiation dust, the temperature fluctuated wildly.

With a blush spreading across her face, Sun Jiao read Jiang

Chen's hint.

"Mhmm, let's go."

...

The door was not completely closed.

Behind the door, a small figure hid.

A coat was tightly held by the figure's hands, covering their chest as they watched through the window. Yao Yao's eyes looked a bit lost as her mouth pouted.

"Are you a fool or what?"

Lin Lin, who appeared behind her, let out a sigh.

Her voice made Yao Yao jump before she looked at Lin Lin, displeased.

"If you don't act now, you'll have more and more competition," Lin Lin said with a smirk.

"... like you?" Yao Yao buried her head.

"Eh? Why-why are you bringing me into this? I-I'm talking about Sun Xiaorou. Last time, didn't she, kiss at the door..." Lin Lin's face instantly turned red as she rambled on listlessly.

But the more she explained, the fainter her voice became.

Yao Yao walked forward with her head still buried and stopped beside Lin Lin.

"Sorry. I shouldn't... I shouldn't have said that to you."

"It's okay... It's me who should apologize. Maybe you're right, but I don't even know what I'm thinking," Lin Lin mumbled in a low voice and hugged Yao Yao.

She admitted that her intentions to encourage her friend were rather despicable.

The silver-white hair and the black hair mixed together as the

two small figures hugged each other.

Sun Xiaorou let out a sigh looking at the two girls in the corner.

But not long after, a joyful curvature appeared on her mouth as she turned around and walked to the bathroom.

Chapter 387: Sisters

The next morning, a ray of sunshine shone through the ledge of the roof and scattered on Jiang Chen's nose.

Jiang Chen's eyebrows jumped as he opened his drowsy eyes. Almost at the same time, a sour feeling flooded into the back of his head.

[Hungover again...]

After showering last night, Sun Jiao drank some more with him. As to what she did to him after he was drunk? Hehe, there was no need to guess.

Jiang Chen took a deep breath of fresh morning air as he wanted to drowsily rub his sore facial muscles, but his right hand seemed to be trapped by something. He took a moment to process that before he tried to move his left, but it was also trapped.

Even though Jiang Chen reacted slowly, he realized that the situation was a bit odd.

He shook himself free of his drowsiness, turned his head and immediately understood the situation.

"... Up so early." The sluggish voice rang in his ear as the completely naked Sun Jiao didn't let go of Jiang Chen's arm, but rather, she adjusted her body like a cat being fed.

The messy bed and the marks on the sheets as well as the pillows thrown on the ground gave a glimpse of the intimacy that happened the night before.

This wasn't the problem.

The problem was that there was more than one cat.

Jiang Chen slowly turned his stiff neck and looked at the figure to his left.

"Morning, brother-in-law," Sun Xiaorou greeted him with a grin.

This must be a dream.

Jiang Chen muttered to himself and closed his eyes again.

...

But it proved to not be a dream.

Because of the alcohol, his memory of last night seemed scattered in Jiang Chen's head. But after having a good sleep, all the way until noon, he began to recall what happened. First, he held hands with Sun Jiao, but somehow a third person joined in.

With the sheets around her chest, Sun Jiao confessed to Jiang Chen what happened last night. Sun Xiaorou knelt by the bed and confessed her affection for him from the bottom of her heart.

A few days ago when Sun Jiao was washing Sun Xiaorou, Xiaorou poured out her feelings for Jiang Chen. When Sun Jiao heard this, although she was hesitant at first, she still expressed understanding of her sister's feelings.

At the same time, a question that had been bothering Sun Jiao came back to her. Jiang Chen never ate Yao Yao, so she was afraid that she couldn't keep him in her world just by herself. Having seen the other world through the fourth dimension messenger, she knew that even as the emperor of the wasteland, not to mention the general of NAC, his life here was not comparable to being an ordinary citizen in the other world.

She then remembered her sister and the feelings she confessed to her that day.

Although what she did was somewhat despicable, she hoped that he could stay on this side, or at least prevent him from randomly disappearing one day.

Therefore, she wanted to give him more reasons to stay.

That was Xiaorou's thought too, right? She comforted herself like that before she decided to drag Xiaorou into things last night.

On the bed, Xiaorou stared into Jiang Chen's eyes as she said remorsefully:

"Do you dislike me?"

"No, but-" Jiang Chen smiled bitterly.

"As long as you don't dislike me." Like the weather in May, a bright smile instantly bloomed on Xiaorou's face.

Drawn by her bright smile, Jiang Chen stared at her blankly when the sheet dropped from her body.

At the same time, Sun Jiao hugged Jiang Chen from behind as she said with slight jealousy:

"You have to thank me. Also, I'm the main course."

"Ah, I..."

Because this was all too exciting, Jiang Chen's brain was a mess since words couldn't come out of his mouth.

"That's right, sister is the main course."

Xiaorou smiled and pecked him on the lips.

Jiang Chen felt something shattering in his chest.

Mhmm, something called boundaries.

...

The intimate night was too short since it was already morning, but [the emperor decided to skip the morning ceremony](#). Although this saying described Consort Yang, Jiang Chen felt that it applied to him too.

The weariness of the past days completely faded as Jiang Chen walked into the community center feeling completely energized. Han Junhua, standing beside the office window, saw that Jiang Chen had arrived, so she walked over with her arms crossed.

She didn't ask why Jiang Chen didn't show up in the morning as she took out two document packages and put them in the middle of

the table.

"The administration department lead, Lu Huasheng, delivered three construction designs of the general's office."

Jiang Chen opened the document Han Junhua pointed at and took it out along with three graphene chips. The graphene cards stored the 3D models. The three designs each had unique aspects; he couldn't tell which one was better.

"What do you think?" After putting the three chips on the table, Jiang Chen asked Han Junhua for her input.

"I don't have any opinion on the exterior appearance, but the office should be reinforced as much as possible. In any circumstance, the commander's office would be the primary target of the enemy," Han Junhua said.

Jiang Chen scanned through the document and wrote Han Junhua's recommendations in the box for suggestions.

"Okay, then this one." He picked the card that looked the most pleasing to the eye and stuffed the documents back into the package. With the two cards that didn't get picked, he threw them into the garbage.

Then Jiang Chen reached for the other package.

There was a stack of documents inside.

"The logistics head, Wang Qin, came in the morning to submit a colonization expansion proposal. The specifics included requesting Shenxiang Colony to expand in the direction of Dianshan Lake with an estimated 15,000 acreage of land to be used for the planting of Carm trees and mutated fruits. She wanted me to let you know that if we initiated this proposal, we'd become the biggest supplier of Carm Treesap and mutated fruits at Sixth Street," Han Junhua described.

"15,000 acreage? Let me see... it would hit Dianshan Lake directly. We have a battle with the mutated humans in the fall; are

there any problems with expanding at the front lines?" Jiang Chen took out a map and looked at the land circled in red with a frown.

"From a war strategy perspective, there's no problem at all. We're on the offensive side with the battle centered in Jia City. Without any surprises, the mutated humans wouldn't be able to reach Shenxiang at all. In terms of the economics, it's not my specialty, so I won't give an opinion on it," Han Junhua said concisely.

"It's also not my specialty either, but if there's nothing wrong with it strategically, then I trust my talented staff." Jiang Chen laughed and signed the proposal.

Carm tree was the primary raw ingredient for the production of plastic on the wasteland. Kinetic skeletons and rifles all needed it.

Han Junhua quietly watched Jiang Chen stuff the signed document into the package.

"Are you planning to leave?" Seeing Jiang Chen was about to go, Han Junhua asked.

"I need to go find Du Yongkong. If Lu Huasheng and Wang Qin are here, just give the packages to them," Jiang Chen instructed her as he stopped at the door.

"... Okay." Han Junhua crossed her arms and nodded.

"Thank you."

Han Junhua paused then shook her head.

"No problem."

Meaning that the time with beauties was so enjoyable that the emperor would skip work just to spend time with his beauties

Chapter 388: Virtual Reality Helmet Prototype

At the end of the hallway in the community center was a large office modified from a conference room. The discussion behind the half-closed doors didn't seem to stop; it looked quite busy inside.

Although the reorganization that happened a while ago affected most departments, this was the only department that hadn't changed.

A board carved with words hung on the wall crookedly: <Godly Land Game Developing Department>

Right now, the makeshift office was jam-packed.

"The mission brief is completed. Old Zhang, are you done with the text?"

"Done. Wait one moment, I'll send it to you."

"Models Code C10087 to C10129 NPC have been completed. The rest would be here, and a total of 17 AI must be inputted manually, take a look..."

The conference room was separated into individual offices with boards. Fifty programmers with dark eyebags worked in front of the hologram computers and continued to refine the virtual reality MMORPG.

In front of a hologram computer, Du Yongkong scanned through the lines of code. As the director of the game, he didn't need to personally type the code like the programmers - he only needed to audit the work of each team and direct game development.

The work sounded simple, but it wasn't easy at all. The work of fifty people was audited by only him. It was easy to see the impact his workload had on him from the deep eyebags on his face.

But he didn't mind the tiring work, or rather, he enjoyed it. He

was just a chief engineer before the war and never acted as a game director. But life pulled a big prank on him as he finally got his dream position after the war.

He hadn't shut his eyes for 24 hours already. After he audited the last line of code, he was planning to nap for a bit on the table, but he happened to see a surprising person.

With Jiang Chen at the door, Du Yongkong's eyes lit up as he immediately got up to greet him.

After catching up for a bit, Jiang Chen finally got to business.

"Don't be so nervous, I'm just here to take a look. Also, did you finish the server?"

"Already done." Du Yongkong nodded. The humble programmer didn't know how to flatter people, so he just kept smiling and smiling.

Although he looked a bit comical, Jiang Chen really liked simple people like this.

"Let me see."

"No problem! Please follow me." Du Yongkong bowed respectfully and led Jiang Chen to the adjacent junk room.

The condition of the junk room was typical of a programmer as there were unorganized paper boxes stacked together. Considering the tidiness of the room, Du Yongkong's expression looked awkward as he scratched his head.

"It's okay, I don't mind. Just let me see the prototype of the helmet."

"Ah, okay, heh." Du Yongkong laughed, rather embarrassed, as he began to dig through the boxes. He moved away a few boxes filled with papers before he managed to drag out the box that contained five virtual reality helmets.

Looking at the helmets in the box, Jiang Chen felt an inexplicable

excitement.

If vessels and cannons were a source of romance for men, then virtual reality helmets were the source of romance all netizens longed for. Jiang Chen could say with confidence that for anyone who read web novels or played MMORPGs or single player games, there wasn't a single person who didn't dream of the ability to use a virtual reality helmet to write their own story in the world created by 0s and 1s.

"General?"

"You're not a soldier, just call me boss."

"Okay boss." Du Yongkong laughed timidly as he scratched the back of his head. "Is this what you wanted?"

Jiang Chen took a helmet from the box as he carefully observed it in his hands.

It had a tainted crystal surface along with a bluish-black polyethylene shell, resembling an aerodynamic motorcycle helmet. At the back of the helmet was a "small tail" covered in scales, the length was close to neck length, and it could connect one's neural network through microcircuits, interfering with the brain field.

It weighed around 1-2 kilograms, slightly heavier than a motorcycle helmet. But it didn't matter since the helmet was activated when the user was in REM sleep mode. Therefore, not a lot of people would choose to play this game while standing up.

"How much molybdenum does one virtual reality helmet require?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Without accounting for improper production material waste, around 300 grams," Du Yongkang said affirmatively.

"300 grams?" Jiang Chen fell into deep thought as he stroked his chin.

Therefore, one ton of molybdenum could produce at least 3000

virtual reality helmets. Once he solved the molybdenum mine problem, this could be produced on a large scale. Of course, there was no rush since before this could be launched officially, Jiang Chen planned to conduct an internal test with some volunteers in the modern world to optimize the game.

Since it was an MMORPG from a different era, the degree of cultural acceptance from the 21st century would differ from the 22nd century; he didn't want to decrease the quality of the game because of lack of attention to cultural appropriateness.

"... To produce 100 prototypes, the logistics department took apart a chamber to gather enough molybdenum. Why would we not use the chamber as the platform in the game? Compared to this outdated technology, the more advanced chamber would be better in both performance and comfort."

[What? Took apart a chamber?]

[That's a big loss...] Jiang Chen cursed in his mind, but he didn't show any of it on his face.

"Performance? Would playing the game with the helmet make the game lag?"

"It won't lag. Lag won't be displayed in the game with rather simple physics," Du Yongkong said.

"Then it would be okay. This type of fantasy game doesn't need to have a realistic physics model. Don't take apart any more chambers though; I only need the one hundred helmets for now," Jiang Chen said.

Du Yongkong nodded. Seeing that Jiang Chen wasn't going to change his mind, he didn't speak any more. He was only making a recommendation for his boss; there was no reason to argue with the boss over it.

"Then that's all. I'll get people to transport the server and the helmets in a bit. Also, I almost forgot, did you add security

measures to the helmets?" Jiang Chen patted his own head and asked hastily.

"I did - the molybdenum gold dense lead barrier can prevent any scanning. Also, if anyone attempted to open the helmet, the internal security circuit would forcefully overload and destroy all the graphene circuits and chips inside the helmet. It would become a piece of junk..."

But would anyone really want this outdated technology? Du Yongkong muttered in his mind with skepticism.

Jiang Chen happily patted him on the shoulder. "Haha, good job. Go find Wang Qin in a bit. All the game developers will receive 50 crystals. This is the reward for your hard work!"

"Thank you Boss!" Du Yongkong was ecstatic.

50 crystals were equivalent to a NAC knight's basic salary for a month.

He didn't have any more doubts about the boss' decision.

Who cares? As long as the boss was happy.

Chapter 389: Hang City Merchant Alliance

It was either a nuclear crater or a circular lake.

The lake reflected a light green luminescence in the night just like a sea of fireflies - beautiful but ominous.

The lake was clear but thick like a gel; the occasional wind wouldn't cause any disturbance to its stillness.

In the middle of the lake, a small mountain floated in the middle.

It was a small mountain formed by dark red chunks of meat. The blood vessels on its surface wriggled as they sent nutrients to the others parts of its body. The massive body rested on dense tentacles like an octopus or an enormous tree with deep roots in the middle of the lake.

A tree formed by flesh.

There was a hair-like structure ten meters long, about as thick as an arm, growing on top. At the tip of it was a meat bubble that could light up. It was like a bright lamp hanging on an antenna. A faint light flickered as it listened to something or called for something.

No one had visited this place for twenty years since no one could access this place - it was the forbidden territory of life.

But still, a few mutants could approach the area.

The Death Claw was one of them.

Perhaps guided by the faint light, a Death Claw slowly moved toward the nuclear crater.

It moved while it swung its spike-covered tails as its sharp claws clamped on a feeble survivor.

The survivor's face was disgustingly ugly - his festered skin had mutated spores growing on top, the high radiation levels mutated every single cell in his body. His bloated mouth moved slowly and

murmured undistinguishable words. Following the movements of his facial muscles, skin began to fall off his face.

His face was miserable, but he was also solemn.

Just like it was practicing a mysterious ceremony, the Death Claw lifted him up.

Following the frightened howl of the prey, it threw him into the lake.

The thick waves spread and quickly engulfed the person.

Just like usual, after the Death Claw made a tribute, it left.

But suddenly, something unexpected occurred!

The thick liquid became turbulent as giant bubbles emerged under the surface just like boiling water. The survivor who sank into the lake was the last match that ignited the entire lake.

The Death Claw suddenly turned its head as its bell-sized eyes narrowed into a line and its gaze shifted in shock between the rising radiance and the restless chunks of meat.

At the same time, in a mansion far away, the asleep Lin Lin suddenly opened her eyes.

Her breathing was still rhythmic as if she was still in a deep sleep.

But the crimson red in her pupils was particularly visible in the darkness.

...

It was mid-June already, so Jiang Chen wanted to return to the modern world soon. Since everything on the wasteland had been taken care of and the last group of recruits headed to the front lines yesterday, there was no point in him going to the office. As the wife of the general, Sun Jiao would take care of small tasks for him. If there were larger tasks, Lin Lin would message him with the fourth dimension messenger.

But he still had to go to the office today as a representative from Hang city wanted to see him.

"Ha-" Yawning, Lin Lin rubbed her sleepy eyes and walked out of her room.

"Did you stay up late?" Jiang Chen, who was about to leave, asked with a smile.

"No, I don't know why I'm so tired... Hungry too." Lin Lin rubbed her flat stomach and walked to the kitchen drowsily.

Jiang Chen didn't know why but Lin Lin had been tired for the past while. Jiang Chen initially thought she was tired the way regular humans got tired, but Lin Lin told him that digitalized humans didn't get sick.

Jiang Chen stared at her back, puzzled, but he didn't say anything as he left.

The sky was exceptionally clear today; perhaps the seasonal wind from the Pacific blew away some radiation dust that covered the wasteland. When he arrived at his office, a man in a suit was already waiting for him.

When he saw Jiang Chen, his eyes lit up as he extended his right hand.

Jiang Chen shook his hand with friendliness.

"Kong Jie, the president of the Hang Merchant Alliance Commerce Chamber." The man shook Jiang Chen's hand for a long time as he introduced himself.

Judging by the calluses on his hand, this guy didn't seem like a merchant at all.

Although he'd never been to Hang before, Jiang Chen heard of the Merchant Alliance before.

There were quite a number of merchants at the Sixth Street who came from Hang. The electronics, tobacco, and adhesives from

Hang were all top sellers here. And the majority of the merchants from Hang all belonged to the Hang Merchant Alliance. Having this many merchants as members was indicative of the power of this organization.

But between Hang and Wanghai City was Jia City, and 150 kilometers to travel was considered far on the wasteland.

"Jiang Chen, NAC general. Why don't we sit down before we talk?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"Haha, of course..."

After some small talk, the two sat down on the sofa.

Jiang Chen signaled Han Junhua to leave for now. He interlocked his fingers and rested them on his knee as he asked directly: "It's so chaotic outside, so why is the president making a personal visit here?"

Jiang Chen didn't forget that Jia City was still in the hands of the mutated humans.

"I'm here to bring friendliness and bring crystals. And a personal reason: I wanted to see the rumored King of Wanghai City," Kong Jie said.

[The King of Wanghai? Flattering words, but I like it.]

"Haha, is this how people in Hang refer to me?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"Of course, the merchants that returned from the Sixth Street all praised you. A dictator who recognized the importance of merchants and who could follow the rules of the game he established. To be honest, when we heard that the Group of Ten Council was replaced by a dictator, we assumed the worst and thought we lost the brightest market, but you proved us wrong," Kong Jie said with humor.

Seeing that Kong Jie was still not getting to the point, Jiang

Chen's eyebrows raised as he continued: "It's an honor to receive such praise from your merchants; the Hang merchants will always be our friends. But I think before we flatter each other, we should get to the point."

Kong Jie laughed.

"To be honest, before I came, I had a great proposal."

"And now?" Jiang Chen asked.

"I changed my mind."

"Could I hear the proposal you abandoned?" Jiang Chen leaned on the sofa as he stared at the president with a shrewd face.

"My proposal was for both parties to send out a force to take out the nail that's blocking our trade route."

"What about now?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"Now I realized that you don't seem to need us - you can take out the nail yourself."

As he said that, Jiang Chen sensed a trace of concern hidden deep in his eyes.

Chapter 390: The Calm before the Storm

"That's right," Jiang Chen said with straightforwardness.

He didn't hide the power of NAC because there was no need. Once the NAC flag flew above Jia City, the survivors, merchants, and mercenaries would naturally circulate the unknown but powerful name to the entire wasteland.

Jiang Chen was observing Kong Jie while Kong Jie was doing the same thing.

"I sense danger from you."

"Could I interpret that as a compliment?" Jiang Chen crossed his legs as he said in a joking voice.

"Of course. Our merchants are spread all over the wasteland; there aren't a lot of forces that would scare us. The Northern Alliance Area is one of them, as are you."

"Because of my weapons?"

"Because of your ambition." Kong Jie stared right into Jiang Chen's eyes.

This act was extremely disrespectful in a friendly meeting, but he still did it. He wanted to see if Jiang Chen's eyes could reveal anything that could prove his assumption. In actuality, he did it because Jiang Chen didn't bother to disguise his ambition.

"How so?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"From the configuration of the base." Kong Jie shifted in his seat as he scanned the room decorations. "As well as this office. For the people who prefer order, they have a high standard of living for themselves and their neighbors. Of course, the best way to demonstrate that is the name 'NAC.' New Asia Corporation? Good name."

"Do you feel unsettled?" To Kong Jie's comments, Jiang Chen

only answered dubiously.

"That's right," Kong Jie said directly. "Our merchants are all considering one question: if you take out the nail between us, who could promise that you wouldn't step foot into Hang from Jia City?"

"So your recommendation is?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Let Jia City become the buffer zone between us. Without a land route, our merchants can develop routes in the shallow sea or Tai Lake. But without this nail, we won't sleep well at night." Kong Jie stared into Jiang Chen's eyes, making his proposal with seriousness.

"That's impossible." Jiang Chen rejected it right away. "Even if we don't attack them, the mutated humans will launch an attack on us. By that time, they would have a natural advantage; no one could guarantee that the war won't spread across the Taifu river. I won't prioritize short-term peace to risk losing an inevitable war."

"We could fund you to build up your defenses along the river." Kong Jie raised his finger. "Half a million crystals, on the condition that you won't send your forces west."

Jiang Chen was not moved at all with this proposal.

"Then that's unfortunate; we already raised two million crystals through the distribution of war bonds."

The negotiation was at a stalemate.

Kong Jie and Jiang Chen stared at each other and fell into silence.

Moments later, Kong Jie suddenly spoke with a smile.

"Do you know how the mutated humans obtained so many weapons?"

"Why?" Jiang Chen didn't seem too interested.

"Based on the data we gathered, an organization named The Dusk

that migrated from the Northern Alliance Area is providing support for them," Kong Jie said with an ambiguous smile.

This information was outdated - the last time The Dusk sent out Sun Xiaorou to assassinate Jiang Chen, he already obtained that information through his unique methods. Regarding the operations of The Dusk, he knew a man called Bo Yu provided help to the mutated humans.

It wasn't hard to deduce this as the mutated humans were weak industrially, yet they had heavy machines or even cannons. Jiang Chen would never believe they didn't have support from a third party.

But from Kong Jie's ambiguous expression, Jiang Chen read something else.

"Are you threatening me?" Jiang Chen said dubiously as he looked into his eyes.

"I didn't say anything. But as merchants, we retain the right to invest in any projects that can offer a return." Kong Jie shrugged.

Jiang Chen sneered.

Since it was already so obvious, why was he still afraid to admit the truth?

"You're playing with fire."

"I am looking for an opportunity to work together," Kong Jie corrected him without backing down.

Jiang Chen suddenly stood up.

A trace of anxiety flashed across Kong Jie's eyes, but he quickly calmed down.

"If you think you can fund the mutated humans to prevent us from removing them from Jia City, you can go ahead." Jiang Chen walked in front of him. He stopped and stared into Kong Jie's eyes from above as he said, "But I can tell you now that if you support

the mutated humans..."

Unable to breathe because of the oppressive atmosphere, Kong Jie held his breath and waited for the next sentence from the dictator.

Jiang Chen grinned and spoke the words Kong Jie didn't want to hear the most.

"Then there would be war."

The atmosphere in the office froze, but it quickly faded by the next sentence from Jiang Chen.

"Of course, I trust that your party's foresight, you wouldn't make such an ill-advised decision."

With his eyes wavering for a while, Kong Jie finally nodded in hesitation.

"Excellent. Welcome back to the negotiation table then." Jiang Chen smiled and sat back down.

With the tension alleviated, Kong Jie finally breathed fresh air again.

Suddenly, he realized his entire back was drenched in cold sweat.

...

The negotiations ended peacefully.

Jiang Chen didn't plan to discuss the details of military operations in the fall but rather, he began talking about how to share trade routes after Jia City was captured. Although the war hadn't started yet, Jiang Chen already considered the city his.

Kong Jie still expressed concern with the fact that if Jia City was captured by Jiang Chen, Hang would be surrounded by him. But with Jiang Chen's firm position, he couldn't do anything about it.

After they reached an agreement with the trade routes, supply stations, and patrol stations, Kong Jie hastily left.

Seeing that Kong Jie had left, Han Junhua walked in.

"Why don't you just detain him?"

"Because that would serve no purpose." Jiang Chen yawned and waved his hand. "This is the annoying part about negotiating with such a loose organization - even if you killed its leader, it would just select a new one. Or rather, the leader itself is basically like a mascot. When I shook hands with him, I knew he wasn't a professional merchant."

A professional merchant would not have calluses from holding guns. Instead of being a true leader, he was a representative pushed forward by a bunch of merchants.

"You don't seem to be worried about the reaction from Hang?" Han Junhua asked.

"They need a market, and we have the biggest market in Suhang province. Safety or crystals - they must choose between them, and I firmly believe they will choose the latter. Especially since my attitude towards the Sixth Street merchants seemed to ease his mind. Even if they were taken over by the NAC, their assets wouldn't be compromised... Most merchants would think this way." Jiang Chen walked over to the desk.

There was someone knocking on the door.

"Come in."

It was Wang Qin. She had a grave expression.

"General, information coming from the Sixth Street stated that mutant activities have been on the rise as of late. Mutants including mutated cockroaches and mutated rats are all exhibiting strong, aggressive behaviors. Typically, these mutants wouldn't attack survivors... The information reported that Wanghai City is preparing for the second flood of mutants."

"Flood of mutants?" Jiang Chen frowned.

He had never experienced a mutant flood before; he just heard rumors about the terror of it. In the past when the World Alliance Organization had yet to launch the space colonization ships, a mutant flood erupted in Wanghai City. The ex-military army stationed near the city's research institute was driven out by the ferocious mutants.

The shock also impacted the Sixth Street, but with the equipment left by the World Alliance Organization, they managed to fend off the attack. At that time, the Sixth Street confirmed its rule under the Group of Ten Council.

But this time...

Wang Qin nodded.

"Alert Wang Zhaowu to be on the precautionary side; he's closer to the city center. I will give him permission to open the fallout shelter door and lead the citizens on the surface to retreat into the fallout shelter. At the same time, increase the fallout shelter energy reserve to 100 fuel rods. You will be responsible for that," Jiang Chen said.

"Understood." Wang Qin nodded.

The time between each fallout shelter opening varied; no one knew when the other fallout shelters in Wanghai City would open. If he lost fallout shelter no.27, that would mean that the research abilities of the NAC would decrease substantially. Jiang Chen would not permit such a thing from happening, so if a mutant flood were to erupt, he had to protect the safety of the scientists.

Whether or not a mutant flood would actually occur, there was nothing wrong with being prepared.

"Also, establish a temporary emergency shelter underground. Prepare necessary barricades, beds, nutrient supplies, and heaters. Although we know these things probably won't be used, prepare these things just in case."

"Okay." Seeing that Jiang Chen had no further instructions, Wang Qin quickly left.

After a brief pause, Jiang Chen looked at Han Junhua again.

"For the next few days... Mhmm, perhaps for half a month, I have something to take care of elsewhere. Just discuss things with Sun Jiao for now since she takes on my responsibilities when I'm away. If the mutated flood does erupt, I'll come back immediately."

Jiang Chen thought Han Junhua would ask where he was going, but surprisingly, she only nodded.

"Okay. But my recommendation is that if the mutant flood was to erupt, as the general, you shouldn't return to the areas with high danger."

"I will return because there are people who are important to me here," Jiang Chen said with seriousness.

"... I will protect them for you," Han Junhua promised calmly.

"Thank you. But don't be too worried, they may just be rumors."

Jiang Chen patted her on the shoulder and left the office.

The door closed.

Long after watching the door close, Han Junhua squeezed her own face.

Then she put her hand down.

"Weird."

She muttered to herself with an emotionless voice then looked outside.

It was bright and clear outside; not a single cloud was in the sky.

But the brightness gave her a surreal feeling.

This feeling was just like the calm before the storm.

Chapter 391: Economic Sanction?

To Jiang Chen's surprise, the skies were clear at the wasteland, but when he returned to the modern world, it was pouring rain.

The grain-sized rain droplets splashed on the windows and made harsh sounds along with the violent wind. The leaves on the palm trees outside were all blowing to one side and the waves in the sea were rolling thunderously without any sign of humanity.

Perhaps Ayesha heard a noise in the bedroom, so she slinked into Jiang Chen's room like a quiet cat.

Her clothes right now were particularly eye-catching, or rather, whenever she was home, her clothes were always eye-catching. She had just a loose white shirt on with two smooth and perfectly shaped legs swinging out underneath. From a psychological perspective, this style not only drew the curiosity of the husband wondering whether she was "only" wearing a shirt, but it would also tease the husband as he watched the legs swinging.

Combined with a cold expression and passionate sight...

Okay, Jiang Chen admitted, if it weren't for the fact that his clip was completely empty, he would've leaped onto her and did her on the spot.

Jiang Chen stood up, laughed and helped her button up one button.

"Come out with me for a bit. Uhh, do you need to change first?"

"There's a typhoon outside." Ayesha kissed Jiang Chen as she said gently.

From her voice, Jiang Chen could sense a hint.

"Typhoon? Is it serious?"

"Around three hundred kilometers away from Coro Island and the wind magnitude is level 13... The news recommended reducing

travel."

[It shouldn't be too serious then.]

Seeing as Jiang Chen didn't respond, Ayesha said in a faint voice, "It's been almost a month."

Jiang Chen, of course, knew what she was referring to, so he touched her forehead with his and smiled.

"Tonight?"

With her face blushing, a curve appeared on Ayesha's mouth as she buried her face in Jiang Chen's hug timidly.

...

Jiang Chen changed into somewhat formal clothes before he came into the garage and opened the black Sonata's door. In this hideous weather, he obviously didn't want to drive his Lamborghini.

Seeing as Jiang Chen got into the car, Ayesha, already sitting in the driver's seat, started the car and drove into the pouring storm.

Because of the storm, they drove slowly. It took them half an hour before they arrived at the presidential palace and entered the underground garage. After examining their identities, the security courteously allowed them to pass.

When Jiang Chen arrived at the president's office, Zhang Yapin was in a heated debate with his lead advisor and vice president. Zhang Yapin stopped for a second when he saw Jiang Chen at the door and came up to greet him.

"Welcome Mr. Jiang, what brought you here?"

The vice president and lead advisor weren't too displeased when their conversation with the president was interrupted; they merely examined Jiang Chen with a few curious looks.

Jiang Chen shook hands with Zhang Yapin before he asked:

"Are you busy now?"

"Diplomatic problem. Haha, gentlemen, it's already lunchtime. Why don't we wait until 2 before we start our discussion again?"

The lead advisor and the vice president exchanged glances before they nodded.

"No problem." "I agree."

The two left, leaving only Zhang Yapin and Jiang Chen in the office. Zhang Yapin walked up to the coffee pot and poured two cups of coffee before he sat down on the sofa and gestured Jiang Chen to give the coffee a try.

"Blue Mountain Coffee."

"Thank you." Jiang Chen took a drink and leaned back on the sofa.

"Okay, I guess you're not here just for me to make you coffee." Perhaps he'd been busy for the past few days, but Zhang Yapin's voice was fast.

After a few months of experience, the young president finally gave off the vibe of a politician. Although Zhang Yapin didn't say anything yet, he knew Jiang Chen must be here for something.

Seeing as Zhang Yapin was so direct, Jiang Chen didn't bother making small talk anymore. "Ocean resources development license and mining license - help me take care of these."

"You're planning to mine? I remember that there's only a low-reserve cooper mine in Pannu Islands," Zhang Yapin said with a frown.

Jiang Chen shook his head. "Not above the sea surface, I want to mine under the ocean."

"Underwater mining?"

"That's right. The location is south of Ange Island; it won't affect the local ecosystem there."

"...Okay, I'll take care of this for you." Although he was skeptical whether Jiang Chen could mine, Zhang Yapin still nodded. "Anything else?"

"I have nothing else." Jiang Chen shook his head. "But you seem to have something."

Zhang Yapin had a bitter smile and took a sip of his coffee.

"The attempts by country F to use the excuses of disrupting area stability and illegally detaining hostages to impose economic sanctions on Xin along with Malaysia, Brunei, Indonesia, New Guinea, Australia and other neighboring countries. For example, increasing export taxes to Xin would greatly increase the cost of living for ordinary citizens. Also-

"What's the reaction of each country?' Because he didn't understand the situation, Jiang Chen interrupted him as he cut straight to the point.

[Illegally detaining hostages? Fu*k? How thick is your skin to dare to say this?] Jiang Chen cursed in his mind.

"Because of the stance of Hua, the south sea countries all stand with country F while New Guinea expressed neutrality on this issue, but it wasn't a big deal - we didn't have significant trade with those countries."

"The problem is Australia?"

"That's right." Zhang Yapin nodded.

Australia was the major trade partner of Xin; 80% of the products sold in Xin supermarkets came from the ports of Australia. If Australia favored country F, it would be detrimental to Xin's economy.

"Based on the new arms deal between Australia and country F, F would purchase an out-of-service warship with a displacement of 3600 tons. While Australia didn't express their stance yet, based on the fact that F could use this deal as leverage, Australia has a high

chance of favoring country F."

Jiang Chen crossed his legs and deliberated.

Zhang Yapin's expression looked rather helpless since a small country like Xin had no voice internationally. If Australia favored country F, Xin couldn't do anything about it.

"Cancel the trial in mid-July and release the 41 soldiers without conditions...? But that's impossible since we already announced the trial date to the international and local media. The international media also all submitted coverage requests to our supreme court already," Zhang Yapin said while rubbing his weary eyes.

The fact that things had developed to this point meant that there was no possibility of turning back. Once the 41 soldiers were convicted of their crimes, country F would lose all face internationally, and the "strong stance" employed by Aquino would become a complete joke.

If a small country could slap you in the face, how well does your strong stance work? It was already embarrassing for the invasion to occur, but without remedying the problem, Aquino would have to face the wrath of the soldiers' families as well as skepticism from his own citizens.

But country F's actions still made Jiang Chen surprised; the incident with the mercenaries still hadn't taught them a lesson.

"The ruling party of Australia is?" Jiang Chen asked in an undertone.

"Liberal party."

"What about the opposition party?"

"Labor party... Is there any problem?"

"Good, just leave this to me." A smile suddenly emerged on Jiang Chen's face as he stood on the sofa.

"Leave this to you?" Zhang Yapin was puzzled.

"A problem that can't be solved through foreign diplomacy can be solved politically. Don't forget - I'm a businessman and there are no boundaries for businessmen."

After Jiang Chen finished the coffee on the table, he left the completely confused Zhang Yapin and walked out the door with large strides.

Chapter 392: Arms Sale Agreement

In terms of diplomatic relationships, in contrast with its allies that were keen on flexing their muscles on the international stage, Australia's performance had been mediocre at best. It was partially because of its unfavorable geographic location, but also because its citizens never paid too much attention to international affairs.

As a joke, while the Australia government was attempting to win a seat on the UN security council, the opposition party laughed at the president for spending too much time on international politics, thus neglecting the crisis surrounding climate change.

Compared to Britain, France and UA that liked to play international political games during election years, Australia was calmer. But behind the calmness was a strong naval presence.

The Royal Australian Navy currently possessed six "Collins" class submarines, three "Adelaide" class warships, eight "Anzac" class warships, six mine hunters and other vessels; they could be considered the strongest naval force in the Pacific region.

Not only that, but currently the Royal Australian Navy was pushing the "SEA1400" and "SEA1000" projects with projected costs of 7.5 billion and 37 billion USD respectively. The projects would construct three "Hobart" class Aegis destroyers and 12 "Collins" class submarines, with the goal of replacing the existing fleet by 2020 and ultimately changing the existing naval force by 2030 to push for navy modernization...

But all this required money.

Considering its rather calm diplomatic policies and tight budget, its determination to modernize its navy was incredibly ambitious.

Because of this, the disposal of old navy vessels had been a problem that troubled Canberra for the past while. If country F was willing to purchase some old ships, the Australian government

had no reason to object.

As for the extra condition requiring them to change their stance in the west Pacific, the Australians didn't mind since Xin was only a small country with a population of twenty thousand.

Jiang Chen would target this sale to ruin country F's plan.

...

In Australia's capital, Canberra.

Outside of a Burger King, a taxi stopped.

The door opened and a middle-aged man with a grey trenchcoat walked out. After he examined the interior of the restaurant, he cautiously looked behind him.

After he confirmed that there were no reporters following him, he opened the door and walked in. He didn't order anything as he sat down at a seat in the innermost part of the restaurant and looked at the black man that sat across him.

Barkary, a manager at Celestial Trade Company.

"Barkary?" The middle-aged man scanned his phone before he looked at Barkary and asked in a low voice.

"That's right, and you must be Brody." Barkary extended his right hand.

Brody, a member of the liberal party, had a reputation within the party second only to the party head, Malcolm.

Hesitating for a second, Brody shook his hand and spoke while staring into his eyes.

"The manager of Celestial Trade Company? Australia doesn't need a security company; I probably can't help you."

Barkary laughed and put his arms on the table.

"But we can definitely help you out."

Brody raised his eyebrows and signaled him to continue.

Barkary smiled and exposed his white teeth. "I heard you have an inactive MEKO-200 warship-"

"Impossible. We already decided to sell that to country F, so there's no way we can sell it to you. If you're here for that, you're out of luck." Brody immediately knew what he was going to say as he rejected him outright.

"200 employment positions in your riding," Barkary said.

Brody wanted to get up, but his interest was piqued, so he sat down again.

For a parliament member, there was nothing he cared about more than his riding. Although he was scornful at Barkary's suggestion, he still sat down and waited for him to continue.

"You haven't figured out the situation, Mr. Barkary. I can't convince the parliament to sell a navy vessel to a country we're unfamiliar with, even if it's just an inactive navy vessel," Brody said.

"I never said it would be sold to a country." Barkary shook his head.

"Not possible for private individuals either."

Brody wanted to get up, but Barkary pulled him back down and signaled Brody to give him ten minutes.

The parliament member sat down again as Barkary spoke with a smile.

"Our boss is planning to purchase a bankrupted amusement park located in New South Wales for five million USD. The vessel will be purchased under the name of the amusement park and converted into a military museum. This is not against the arms sales regulation because it's an Australian corporation that will purchase the vessel, and it's for non-military purposes."

And this point, Barkary stopped talking and watched Brody's eyes

gradually lighting up. He knew that this parliament member was tempted by the proposal.

After a moment of deliberation, Brody said in an undertone:

"How much are you planning to pay?"

"11 million USD."

Brody shook his head. "I can only tell you that country F's offer is not below 15 million USD - I can't convince the president with this offer."

"Is this as simple as 11 million USD?" Barkary asked with a smile.

"What do you mean?" Brody raised his eyebrows.

"This year is the election year. Do you think voters are more inclined to see a president who is keen to sell a navy vessel to a country that disrupts regional security, or a president who is working hard to improve employment and maintain regional stability? Think about it - the president isn't a businessman; the voters won't care how much you sell the vessel for as long as the number isn't too absurd."

Because of its amount of time in service, the second-hand navy vessel wasn't worth a lot of money to begin with. The "Hamilton" class patrol ship purchased by country F from the UA was 10 million. While this Australian vessel had served for comparatively less time, it was definitely not worth 15 million USD. The reason why country F was willing to pay a premium was because Australia agreed to sell the weapons and radar along with the vessel.

Australia also took a diplomatic risk when selling this vessel, because the sale could be viewed as an act of aggression. Therefore, this proposal had a divergent opinion in the president's office.

As a politician, Brody obviously considered that aspect. The reason he didn't reveal the controversy about the deal with country F was because he wanted to gain more out of the negotiations. Due to the price drop in iron and aluminum ores,

Australia's economy had a lackluster performance in 2015. In this type of economic environment, the deal that would gain the support of voters was a no-brainer.

Seeing that Barkary put all the facts on the table, Brody's gaze drifted away and his fingers knocked on the table continuously while he debated the pros and cons.

"The arms sale is led by the UA - we can't completely disregard the position of our ally." Brody lowered his voice.

Barkary laughed and shifted his chair back.

"Mr. Brody, do you think the UA is more important or the upcoming election in 2016? If you don't win, your efforts in diplomatic relations are only going to help pave the road for the Labor party. If you think my proposal isn't attractive enough, we can also go talk to the Labor party. I trust they will definitely take this opportunity."

Barkary then stood up.

But this time, Brody grabbed him.

Looking at the expression on the parliament member's face, a victorious smile appeared on Barkary's face.

He knew he had successfully convinced him.

...

The rain outside the window was still pouring. In the distance, a few strikes of lightning occasionally appeared.

Jiang Chen was already naked on the soft bed. A sheet covered his stomach while he had a phone in his hand. He looked relaxed.

"It's done. A member of parliament, Brody, agreed to discuss our deal with the party leader."

"Excellent, 16 million USD has been transferred to your account. You can now go purchase the bankrupted amusement park and the inactive navy vessel." Lying on the bed, Jiang Chen sent these

instructions to Barkary in Australia.

Once country F found out their navy vessel would be turned into an amusement park, what would they think? It wasn't important for the amusement park to make a profit, but it was meant to solve the awkward diplomatic situation Xin was currently in. He had to drag wavering Australia off of country F's boat.

Only 16 million? Jiang Chen could afford that.

"Also, what do you think of Brody as a person?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Devious." Barkary used one word to describe him.

"Influence within the party?"

"Only second to the party leader, Malcolm. He helped Malcolm win the election in 2013."

"Maintain a good relationship with Brody; we could use him in the future. Also, you can hint at him to see if he's interested in becoming the party leader. We can provide some election funds." Jiang Chen had a dubious smile on his face.

"Okay," Barkary answered concisely.

After hanging up the phone, Jiang Chen let out a long breath.

Without Australia's involvement, the economic sanctions would only be words on paper.

Then the sheets covering his lower half moved and slowly lifted.

A gorgeous face appeared under it. A pair of crystal blue eyes stared at him followed by a rhythmic up and down motion.

Jiang Chen smiled and caressed Ayesha's dark brown hair.

"I still need to make a phone call-"

But just as his fingertips brushed her hair, a tingling sensation began to diffuse in his body as Jiang Chen tightened his back muscles like he was electrocuted.

Violent vibrations and a few gulping sounds.

Tempted by the pair of eyes mixing frost and passion, Jiang Chen took a deep breath and tossed his phone to the side.

What happened next could not be spoken.

Chapter 393: Transporting Ores

"You incompetent fool! What are you doing! You negotiated for half a month, and this is the result you give me?"

Since half an hour ago, the roaring sound in the F president's office didn't stop.

Aquino threw the stack of documents on the minister of foreign affairs' face furiously; his chest pumped up and down violently.

F's naval units were most dependent on imports. The only two "Hamilton" class patrol ships were all the scrap junks of UA. It was quite funny that every time in an arms sale, the F minister of defense would beg for the UA to retain the equipment on the ship, but it would always be rejected.

Now that the Australian government finally agree and indicated that they were willing to retain some of the equipment and weapons, the navy vessel that was about to be theirs is now gone? Aquino wanted to use this boat as his stake in the negation in the south sea!

The minister of foreign affair also felt horrible. The Australian president already agreed, but today when they were preparing to discuss the details of the agreement, they unexpectedly began to toughen up on some of the key problems.

Overnight, they suddenly changed their stance, this caught F representatives there to negotiate completely off guard.

The lead advisor looked at the upset minister of foreign affair and took a deep breath.

"Mr. President, we should phone the Capital--"

The door was suddenly pushed open as a member of parliament walked in, in quick steps.

"The "Octopus" typhoon passed by the coast near OSL city,

multiple buildings including a hospital suddenly collapsed when the typhoon passed through. Currently, there are 31 confirmed casualties..."

"Fu*k!" Aquino shouted in frustration as he walked to the door in quick steps.

With the series of problems coming at him and the media just criticized him for his weak diplomatic ability, he didn't want them to say he put in a lack of effort on the rescue.

"The Capital--"

"Get the minister of foreign affairs to negotiate, I need to be at the area in five hours..."

...

It was a disaster when the typhoon passed through, but the weather had cleared up.

The thunderstorm washed about the dust in the air as the air was fulfilled with a fresh fragrance. The dew on the palm trees outside the window reflected a bright crystal color and reflected the redness rising from the east.

In the morning, Jiang Chen sat in front of the table while reading the morning news. Based on the meteorologist, the typhoon named "Octopus" was moving westward along the Pacific ring of fire, it scraped by the east side of F and headed towards the south along the coast.

After putting toast, eggs, and coffee on the table for Jiang Chen, Ayesha leaned forward and kiss him on the cheek and then sat beside him.

Jiang Chen smiled at her before he focused on the TV screen again. When he saw the number of cities affected, his eyebrows raised.

Ayesha seemed to have read Jiang Chen's thought as she gently

asked, "Xia Shiyu is in Xiangjiang, is she okay?"

"I'll give her a call in a bit."

Ayesha nodded, picked up the utensils, and began to work on her own breakfast.

It was already mid-June, deepwater started at the beginning of the month. BHP followed the agreement signed with Jiang Chen and shipped one hundred thousand tons of iron ore and twenty hundred thousand tons of aluminum ore to the deepwater port at Coro Island.

This batch of ores would be used to support industrial production on the wasteland, so the earlier, the better. After breakfast, Ayesha drove Jiang Chen to the port at the south end of Coro Island.

Typically speaking, imported goods such as ores would be shipped in 20 feet containers. Because of the maximum weight permitted per container, a container could only transport 20 tons of iron ore. Jiang Chen first had no exact concept to the thirty hundred tons of containers, but when he arrived at the port, he was flabbergasted.

The ten thousand something containers stuffed the not so spacious port fully. The bored port manager and his team had to work overtime because of this batch of goods. Therefore, when they saw Jiang Chen, they were certainly not in a good mood.

But Jiang Chen didn't speak much with them as he called Zhang Yapin and told him to give them all a vacation. After confirming that they all left, Jiang Chen told Ayesha to guard the entrance of the port before he started the lengthy transport process.

To prevent the warehouse from blowing up, Jiang Chen had to go back and notify Sun Jiao. Then they drove to the steel plant located in Shenxiang. After getting rid of the workers there, they placed the transport marker on the empty land used to store raw materials at the back of the steel plant.

It was not until noon did Jiang Chen finish the entire process.

"I'm so fu*cking tired..."

Jiang Chen slapped his hand and walked out of the now spacious port.

He already made up his mind to establish a steel plant at Ange Island, at least to process the raw materials a little, or bring steel processing from the apocalypse to the modern world, it was too inefficient to transport ores.

Also, the Fishbone base must build a bigger warehouse to accept a large quantity of resources.

When he got in the car, Ayesha asked.

"Where are we going now?"

"The ferry terminal, I have to go Ange Island in a bit." As he said, Jiang Chen took out his phone.

She nodded and started the car.

...

Xiangjiang.

Because of the orange storm alert, Future Technology was on break today. Xia Shiyu stayed in the apartment and didn't even step her foot out of the door. Watching the grain sized raindrops, her sight moved back to the TV.

"... Behind me is a public hospital in F's OSL city. From the outside, it is clear that the surrounding area is in shambles. F has already deployed military efforts to conduct rescues in the area..." On the screen, a reporter in a raincoat looked frantic.

Country F? Pretty close to Pannu Islands.

Xia Shiyu's geography was not the best, she only remembered the approximate location of Pannu Islands.

[I wonder how he... Eh? Why do I have to think of him?]

Xia Shiyu covered her somewhat burning face, at the same time, she grabbed the remote on the table and switched the channel.

She didn't like to watch the news.

In her memory, she only paid attention to the news two times. Once when Jiang Chen went to Iraq, the second time now.

Suddenly, the phone began to ring.

Xia Shiyu walked to the bedroom and picked up the phone charging on the nightstand. When she saw the incoming caller's name, her heart beat a little faster. Coincidentally, just as she wanted to confirm he was safe, he called first.

"Hello?"

"How is it over there?"

When she heard Jiang Chen's caring voice, she felt warm inside.

"It's raining pretty hard here, how about you?"

"It has been raining for the past few days, but it cleared up in the morning. The typhoon is now heading in your direction, be safe, and stay inside. Mhmm, you didn't go to work today right?" Jiang Chen asked her.

"No."

"That's good." Jiang Chen laughed.

[What do you mean that's good? Which boss urges their employees to take vacations...] Xia Shiyu muttered in her mind.

"Also, after you finish the tasks on hand, take some time to go to Xin."

"To Xin? Can I ask if it is some weird project?" Xia Shiyu sighed.

"Rather than weird, I would say it is astonishing."

"Astonishing? What exactly is it?"

"Virtual reality MMORPG, have you heard it?"

Chapter 394: Molybdenum Mining Project

Just like what Jiang Chen had expected, after hearing his words, Xia Shiyu was utterly dumbfounded.

Recovering from being dumbfounded, she repeatedly asked Jiang Chen the difference between the virtual reality MMORPG and the existing VR games. When she heard "neural connection," "second life" and other key vocabularies, she immediately stated that she will make a trip after the typhoon clears up.

To the marketing plan of this era-defining MMORPG, she couldn't wait to start working on it.

...

Because most of the mines were located in the southern sea region, the headquarter of Future Mining was established on Ange Island. After they met the last time, Yang Yuan have been working on this. With half a month of work, the structure of the company was finally established.

When he landed on the island, the Celestial Trade Company's vehicle was already waiting on the side of the road. He got in the car as Jiang Chen briefly told him about the destination before the driver started driving.

The security business of Celestial Trade was divided into military and civilian. The military employees were all located on New Moon Island whereas the civilian workers acted as the bodyguard of key government officials. Jiang Chen's temporary driver was a bodyguard.

Jiang Chen rolled down the window, put his arm outside, and started to view the backyard that belonged to him.

Since the last time he visited Ange Island, it has only been a month, but in this one month time, the small island has experienced groundbreaking shifts. The new apartments, houses,

and the business street under renovation were all part of the change. Compared to the fishing village before, Ange city finally had some flavors of being a city.

Because of the infrastructure development plan and the tourism resources construction led by Future International, a lot of foreign merchants smelled the opportunity for business as they attempt to hop on the fast-moving train and enjoy the considerable dividend to be paid in investing in Xin.

When he passed by the city center, Jiang Chen was shocked to find a Coles store under construction. He faintly recalled that it seemed to be a chain in Australia with domestic operations. Clearly, the lack of department stores in Xin had drawn the attention of Coles group, so they bravely took the first step and selected Ange Island as their first stop to international expansion.

Because of the international businessmen's massive appetite for land, the Ange government's finance increased substantially. They immediately used the money for infrastructure development, such as expanding roads and building schools.

The infrastructure not only improved the quality of life of the people, but it also provided a large number of employment opportunities. The high unemployment rate was greatly improved, and the lack of labor even attracted immigrants. The previously city with an empty feeling now was injected by a healthy boost of adrenaline and displayed the liveliness it should possess.

...

The employment dorm Jiang Chen provided to Yang Yuan was a mansion by the sea located at the edge of Ange city, there was only a road along with a few rows of giant palm trees, and there was nothing else.

The car was parked on the side as Jiang Chen told the driver to wait for him. Jiang Chen then walked to the mansion and pressed the bell on the wooden door.

There were the sound of footsteps before the door was opened shortly after.

When he saw his old friend Jiang Chen, Yang Yuan warmly welcomed him inside.

"What do you think? How's the life here." Jiang Chen scanned the decoration inside the living room as he sat on the sofa.

"Perfect beyond my belief, I almost couldn't afford my rent in Australia." Yang Yuan let out a sigh before he looked at Jiang Chen earnestly, "Although it is a bit dramatic, I still have to say, thank you."

"We're old friends, It's nothing."

It was not for the industry's unexpected turn of events, with Yang Yuan's resume, his life would be no worse in Australia. Since on this island, other than housing being cheap, nothing else was convenient.

"Have you eaten yet? Want to have lunch here?"

"I'm here for that. Will it be troublesome?" Jiang Chen said jokingly.

"Haha, it's only adding an extra pair of chopsticks, no trouble at all." Yang Yuan laughed.

"Here are the champagnes." Su Fei took out two bottles of champagne, placed the bottles in front of them, and popped open the cap.

Perhaps because she knew she had no chance, Su Fei didn't give Jiang Chen the frivolous vibe anymore which made Jiang Chen feel relieved.

"Thank you." Jiang Chen took the glass and smiled friendly at her.

"No problem." Su Fei smiled and poured for her boyfriend, "You guys chat, I will go cook."

With how virtuous his girlfriend was, Yang Yuan had a happy expression.

"Did you lose your soul?" Jiang Chen mocked.

"Haha." Yang Yuan timidly touched his nose, raised the cup, "Let's drink."

"I didn't know your S.O knew how to cook." This did surprise Jiang Chen; Su Fei didn't look like someone capable of that.

"Your S.O is really virtuous. I just bought tuna from the fisher in town, you'll love it," Yang Yuan said as he took a drink.

"Tuna soup?"

"What soup, Sashimi!" Yang Yuan laughed.

To the deeply committed roommate, Jiang Chen wholeheartedly wished that he could be together with the person he loves. Although the Su Fei gave him a feeling that she is not a good girl, he would never offer an opinion on other people's relationship.

They chatted from life to work.

No wonder he was a talent signed by Rio Tinto in the first year of his master's program, Yang Yuan's ability was indeed strong. When he talked about work, his work ethic was almost comparable to the workaholic Xia Shiyu.

"The education level of Xin is extremely low, so I hired a lot of technicians from Australia. Because of the massive layoff by Rio Tinto, I met a lot of strong seniors when I was studying for my master's who are currently living off of employment insurance. I asked them for their opinions and the salary they demanded was not high, but they wanted to sign the employment contract according to Australia's standard, and the company provides housing."

"Vacation and housing are not a problem. I just care about their ability," Jiang Chen said.

Yang Yuan smiled confidently and said with certainty, "Their ability are all strong, they were mostly all employed by Rio Tinto before with a wealth of work experience."

"How many people?"

"Considering that the company has yet to have a mining project, I only hired ten people as management."

"That's not enough, I have a deepwater mining project on hand." Jiang Chen shook his head.

Yang Yuan looked at Jiang Chen in surprise.

"This fast?"

"I have some personal relationships with the president," Jiang Chen implicitly said.

Yang Yuan immediately gave Jiang Chen the "I understand" look and laughed. "No wonder the license is approved already. In a lot of countries, it would take more than half a year. Tell me the type of deposition and I'll prepare first if there is a project now. Ten people is definitely not enough."

"Molybdenum,"

"Molybdenum? Have you confirmed the location?" Yang Yuan raised his eyebrows.

Jiang Chen nodded and took out a paper map folded in his pocket. Although he didn't understand it, he still marked a molybdenum deposition on the map closest to Ange Island.

Looking at the red circle on the map, Yang Yuan's frown, looking more and more serious.

"Do you know that the average depth of the bed is 7500 meters?" Yang Yuan looked at Jiang Chen weirdly.

"Yeah? Is there a problem?" Jiang Chen was puzzled.

The deep-sea environment meant that molybdenum being

attached to organic matter is wrapped in a manganese-containing colloid, the final formation would sink into the sea and out of the biosphere cycle. This type of marine molybdenum deposition is undoubtedly more likely than the continental deposition of molybdenum deposits, but this deposit generally appears in the deep sea 5000 meters below with deeper deposits being more frequently. In this environment, the extraction will be complicated.

Although in the early 1970s, manganese nodule mining technology has made some progress, today is still under detailed investigation, assessment, and trial mining stage. At present, theoretically, the deepest mining depth was probably the fluid mining experimental system developed by Japan with a working depth of up to 5250 meters at ideal conditions. But this technology clearly hasn't made a breakthrough. Otherwise, the country that lacked resources would have started building sea platforms a long time ago.

"So you are saying, the current technology can't extract it?' To this point, Jiang Chen expected already.

"Might be possible in a lab, and only possible." Yang Yuan had a bitter smile, "Your president friend... is not playing with your right?"

Indeed, in bystander's eyes, selling a deposition that could not be extracted had no other explanation than fooling you. A lot of major companies that spent billions in technology didn't make a splash, let alone a small mining company with no history; it would even be difficult to extract in the shallow sea.

When he thought about this, Yang Yuan became a bit nervous. If the mine could really not be extracted, would that be the end of his job then? But to the rigorous standard and uprightness, he held himself to, he couldn't hide such a significant problem.

But Jiang Chen didn't seem to exhibit any signs of

disappointment or even anger like he thought, he only had a weird expression.

[Zhang Yapin dare to fool me? Don't kid me.]

Jiang Chen thought for a moment and said, "I can take care of the underwater mining."

"But that's 7500 meters." Yang Yuan had to remind him.

"Only 7500 meters." Jiang Chen smiled with confidence and in an indisputable tone.

Yang Yuan paused. Although he really wanted to use his industry experience to tell Jiang Chen it was unrealistic, the confidence on his face made him waver.

"I'll take care of the underwater mining technology, your current job is to build a platform located right above for resources transfer, and purchase a transportation vessel, then establish a molybdenum processing plant on Ange Island... Mhmm, and also a steel plant and aluminum plant used to process the ores shipped by BHP," Jiang Chen said.

It was not worth it to extract iron and aluminum underwater; it was cheaper to import.

"It would cost a lot of money," Yang Yuan cautioned him.

"I have enough money."

He borrowed thirty billion USD. Jiang Chen had enough money right now.

"... Okay." Yang Yuan picked up the glass and took a drink, "If you insist, I will follow your instructions."

As they were talking, Su Fei's voice came out of the kitchen.

"Time to eat. Clean off the table, there are a lot of dishes today."

"Haha, I already smell it." Yang Yuan stood up and walked to the kitchen to help his girlfriend to bring out the dishes.

Jiang Chen wanted to help too, but Su Fei who brought the sashimi stopped him.

"You are the guest; just let me and Yuan do it." Su Fei smiled and went back to the kitchen.

Chapter 395: Politely Refusing

The seafood buffet was put on the table. Sitting on the sofa, drinking champagne, the three began to enjoy the delicious meal.

During the meal, Jiang Chen had a great conversation with his old friend. Alcohol was a great way to get someone to talk. Since they got along before, right now, they chatted about everything.

"Also, when do you plan to get married?" Jiang Chen asked nonchalantly.

"Get married? It will depend on how Feifei feels, I'm willing to anytime," Yang Yuan looked a bit drunk as he held Su Fei's hand and said affectionately.

Su Fei's face was covered in a red hue.

"Wait a bit longer, we're not in a rush."

"Haha, that's true, no need to rush." Yang Yuan waved his hand.

Although he was a master graduate, Su Fei just finished her undergrad and was about 22 years old in age. There was no rush to get married at her age.

"Don't forget to invite me when you get married, I'm waiting to drink the celebratory wine." Jiang Chen laughed.

Chu Nan didn't invite him when he got married which, to this day, bothered him.

"Of course," Yang Yuan said with the scent of alcohol coming through his nose, "At that time, we'll host a banquet on the beach and invite Old Huang and Old He along."

"That's a must, I'll take care of the plane tickets."

"No need, I can still afford that..."

The champagne's alcohol concentration was not high, and because of the fruity taste, it was lighter even compared to beer.

But after several bottles, Jiang Chen felt intoxicated. Looking at Yang Yuan, who normally couldn't drink, he still finished a few bottles to the point where he fell asleep and began snoring.

Intentional or unintentional, Su Fei changed to a different sitting position beside her boyfriend with her legs crossed. The position was fine, but it was not appropriate for someone sitting across.

And with how smooth she looked, Jiang Chen didn't believe it was unintentional.

Jiang Chen let out a hidden sigh, he only felt sorry for his old friend, but he wouldn't say anything. Just like how the three roommates all knew what kind of person Fang Yuanyuan was, they didn't tell him either.

Sometimes, it didn't have to do with right or wrong, but once you point it out, you would be in the wrong.

"Brother Chen's alcohol tolerance is great, let me propose a toast on behalf of Yuan." Su Fei raised her glass at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen laughed and toasted with her.

"It's getting late, old Yuan is already drunk, I'll leave now."

"Not going to stay a bit longer?" Seeing Jiang Chen get up, Su Fei tried to convince him to stay.

Yang Yuan was already lying on the sofa and began snoring. Seeing the smile on Su Fei's face that was asking him to stay, Jiang Chen, of course, understood her intention.

"No need. I still have some business to take care of this afternoon, I won't disturb you any longer," Jiang Chen thanked her and rejected the offer.

Su Fei was not pretty to begin with. Even if she was, Jiang Chen would NTR his friend.

Seeing Jiang Chen already say that, Su Fei didn't insist.

"Okay, let me walk you to the door."

She warmly sent Jiang Chen to the door as she watched Jiang Chen walk onto the road. When she saw the bodyguard respectfully got off the car and opened the door for him, envy flashed across her face. She was not envious of the car, but the respect on the bodyguard's face.

That's the feeling of being in upper-class society.

She then remembered the foreign girl called Ayesha.

She was jealous of that girl. Why is her boyfriend so rich and powerful...

Turning around to look at her drunk boyfriend, she let out a sigh and closed the door.

...

Sitting in the car with the mild sea wind blowing across his face, Jiang Chen gazed at the horizon in the distance.

"Sir, where are we going to next?" The bodyguard driving asked.

"The pharmaceutical plant," Jiang Chen answered concisely.

Because he was drunk, he didn't want to say anything, he just wanted to quietly let the sea wind blow on him so he cleared his mind.

But not long after, the bodyguard spoke again.

"Sir, do you need me to turn on air conditioning?"

"No."

Seeing Jiang Chen was a bit annoyed, but out of safety consideration, the bodyguard carefully asked.

"Sir, your seatbelt-"

Jiang Chen put on the seatbelt in annoyance.

"Can't you be like Ayesha-"

The bodyguard was perplexed, "Sir?"

"Nothing, sorry, I'm drunk." Jiang Chen blew out a breath mixed with the scent of alcohol and waved his hand.

With just one look and sometimes without even needing one, Ayesha could acutely read what he needed. And because of this gentle caring, the understanding without words, it made him fall in love with her.

Of course, it was too much asking a man to know him like that. Just regarding service, the bodyguard of Celestial Trade was impeccable.

"Sir, you don't have to apologize to me," the bodyguard said in a quiet voice.

"..."

After a half an hour drive, the car stopped at the gate of the nutrient supply manufacturing plant.

On the way, Jiang Chen had mostly sobered up. Just as he pushed open the door and was about to step out, he paused.

"Is there something wrong?"

"Mhmm... That old friend of mine, arrange him a bodyguard, the type with a car."

[Buddy, this is the most I can do for you.]

"Okay, sir," The bodyguard said.

Jiang Chen nodded and headed to the gate.

Although security at the door recognized Jiang Chen's face, the rule set by Jiang Chen himself was "pupil recognition only" must be adhered to, so the security went up to confirm his identity.

After looking into the camera for 1 second, the verification process was complete.

The two soldiers saluted and backed away.

He entered the lab of the plant and found Zhan Shoujie, taking

samples of the produced product.

"How much nutrient supply did the plant produce?"

"30000 boxes, stored in the warehouse."

A box contained 100 tubes of nutrient supply, the first month, therefore, had a production rate of three million tubes of nutrient supply which was quite impressive. With a profit of 5 USD per tube, this month's profit alone was 15 million USD.

Although it didn't look like much, this was just the start. Once the market expands, Jiang Chen would ask Zhan Shoujie to ramp up production. The 2.1 billion fat people on the planet were all his potential customers.

"Could we sell these?" Seeing the proud expression on Jiang Chen's face, Zhan Shoujie had to interrupt and ask.

"Don't worry, people will be desperate to buy it. Don't worry about sales, I will be hiring professionals to take care of it for me."

"That's perfect." Zhan Shoujie nodded.

He was a technician, so he could easily ensure the quality of the products, but he was not an expert in sales.

"The nutrient supply in the warehouse, package 15 sets of 20 tubes for me. These 300 tubes will be used as sample products during our negotiation. The quality must be good and it'll be best it was recently produced."

"No problem. Do you want it now?" Zhan Shoujie asked.

"Before you get off work, there will be people picking it up tomorrow."

Chapter 396: Selling Nutrient Supply

In Bentonville, Arkansas, the office of Walmart.

Sitting behind the desk, Florance, the purchasing manager, looked at his assistant who had just walked in and asked in a deep voice.

"Is the analysis result out?"

The assistant nodded and put the document on the boss' table.

"It's out; our research found several interesting plant protein in this thing called nutrient supply. Although we don't know the source of it, the safety of the food is absolutely fine."

"With FDA standard?" Florence confirmed again.

"Yes." The assistant nodded with certainty.

After the scandal in 2015, Walmart became more cautious toward supplement suppliers.

The Ginkgo biloba leaf pills sold by Walmart stated that it could increase memory, but after examination, it only contained carrot powder and wheat powder, while on the ingredients list, it didn't list wheat powder.

The event caused a huge uproar at Walmart, and four other large department store chains were all put under the scrutiny of the media and public. Even one year after the event where the memory was gradually fading away from the public, Walmart's supplier selection in supplement and food were still two times more rigorous than before.

Three days ago, he received a package from Future Biology. Inside the package contained the sample along with an invitation.

To be frank, if it was not for Future Group's reputation, Florence might not even look at it before he passed on the product with labels like "liquid food" "weight loss without dieting".

When Florence scanned through the results, the more he read, the more his eyes turned stern. Especially when he read the two sections, clinical response and effect estimation, his eyes were almost glued to the paper.

"Bam!" He smashed the document on the table as he immediately ordered his assistant.

"Send sales to Xin immediately; we have to get this deal... No, get Jim to go personally go," Florence said briskly.

"But boss, Jim has a negotiation with a representative from Pirus Biology-"

"Get his assistant to do it," Florence ordered, "Put this report in front of him, he will know how important it is to us. I don't care how he does it; I want to see an agreement on my table in three days."

The assistant nodded and left.

Sinking into his chair, Florence took a deep breath before an ecstatic expression appeared on his face.

The obese people of America, oh no, the brand of Walmart supplements can be saved!

...

The same reaction appeared in different places as the major retailers began to investigate Future biology. No one knew why would Future International suddenly enter the supplement and food market, but who cares? When they discovered the magical nature of the nutrient supply, almost all the retailers extended their olive branch to the newly formed company.

"We sent out 15 invitations, 13 retailers responded to us extending their willingness to cooperate with us on this product." In the conference room, a man was reporting to the sole shareholder Jiang Chen.

Tao Ming, New Zealand Han, male, 31, previous Prius Supplement manager. He possesses a wealth of product development and marketing experience, currently the director of Future Biology. A talent Jiang Chen obtained through an international headhunter company with a high salary of twenty thousand USD per month.

If there were not enough talent, he would get it with money, since Jiang Chen, with a research and development cost of almost zero, didn't need to consider breaking even at all.

"Also, the online stores we are preparing to launch on, Amazon, Taobao and other e-commerce platforms, are in their last phase. The shipment will be sent from Ange Island to Darwin port in Australia as that will be the platform for international distribution.

Although it was somewhat specific, he used terms that Jiang Chen could easily understand. Tao Ming was smart enough to know that Jiang Chen wouldn't understand industry jargon.

"Perfect, how much of the product do we need per month?" Jiang Chen nodded.

"The retailers would need one hundred thousand boxes per month. The variation on the backup platform differs, based on the marketing budget, it could range from ten thousand to one million boxes."

A box had a profit of 500 USD, a million box would be 500 million, the profit was shocking.

Seeing Tao Ming had stopped talking and was looking at him with words in his mouth, Jiang Chen laughed.

"Just tell me what you want to say."

"If we could use Future 1.0 as an advertising platform for nutrient supply, it would help to push the brand." Tao Ming proposed.

"No problem, I will make the arrangement. Also, do we not need

to sponsor a celebrity or something?" Jiang Chen asked.

Tao Ming nodded,

"That would be best. Based on the discussion results from the marketing department, I recommend sponsoring Emma Watson or other Hollywood celebrities to pave the way to establish the international brand-

"Wait, why does the name Emma Watson sound so familiar?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows as he tried to recall where he heard this name.

With the puzzled expression on the boss' face, Tao Ming smiled lightheartedly.

"Have you heard of Harry Potter?"

"The books?"

"The movies, Emma played Hermione."

"Oh! I remember now. But rather than her I think it is better to sponsor Harry, look how fat he became in the later movies." Jiang Chen glanced at him and said unscrupulously

"Boss, it is better to drop the movie plot when we discuss the product." Tao Ming coughed and attempted to correct Jiang Chen in awkwardness.

"Haha, sorry, off track. Mhmm... So you recommend which celebrity?" Jiang Chen asked.

"The first choice is Emma Watson. Of course, there are a lot of other backup options."

"What's the estimated sponsorship fee?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Approximately one million to one and a half million USD, it would differ based on the conditions and requirements set," Yao Ming answered.

It was not too expensive. Robert was a film director in Los

Angeles; he would be a good connection.

"Okay, then I'll leave this to you," Jiang Chen said.

Yao Ming nodded.

"I have a meeting with a Walmart representative this afternoon; we'll be talking about supplying this product. If all goes smoothly, I'll be signing a contract with a monthly supply of fifty thousand boxes. Could we meet the demand for production?"

"No problem. I'll take care of ramping up production; you take care of sales and marketing for me," Jiang Chen said.

Worst case, he would only need to return to the apocalypse and obtain some inducers to expand the growth area of the DH seaweed and bring back more organic converters to produce "juice." If done successfully, the nutrient supply business would bring him 100 – 200 million USD in profits. Based on the stability and consistent demand of the market, the future of Future Biology would be no less bright than Future Technology.

The door was knocked on gently.

Tao Ming looked over, it was his assistant.

"The Walmart representative is here."

"Already here? That's fast." Yao Ming was a bit caught off guard. "Get him to wait for a bit, I'm in a board meeting-"

"No need, you can go." Jiang Chen stood up. "I know everything I needed to know. I need to pick up someone from the airport, that's all from me."

"But I haven't shown you the marketing plan yet. It is a major decision to the company's development; it is better for the president to view it to make a decision," Tao Ming said hesitantly.

"No need, I trust your ability." Jiang Chen walked beside Yao Ming, patted him on the shoulder, and encouraged him, "I trust you, I will give you enough freedom to prove your ability."

Yao Ming looked sincerely at Jiang Chen.

To be honest, the reason why he jumped ship to come here was only partly due to the high salary offered by Future Biology, but what attracted him more was Jiang Chen's promise of autonomy. When he was working at Prius, a lot of excellent proposals didn't pass because of the differing opinions among the board members or the lack of funding, and they would have to bear the consequence during the yearly performance review.

The soldier was willing to die for someone that understood him, just with this trust, he swore that he would not disappoint Jiang Chen.

Chapter 397: Entry Blacklist

Coro Island airport.

A girl in a casual outfit and a pair of shades dragged her luggage and walked into the empty airport alone.

The tourists that she passed by all stopped and turned to look at her, but because of the shades, they couldn't see her face clearly. But just by her graceful figure and the gorgeous outline, it was not hard to predict that the girl was trouble.

Perhaps a celebrity that was alone on vacation.

The tourists passed by her debated whether they should ask for an autograph, perhaps it may be the start of a beautiful encounter.

But they would be disappointed.

First, Xia Shiyu was not a celebrity.

Second, the beauty already has her heart set on someone else.

It was in the middle of June; the bright sun was like a ball of fire in the sky. Xia Shiyu who just came out of the airport immediately felt the heat unique to the tropical region.

When she left the airport, she headed straight to the road outside and stood under the palm tree.

To the taxi drivers' beeping of the horn, she shook her head, signaling that she was waiting for someone before she checked the time on her phone.

<10:00>

The flight arrived thirty minutes ahead of schedule, there was still thirty minutes before the agreed on pickup time.

Her thumb hovered on the phone icon for two seconds but moved to the camera.

She selected the front camera.

She stared at her serene face on the screen silently for a while.

[... Is my bang a bit off center?]

She tried to adjustment the freshly permed bangs she got a few days ago in an attempt to make it look more normal.

On the plane, she put on a layer of light makeup. As to why she didn't even know herself. Perhaps she wanted to capture the glimpse of being stunned in someone's eyes, or perhaps she wanted to outshine her competitor...

The two shared a similar starting point.

Just as she was looking at herself on the screen, she heard someone speak broken Han.

"Beautiful lady, is it your first time in Pannu Islands?"

[Is he talking to me?]

Xia Shiyu took a moment to process this. She turned around and looked at the tall European with a hooked nose and deep eye sockets.

After a brief silence, she used her throat to make a sound.

'Mhmm."

Based on her experience, the people attempting to pick her up would awkwardly walk away when they hear the cold response.

But she clearly thought too much, being reserved is a unique elegance only to Asians. To Xia Shiyu's cold response, the hooked nose was even more interested as he walked closer and attempted to get to know her.

"What a coincidence, me too! I felt a bit anxious when I was on the plane. If the place is as chaotic as the news said it to be, I would have made the trip for nothing. But just as I got off the plane, I realized my mistake."

"Oh?"

"Because I met you." The hooked nose used an expression he thought was touching and gazed into her eyes.

Xia Shiyu was just a bit shocked.

[Does this count as a confession? It's the first time we met...]

Seeing that the beauty did not react, the hooked nose only smiled and didn't give up. He took out a business card from his pocket.

"Gavin Adams, a professional traveler from the United States and the editor of Traveler magazine. This is my business card; you can call me Gavin. Do I have the opportunity of inviting you to a tour of the beautiful kingdom of the southern islands?"

To the person that revolved around her like a fly, especially the undisguised look of desire, it annoyed her instinctively.

Just as she was troubled by how she could get rid of him, a familiar voice rang beside her ear.

"Hello, Mr. Adams, I think it is better to refer to you by your last name." He snatched the business card in his hand and ignored his frozen expression. Jiang Chen took out his business card and handed it to him with a smile. "Oh, I almost forgot, this is my business card."

When she saw Jiang Chen, she felt relieved.

Speaking of this, he always seemed there to solve her problem... When she thought about it, Xia Shiyu felt safe and secure.

But this international friend was not friendly.

Gavin examined Jiang Chen from head to toe as a hint of anger appeared on his face, he didn't accept Jiang Chen's business card.

"I didn't say I'm going to exchange business card with you, sir. Or should I say, are the people from your country always this rude in front of a lady?" As he spoke, Gavin raised his hooked nose and looked at Jiang Chen with disgust.

Jiang Chen's eyebrows raised. He wasn't angry as he put his card

away.

"Rude? Our courtesy is not to cause trouble for other people. I don't know what your definition of courtesy is. Causing trouble for other people?"

Gavin's face bloated into redness as he could not argue against Jiang Chen's words.

Seeing that he didn't make a sound, Jiang Chen dubiously smiled and ignored him.

He turned around to face Xia Shiyu as he said apologetically.

"Sorry, I'm a bit late."

"No, I was early," Xia Shiyu said feeling slightly weird.

[Is he... jealous?]

As her mind debated this question, Xia Shiyu felt her heart beat a little faster.

Jiang Chen didn't notice Xia Shiyu's mental battle as he said.

"Let's get in the car first."

Then, he took the luggage from her hand.

"Wait." Seeing Xia Shiyu was about to leave, Gavin couldn't stand around any longer, and he wanted to stop the two, but he hit a brick wall.

A man in a police uniform stood firmly in front of him and watched him apathetically.

"What are you doing, you are blocking the way?" Gavin said in frustration.

Seeing that the goddess he encountered get into the car of someone else, he felt enraged and let it out all on the man blocking his way.

"Sir, I suspect there is a problem with your passport."

"My passport? That's impossible." Gavin took out his passport, shoved it in his chest, "Open your eyes and see!"

The police scanned the passport and nodded, "That's right, there is indeed a problem with your passport. Your ID is registered on the blacklist; please contact your country's embassy to obtain proof of no criminal conviction before you enter the border."

"The Blacklist? That's impossible!" Gavin roared in rage. His footsteps spanned across 34 nations; it was the first time he was stopped because he was on the blacklist. He swore that he never did anything illegal.

But the police ignored his roar and only shrugged.

"I'm only following the procedure."

Seeing there was no need to argue, Gavin calmed down slightly.

"... Okay, I will contact my embassy, where is the embassy in Coro city?"

"Sorry, sir. There is no embassy of your country at Pannu Islands, to obtain help from your embassy, please head to the Australia embassy for support." The police didn't lie to him. Only recently did more tourists travel to Xin, so only Hua, France, UK, Russia, Australia, and New Zealand have been established. Among them, four of the country's employees were still on their way there.

"What the f*ck?! You are saying I took a two hour flight here, and now I have to go back to Australia?!" Gavin completely erupted in rage.

"That's right, sir, we can assist you with the booking process. For now, please step back into the terminal," the policeman tried his hardest not to laugh as he said with seriousness.

Blame it on the fact that you offended someone you shouldn't have. He has been a policeman through two political regimes, it was the first time he heard Xin had a blacklist.

But since that person said there was one, then there must be one.

Chapter 398: Spy?

What happened at the airport was only a small interruption.

When Jiang Chen got into the driver seat, he immediately forgot about the unlucky guy. He put the key in and started the engine.

Jiang Chen rolled down the window and turned on the air conditioning, allowing the cold breeze to blow away the heat in the car.

"Thanks." Xia Shiyu put on her seatbelt.

"No problem, it was on my way anyway."

"No... I'm talking about what happened at the airport."

When she thought about Jiang Chen's expression when he stood in front of her, her heart somehow pumped a little faster.

"Oh, that - no worries. Remember to call me whenever you have any problems," Jiang Chen said nonchalantly as he maneuvered the steering wheel.

Xin's security wasn't the best, and since she was in a place she wasn't familiar with, he was worried about Xia Shiyu's safety.

[Maybe I should hire a bodyguard for her?] Jiang Chen deliberated in his mind.

When she heard Jiang Chen's words, her normally expressionless face turned red. Combined with the small droplets of sweat on her pale face and the pink foundation she used, she looked like a peach covered in the morning dew.

Because her mind went completely blank, Xia Shiyu didn't respond.

The atmosphere in the car went from silent to intimate. Jiang Chen didn't realize this until he peeked at Xia Shiyu because she was so quiet and he finally saw the conflicted emotions and redness on her face.

Because the windows were rolled up, the fresh scent of jasmine drifted into his nose. Because of the atmosphere, Jiang Chen's heart also started racing.

"Did you perm your hair?" Jiang Chen chose a random topic to break the silence.

But this unintentional question hit the mark. With women, you could have a differing opinion about changes in their looks, but you couldn't simply ignore the change in her hairstyle or clothing, even if it was just a new hair clip or keychain. In the event that you didn't comment on the change, women could keep a debate going for an entire night, just to get your attention.

By coincidence, Jiang Chen made just the right move in winning her heart. He didn't know it himself because he was in the middle of a turn and was focused on the road ahead.

Xia Shiyu's body visibly shook as she said reservedly:

"Does it look good?"

She immediately regretted the question.

[Did that sound too superficial? Should I have waited for him to compliment me himself for it to be more natural...?] Xia Shiyu turned her head and looked out the window as she was bombarded by her own thoughts.

Facepalmed men would not overthink.

Jiang Chen praised her: "Looks really good, really fresh, but why did you suddenly think of perming your hair?"

Xia Shiyu had always given him the impression of being authentic, serene, yet distant. But the perm gave her a "fresh" vibe that was normally found in students.

"My coworker... Mhmm, a friend told me that I'm too formal with how I dress, so she suggested I change things up." [I was also probably too unfashionable] Xia Shiyu added in her mind.

"I see, but I still think your hair from before looked better."

"Then I'll change it back," Xia Shiyu immediately said.

"Eh? No, I'm only stating my opinion; frequent perms are damaging to the hair." Jiang Chen face-palmed.

"Okay." Xia Shiyu nodded as she looked at her reflection in the window and secretively examined her hair.

"Oh, which friend was it?" Jiang Chen was surprised that Xia Shiyu had any friends.

He always thought her social circle was limited to her coworkers.

"Su Mengqi... The manager of the human resources department who moved with us from Wanghai to Xiangjiang," Xia Shiyu replied.

They chatted for a while until they arrived at the mansion located at the north end of Coro Island.

When he parked the car in the garage, Ayesha was already waiting for him.

Because she knew a guest was coming, her outfit was relatively "traditional." A light T-shirt paired with short shorts - stunning and lively.

After opening the door, Ayesha took Xia Shiyu's luggage. Because she hadn't seen her for a few months, Xia Shiyu had mixed feelings towards the foreign girl.

Partially a feeling of competitiveness, but partially gratitude for a person who saved her life.

In response to Ayesha's directness, she felt somewhat uncomfortable. Although she wanted to stay at Jiang Chen's place, when she was actually in front of the door, she changed her mind.

Just as Jiang Chen led her to her room, she was secretively observing Ayesha's eyes.

But unfortunately, she didn't see any jealousy inside.

This made her a bit frustrated. [Do I not look like competition? I even put on some makeup on the plane...]

Two red swirls suddenly appeared on her face.

She realized just how childish her thoughts were.

...

"Where's the virtual reality helmet?" After putting down her luggage, Xia Shiyu asked right away in an attempt to use work to alleviate the awkwardness in her heart.

"There's no rush, you can take a look after lunch. Why don't you take a shower to relax? The bathroom is at the end of the second-floor hallway." Jiang Chen smiled.

Xia Shiyu hesitated then nodded.

Because there was no direct flight, she had been in transit since last night. She was indeed a little tired.

Just then, Jiang Chen's phone suddenly rang.

"I'm going to take a call. If you need anything, just let Ayesha know."

As he spoke, Jiang Chen took out his phone and walked to the sofa.

When he picked up, Ivan's grave voice came through.

"Boss, we found a spy in the company."

"A spy?" Jiang Chen frowned. "Did you confirm their identity?"

It was hard for a spy to exist at the management level due to the electronic collars - they wouldn't escape if they were found, so no one was foolish enough to betray him. But at lower levels, it was hard to say - aside from the first 100 refugees who joined Celestial Trade, the loyalty of the newly recruited soldiers was uncertain.

"It's currently unclear, but a backdoor was installed on the

computer at Coro division yesterday. It sent 7 megabytes of data to an IP in Iceland," Ivan said in a deep voice.

Iceland was probably only a jumping board; no one knew exactly where the data went.

"I see, don't alert anyone yet," Jiang Chen ordered.

"Understood."

After he hung up, Jiang Chen fell into deep thought while holding his phone.

Too many people were interested in Celestial. Country F was the most suspicious, but UA, who always intervened everywhere, was also on the list. Even their potential ally, Hua, could potentially send spies.

Two arms tenderly hugged Jiang Chen from behind. Ayesha sensed that something was bothering him as she whispered.

"What happened?"

"... There is a spy in Celestial," Jiang Chen said in an undertone.

A hint of sharpness flashed in her eyes as she whispered in his ear.

"Do you need my help?"

"Do you know anything about computers?" Jiang Chen said helplessly.

Ayesha shook her head. Her sapphire eyes flashed brightly.

[But I could kill.]

Jiang Chen understood the message in her eyes as he sighed.

"It's not a problem that can be solved by killing. The key is to find the people responsible."

[But how?]

[Ask Yao Yao? That's not feasible. Not that Yao Yao didn't have

the skills, but she might be unfamiliar with the structure of the internet and programs in the 21st century. For example, people good at League of Legends might not be the best Nintendo player.

Yao Yao's security measures could destroy any of the hackers in this world. Just like New Era, Future 1.0's code still remained uncracked to this day since the code she wrote couldn't be understood by anyone in this world, making it impossible for anyone to install a backdoor in the program.

Because Celestial Trade didn't possess any critical secrets, they used the Windows 7 operating system and programs in this world.

Although nothing critical was lost, the feeling of being monitored didn't feel good at all!

Jiang Chen began to think hard with a frown on his face.

Suddenly, his eyes lit up.

[Yes! I have a little hacker I forgot about.]

He slapped his forehead as immediately remembered the guy with a "younger sister complex" as he dialed the number.

Chapter 399: The Shocked Xia Shiyu

His finger pressed the screen a few times, selected an international number, and put his phone back to his ear.

The call went through shortly.

"Where are you now?"

"Frankberg," Xie Lei used a voice that implied: Where else could I be?

"Orthopedics?" Jiang Chen joked.

Xie Lei paused as he didn't know how to respond.

He clearly didn't know the joke behind the "orthopedics in Frankberg." (Note 1)

"No, I am at Munich hospital to take care of my sister. She just received treatment three days ago."

Regarding the brother and sister, Jiang Chen kept an eye on them since he paid for all their expenses. The blind sister was receiving treatment in Munich while the brother, Xie Lei, didn't just sit around. After three months of military training in Niger, Ivan sent him to Frankberg. While he studied computer science at the University of Ber, he took care of his sister.

"Is your sister getting better?"

"Much better. The doctor said her condition is a miracle and she'll regain her vision in two months... Thank you," Xie Lie spoke with sincerity.

"No problem, it's great for the soul to do some good deeds once in a while. Especially if I gained the loyalty of a hacker," Jiang Chen joked.

"That's right, my life belongs to you now," Xie Lei said calmly.

"That's enough joking around, you get to keep your life. Although

I need you to help me with something."

"What is it?" Xie Lei asked.

"Mhmm, this is what happened. A backdoor program was installed on Celestial's server. Although I could easily take it out, I want to know which rat installed it. The only reliable information we have is that the data was leaked to an IP in Iceland, but even I know that Iceland is only a jumping board to someplace else. I need you to determine where the data was actually sent and it would be best if you could find out who the spy is. Could you do that?" Jiang Chen said.

"No problem." Frivolous confidence, the trademark of a teen, appeared on Xie Lei's face.

He was the third-best expert in the Hua Hacker Alliance. After a long period of extensive studies, he was confident that his abilities were even better than before.

"Okay, you can be cocky after you complete the task. Do you need an airplane ticket?" Jiang Chen asked.

"No, I can work anywhere as long as there's internet. Give me access to the server and don't alert the spy yet." Xie Lei shook his head.

"Okay, then I'll leave it to you."

Jiang Chen hung up.

A dubious smile appeared on his face as Jiang Chen texted Ivan to grant server access to Xie Lei.

And now, the cat-catching-mouse game had begun.

...

Ayesha made lunch. With Jiang Chen's mom's careful guidance, her cooking skills became drastically more refined. Xia Shiyu, who hadn't eaten her dishes for a few months, enjoyed a feast.

When Jiang Chen looked at her, shuddering, Xia Shiyu took a

moment to realize how she was feasting on the food. Her face turned red as her actions became more reserved.

Ayesha stared at the two of them and smiled but didn't say anything. Her sapphire pupils cast an intrigued light.

After lunch, Ayesha took the plates to the kitchen. At Xia Shiyu's request, Jiang Chen took her to the gym on the first floor.

A server rested in the corner of the gym. Aside from the server were two motorcycle helmet-sized virtual reality helmets in the room. When she saw them, Xia Shiyu briskly walked up and placed a helmet on her head.

Her hands explored the helmet for a while but she couldn't figure out how to use it.

Jiang Chen couldn't help but smile at the scene and walked over to her.

"How do you open this thing?" Xia Shiyu asked rather helplessly as she held the helmet with both hands.

"Don't rush to open it yet; I think it's better for you to find somewhere comfortable to sit or lie down."

Xia Shiyu was hesitant after she heard Jiang Chen's words. "Does... virtual reality affect the physical body?"

"I wouldn't say 'affect' - your real body will be in deep REM mode. If you stand up while you're using it, you might fall down."

[I see.]

Xia Shiyu nodded with understanding and noticed a recliner by the side.

When she lied down, Jiang Chen gave her further instructions.

"The helmet is activated by voice, just say 'start'."

Xia Shiyu took a deep breath as she repressed the excitement in her heart.

Ready to witness history, she used a clear voice.

"Start."

The dark screen instantly lit up.

Countless 3D light particles rushed to her eyes. Xia Shiyu was tempted to move back, but she quickly realized it was just a picture on the screen.

"I thought it was the type that didn't require a screen..." When she saw the interface, Xia Shiyu was evidently disappointed.

But she was relieved almost immediately. The almost-otherworldly neural connection virtual technology couldn't have been mastered so easily; to be able to achieve even this much wasn't bad...

"This is only the starting screen, the exciting part is yet to come." Jiang Chen's words made her look forward to what was next.

She was highly skeptical but decided to trust him. Xia Shiyu wanted to speak, but on the screen in front of her, a series of popup boxes appeared along with a clear system message in her ears.

"Pupil verification system initiated..."

"Registered as a user."

"Registering..."

"Genetic code is registered, please set the username."

Staring at the text in the middle, Xia Shiyu inhaled deeply.

"Shiyu."

"User registration complete. Welcome, Ms. Shiyu. Your ID will be locked to your pupil information - it cannot be deactivated or registered again in principle. Your privacy will be absolutely safe in the virtual world. I wish you the best virtual experience."

<Caution: Please ensure the body is in a flat position when connected to virtual reality. Please do not use when drinking,

drunk, or in public... conditions.>

She looked at the "Activate" logo in front of her as she tried to calm her pumping heart. Xia Shiyu said:

"Activate."

After receiving her command, the image on the screen began to fade gradually. It was followed by mild music and suddenly, Xia Shiyu felt a tingling sensation in her neck as her consciousness began to leave her body.

It felt like diving - her sensations were covered by a thin veil, but her sensations still felt so clear.

"This is..."

Xia Shiyu stared at her hands blankly and scanned her surroundings.

Because of her astonishment, she forgot how to speak.

Yes, she didn't know how to express her astonishment.

The white cubic world she was in was empty, but she felt so fulfilled. 0s and 1s flashed on the wall and added a sci-fi dimension to this world.

She stood in the middle of the cube and stared at the interface that gradually surfaced in front of her.

She reached a finger out and touched the half-transparent interface.

She felt a cold sensation.

Ripples spread out from her fingertips and rushed to the walls of the room.

The wall shattered. Just like a window being opened, a vivid picture was presented in front of her.

There were endless rice fields, towering mountains that extended beyond the clouds, great sails that broke through wind and waves,

and magnificent walls that stood like a giant cliff...

<Godly Land>

And she was standing on top of a hill.

Chapter 400: Tonight, I will let you have him

After a while, Xia Shiyu took off her helmet and stood up from the chair.

She reflected on the feeling of being in virtual reality before she let out a sigh, still immersed in that world.

"If it wasn't for the game menu that could pop up at any time, I would've thought I traveled to another dimension."

"It's normal to experience this feeling the first time you play with virtual reality - it won't happen after you get used to it." Jiang Chen smiled.

There was a process to get accustomed to new things. Jiang Chen remembered that the first time he laid in the virtual reality training chamber, he felt anxious too. But since he used it so many times since then, it didn't feel special anymore.

With the helmet in her lap, Xia Shiyu gently stroked the fluid surface of the helmet and murmured: "Although traditional VR equipment can achieve immersive virtual reality, it's physically limited. For example, the helmet can mimic visuals and audio with a sensory device attached to the hands... But it's the first time I've seen your type that allows the body to enter deep REM sleep and allows the consciousness to completely integrate with the virtual world. The visuals and audio no longer need to pass through the eyes and ears - all senses are transmitted through the brain, thus people are, in effect, playing the game while sleeping... This is too magical."

"Is that so? Then guess how many players this <Godly Land> would have?" Jiang Chen said proudly.

Xia Shiyu shook her head. "I can't estimate how many, but I know one thing for certain. As long as this helmet isn't too expensive, the number of registered users and concurrent users

would have no problem breaking the Genesis World Record."

"That's what I think too."

Xia Shiyu then looked at Jiang Chen.

"Do you think virtual reality could only be applied to games?"

When he heard Xia Shiyu's words, Jiang Chen asked with curiosity.

"What do you mean?"

"PCs, smartphones, and tablets - these electronic devices ease social interaction between people. With just a messaging app, two people thousands of miles away can feel like they're standing side by side." Xia Shiyu put the helmet aside and looked at Jiang Chen. She said with seriousness, "But with this virtual helmet, it can allow two people thousands of miles away to forget the distance and "truly" stand side by side. Ignoring the game itself, the helmet alone is an era-defining product."

Jiang Chen took a moment to think it over as no one had mentioned this to him before since in terms of virtual reality technology, people in the apocalypse were much more indifferent.

"So you're saying this could replace smartphones?" Jiang Chen laughed. "I don't think that's possible since phones can easily be used anywhere, but this can only be used at home. Also, if I remember correctly, VR equipment already existed two years ago."

Virtual reality wasn't something new to the modern world. It had a relatively low usage rate domestically, but outside the wall, this thing wasn't as high-tech as people imagined it to be.

A simple example: the virtual reality game <EVA: Valkyrie> under the CCP banner had a selling point known as "Space VR," but this game started its internal test on January 18th, 2016. Any players who purchased the Oculus Rift DK2 would be able to participate just by registering.

Virtual reality games weren't as complex as imagined ten years ago. A lot of PC and console games were all attempting to integrate with VR.

And the news "2016 will be the landmark year for virtual reality" wasn't wrong at all.

"It's different." Xia Shiyu shook her head. "The difference is analogous to how flip phones didn't change the landscape of PC, but smartphones did."

She paused, looked into Jiang Chen's eyes, and said with seriousness: "And the virtual reality helmet you introduced is like the "smartphone" of VR. It's impractical as a replacement for smartphones, but it could certainly pose a significant threat to the virtual reality market."

While he was mentally prepared to be the person who wrote the next chapter in history, when Xia Shiyu spoke those words herself, Jiang Chen couldn't contain his excitement.

"This virtual reality helmet is just like a key that takes the sleep time of humans to another dimension. Keeping lifespans constant, people will 'live' for eight hours longer each day. Aside from games, we can also use virtual reality equipment to create communities, e-commerce platforms, virtual real estate, and even things we never imagined before..."

Xia Shiyu took a deep breath as her eyes flickered with excitement.

"Now do you know why I'm this excited?"

When he heard Xia Shiyu's description, Jiang Chen was shocked himself. When he was first introduced to the helmet, he only thought of playing games and didn't think that far ahead at all. But now that Xia Shiyu mentioned its potential other uses, he suddenly felt enlightened.

Yes, it had other uses aside from gaming. Social interaction and

even other necessities could be based on the virtual reality helmet platform - anything was possible! Virtual reality was just like an undeveloped goldmine that only Future Technology could reach.

"We'll create history," Jiang Chen said.

"That's right!" Xia Shiyu held Jiang Chen's hands in excitement.

"..."

Time paused for five seconds.

She slowly let go of his hands, put her hand to her mouth and coughed while she averted her gaze.

"Sorry, I got too excited..."

She pretended to be calm, but the blush on her face clearly showed the anxiety she was feeling.

Jiang Chen was completely shocked as he stared at her blankly.

[Is this really Xia Shiyu?]

[How should I react?]

Just as they stood in awkward silence, a gentle knock came from the door.

"You have a visitor." Ayesha looked at the two of them with a smile as she leaned on the door frame.

[Perfect save!] Jiang Chen thanked Ayesha in his mind.

"Let me see who's at the door. You can play with the helmet for a bit." Jiang Chen smiled at Xia Shiyu before he slipped out of the gym.

Xia Shiyu watched Jiang Chen leave before her eyes stopped at Ayesha at the door.

She hadn't spoken to her since she came in.

Xia Shiyu squeezed out a forced smile as she said, "Hi..."

She didn't want her expression to reveal her true feelings to this

girl.

Or her sense of competition.

Ayesha responded with a friendly smile as she said gently, "I organized your room for you. If you need anything, just let me know."

Looking at Ayesha's smile free of any hostility, Xia Shiyu felt a hint of embarrassment at her own hostility.

"You... you don't dislike me?"

When she heard Xia Shiyu's words, Ayesha tilted her head. "Why would I dislike you?"

"Because... Because of jealousy." Xia Shiyu looked away.

She couldn't look straight into Ayesha's sapphire pupils.

But Ayesha only shook her head.

"You're not afraid I'll take him away from you?" Xia Shiyu finally couldn't hold it in anymore.

"You finally admitted to your own emotions?" Ayesha asked back.

Xia Shiyu stopped. A red hue climbed from her neck to her ears.

But this time, she didn't back down; she didn't want to demonstrate her softness in the relationship in front of her "competition."

Seeing she didn't disagree, a smile appeared on Aysha's face.

She walked beside her, tiptoed and whispered into her ear.

"Tonight, I'll let you have him."

Xia Shiyu took a moment to process this.

When she realized what Ayesha meant, her brain completely shut down...

Table of Contents

[I Have a Mansion in the Post-apocalyptic World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 301: Happy Times](#)

[Chapter 302: Duty](#)

[Chapter 303: It's only an illusion](#)

[Chapter 304: The Snow of Dusk](#)

[Chapter 305: Are you not going to feed me?](#)

[Chapter 306: Almost The Wrong One](#)

[Chapter 307: Conflict](#)

[Chapter 308: Decoding the Password](#)

[Chapter 309: The Doomsday of the Defenders](#)

[Chapter 310: The Darkness buried deep](#)

[Chapter 311: Naive](#)

[Chapter 312: This place has always been mine](#)

[Chapter 313: You have two choices](#)

[Chapter 314: The End of the Mission](#)

[Chapter 315: Taking Over the Fallout Shelter](#)

[Chapter 316: Light Years Away](#)

[Chapter 317: Supreme, Harmony, Purity](#)

[Chapter 318: Transferring the Military Factory](#)

[Chapter 319: Purchasing Firearms](#)

[Chapter 320: The Mine Pit and Slaves](#)

[Chapter 321: Slavery Chip Enhanced](#)

[Chapter 322: Camp Explosion](#)

[Chapter 323: A Murder?](#)

[Chapter 324: The Gunshots in Coro](#)

[Chapter 325: Insurgents' Ending](#)

[Chapter 326: Commissioning the War](#)

[Chapter 327: Pannu Landing](#)

[Chapter 328: Operation Sword Shattering](#)

[Chapter 329: Farewell](#)

[Chapter 330: New World](#)

[Chapter 331: Neutrality](#)

[Chapter 332: The Disastrous Loss of Linhua Group](#)

[Chapter 333: I enjoy the fact you don't like me, but you can't do anything about it](#)

[Chapter 334: New Moon Island](#)
[Chapter 335: Military Base](#)
[Chapter 336: Australia Trip](#)
[Chapter 337: Public Opinion](#)
[Chapter 338: Interdimensional Material Transporter](#)
[Chapter 339: Return to Xiangjiang](#)
[Chapter 340: Blackmail](#)
[Chapter 341: Fishermen? They are pirates!](#)
[Chapter 342: How did I forget about that?](#)
[Chapter 343: The Creative Use of Nutrient Supply](#)
[Chapter 344: Sorry](#)
[Chapter 345: A surprising reward](#)
[Chapter 346: Evaluation of Bid](#)
[Chapter 347: I don't dislike her](#)
[Chapter 348: One billion Deal](#)
[Chapter 349: A Massive Loan](#)
[Chapter 350: Balv's Manor](#)
[Chapter 351: Because I don't want to](#)
[Chapter 352: Refuse to Apologize](#)
[Chapter 353: Seaweed That Could Generate Electricity](#)
[Chapter 354: Nutrient Supply Plant](#)
[Chapter 355: Trade Secret](#)
[Chapter 356: Unknown Militants](#)
[Chapter 357: Battle on the Vessel](#)
[Chapter 358: Reparations](#)
[Chapter 359: Purchasing Ores](#)
[Chapter 360: Sunny Melbourne](#)
[Chapter 361: Meeting an old friend](#)
[Chapter 362: Future Mining](#)
[Chapter 363: Return](#)
[Chapter 364: Return to the Apocalypse](#)
[Chapter 365: Virtual Reality Online](#)
[Chapter 366: The Game Rating becoming weird](#)
[Chapter 367: Recently at the Camp](#)
[Chapter 368: Tiger II](#)
[Chapter 369: The Rare Quantum Computer](#)
[Chapter 370: The Second Crusade](#)
[Chapter 371: Shell Grains](#)
[Chapter 372: Mining Resources Deposition Map](#)

[Chapter 373: Airborne](#)
[Chapter 374: Underground Data Center](#)
[Chapter 375: We meet again](#)
[Chapter 376: Retreat](#)
[Chapter 377: Bombardment](#)
[Chapter 378: Mental Commissar](#)
[Chapter 379: New Asia Corporation](#)
[Chapter 380: The Mercenary Association](#)
[Chapter 381: Are you being serious?](#)
[Chapter 382: Aerospace Technology Research Institute](#)
[Chapter 383: Start with collecting garbage](#)
[Chapter 384: War Bond Issuance](#)
[Chapter 385: Fixed Wing Aircraft](#)
[Chapter 386: The Night](#)
[Chapter 387: Sisters](#)
[Chapter 388: Virtual Reality Helmet Prototype](#)
[Chapter 389: Hang City Merchant Alliance](#)
[Chapter 390: The Calm before the Storm](#)
[Chapter 391: Economic Sanction?](#)
[Chapter 392: Arms Sale Agreement](#)
[Chapter 393: Transporting Ores](#)
[Chapter 394: Molybdenum Mining Project](#)
[Chapter 395: Politely Refusing](#)
[Chapter 396: Selling Nutrient Supply](#)
[Chapter 397: Entry Blacklist](#)
[Chapter 398: Spy?](#)
[Chapter 399: The Shocked Xia Shiyu](#)
[Chapter 400: Tonight, I will let you have him](#)